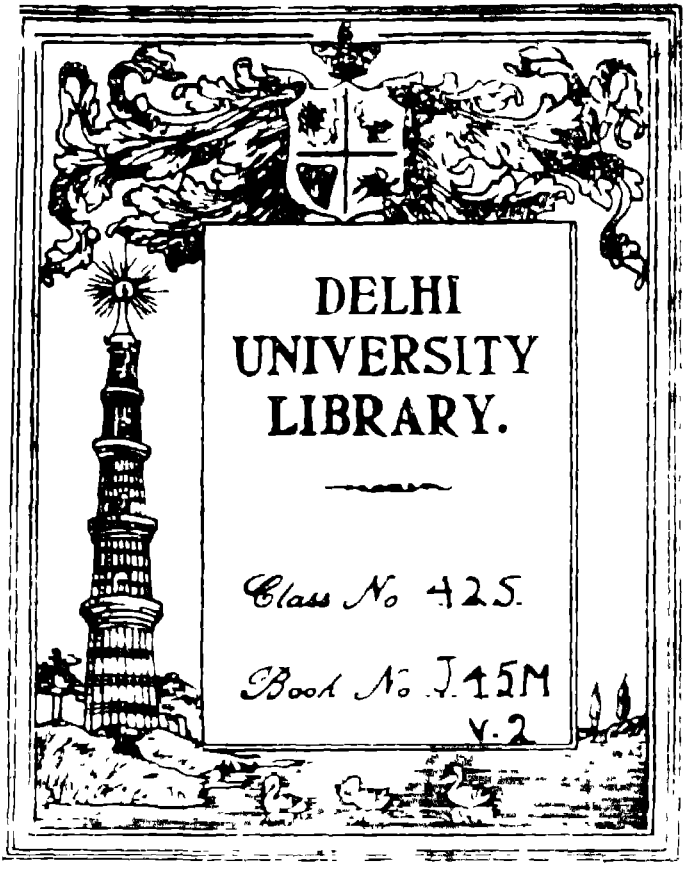

DELHI
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY.

Class No 425.

Book No J.15M
V.2

DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Cl. No

Ac No

Date of release for loan

2 APR. 1967

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of one anna will be levied for each day the book is kept beyond that date.

UNIFORM WITH THIS VOLUME

Part I SOUNDS AND SPELLINGS

Part II SYNTAX. FIRST VOLUME

Part III SYNTAX. SECOND VOLUME

Part IV SYNTAX. THIRD VOLUME
TIME AND TENSE

A Modern English Grammar

ON HISTORICAL PRINCIPLES

BY

OTTO JESPERSEN, PH. D., LITT. D., LL. D.

PART II

SYNTAX. FIRST VOLUME

THIRD EDITION

WITH AN APPENDIX

LONDON
GEORGE ALLEN & UNWIN LTD.
MUSEUM STREET
1928

First Edition published in Heidelberg 1914

Printed by Carl Winter Heidelberg

Preface.

It was originally my plan after the first volume of this work, which deals with sounds and spellings, to go on to Morphology and finally to Syntax — these two terms taken in the sense explained in my *Progress in Language*, 1894, p 141, and again below, p. 1. My reasons for now deviating from this order and bringing out the syntactical before the morphological part, are partly of a purely personal character. When I took up work again after a rest necessitated by overstrain during a nine months' stay in America, I wanted something pleasurable to do and thought Syntax more attractive than Morphology; consequently I let my extensive preparatory work on endings etc., lie undisturbed in my drawers Besides, I was told by friends here and abroad that they were especially eager to see my treatment of Syntax, and I felt that I had perhaps more new and original points of view to offer here than in pure Morphology. Unfortunately, however, the changed plan has entailed some small inconsistencies and obliged me to include in this volume some material that would have been better placed elsewhere, and I have thus been precluded from showing my own system to the best advantage.

This volume contains only the first part of my Syntax; when I printed the first chapter I still thought it possible to include chapters written long ago on

objects and predicatives, but eventually I decided to leave them out in order not to swell the book to too great a length. I must, therefore, apologize for some misleading references to these chapters in chapter I.

It is my hope that this book may prove useful to the serious student both through the great number of examples given and through the new theories advanced here and there, more particularly in chapters IV, X, XII, and XIII. I have always been interested in the economy of speech, and have been glad to discover in some points the interplay of form and sense. I also believe that the general system and terminology indicated briefly in chapter I and explained more fully in *Sprogets Logik* (Copenhagen, Gyldendal, 1913) and in a forthcoming book on *The Basis of Grammar* has enabled me to state many grammatical facts more clearly than has hitherto been possible. But of this it is for others to judge

With regard to my quotations, which I have collected during many years of both systematic and desultory reading, I think that they will be found in many ways more satisfactory than even the best made-up examples, for instance those in Sweet's chapters on syntax. Whenever it was feasible, I selected sentences that gave a striking, and at the same time natural, expression to some characteristic thought; but it is evident that at times I was obliged to quote sentences that presented no special interest apart from their grammatical peculiarities Sometimes I have found it expedient to print all the quotations I had available; but in most paragraphs I have made a selection, and in some cases I have even contented myself with giving the bare references without printing the sentences in full. Occasionally I have taken a quotation from

some grammar or monograph, but such quotations I have always been careful to indicate by inserting (q) after the name of the author. In the case of most standard authors I have used easily accessible but reliable editions, and I have frequently had to look up a quotation in these editions, which I had originally noted down from some other edition. I retain scrupulously the spelling of the original (even *u* and *v*, etc.) and only normalize the use of capitals. In quotations from works of fiction I have now and then abbreviated a proper name or replaced it by *he* or *she*, just as I have here and there left out a few unimportant words, but I have taken such liberties only with quotations from recent books and where I was quite sure that they could in no wise impair the value of the passage for the purpose for which I used it. The system followed in indicating the source whence a passage has been taken will, I think, be found sufficiently exact without taking up much space. As the chief point for most readers is to know the author of a passage, his name has always been written in full, except in the case of some of the greatest heroes in English literature (Ch = Chaucer, Sh = Shakespeare, Mi(lton), Di(ckens), Ru(skin), etc.). But the name of the book has generally been indicated by means of one or two initials, the clue to which will be found in the list appended below. With regard to the numerous quotations from newspapers and periodicals I have contented myself by writing NP and the year, as I very much doubt whether a single one of my readers would take the trouble to look them up even if I had given full references such as "The Times, Weekly edition, 27. Oct. 1903, p. 5, col. 2." Sometimes I place quotations within parentheses or after || to indicate that they are

not exactly on the same footing as the rest of the paragraph. Generally this will tell the judicious reader just as much as if I had tried to explain their peculiarity in express words.

In some cases I have not dared to assert in so many words that a phenomenon of which I had only nineteenth century instances was recent, though my impression is that I should have noted down older quotations if they had been at all frequent. In such cases it is always safer not to commit oneself, as fresh evidence may turn up any day and it is so very easy to overlook these things, especially if one is collecting examples of many phenomena at once. I have been able to correct the chronology of my predecessors on some points, and must be prepared in turn to find my own chronology improved on by subsequent writers of monographs.

The arrangement of grammatical matter is sometimes extremely difficult on account of the numerous cross-associations which determine the structure of a language. I have spent many weary hours arranging and re-arranging my thousands of paragraphs and my tens of thousands of slips; and though in some particulars I might now wish that I had followed a different order, I venture to think that I have here and there succeeded in finding the arrangement best suited to lay bare the inner connexion of the phenomena concerned. Numerous cross-references and the index will enable the reader to find what he is looking for, even if it has been put in an unexpected place.

In the final revision I have endeavoured to get rid of all traces of earlier draughts, some of them written many years ago, before my present views on grammar and terminology had matured. Unfortunately,

however, I find that I have retained in a few passages (2.63, 3.73 and 75) the loose employment of the word "collective", which I thought I had discarded everywhere. I may perhaps here state succinctly what I think should be the proper distinction between a collective and a "mass-word". From a logical point of view, a collective, such as *family* or *clergy*, is at once singular and plural, while a mass-word, such as *water*, *measles*, or *pride*, is neither singular nor plural — no matter which number the linguistic form may happen to indicate. For further details see 4.8 and 5.2.

It is a pleasant task to thank the many grammarians and friends without whose help my book would have been even less perfect than it is. My debt to the great New English Dictionary is conspicuous on many pages To very many writers on grammar, from Koch and Mätzner through Sweet and Storm down to Franz and Wendt, etc, I owe very much, even where I differ from their views. My old friend Prof. G. C. Moore Smith, of the University of Sheffield, has been kind enough to go through two or three chapters in manuscript and to read the whole of the volume in proof, both matter and style have profited from his revision Another friend, Professor Allan Mawer, of Armstrong College, Newcastle, kindly went over with me those chapters that were already written when I was having a holiday in Northumberland in 1911 Three of my pupils, Miss Andrea Gad, Miss Ingeborg Jacobsen, and Mr. Aage Stigaard, have given valuable assistance in transcribing quotations, in reading the proofs, and in preparing the index. My heartfelt thanks to all these kind English and Danish friends!

Gentofte, København (Copenhagen), November 1913.

Otto Jespersen.

Contents.

Preface V

Abbreviation and List of Books XIII

Ch. I. Introductory 1

1.1 Syntax. — 1.2 The Three Ranks. — 1.3 Parts of Speech. — 1.4 Verbs. Verbids. — 1.5 Predicatives. — 1.6 Objects. — 1.7 Pronouns. — 1.8 Word Groups. Clauses. Phrases.

Ch. II. Number 16

2.1 Two Numbers. — 2.2 Forms. — 2.3—2.5 Plural of Compounds. — 2.6 Foreign Plurals. — 2.7 Number in Adjectives. — 2.8 You.

Ch. III. The Unchanged Plural 49

3.1 General. — 3.2 Animals. — 3.3 Birds. — 3.4 Fishes. — 3.5 Words indicating number. — 3.6 Measures of time, of length, of weight, of money. — 3.7 Other Unchanged Plurals. — 3.8 Kind, etc. — 3.9 Cases of Doubtful Number.

Ch. IV. The Meaning of Singular and Plural in Substantives 70

4.1 Preliminary Survey. — 4.2 The Normal Plural. — 4.3 Characteristics of Several Individuals. — 4.4 Plurals of Proper Names. — 4.5 Plural of Approximation. — 4.6 The Differentiated Plural. — 4.7 Composite Objects. — 4.8—4.9 Collectives.

Ch. V. Meaning of Number. Continued 106

5.1 Unification of Plurals. — 5.2 Mass-Words. — 5.3 Individualization and Concretion. — 5.4 The Generic Singular and Plural. — 5.5 Common Number. — 5.6—5.7 Numerical Metanalysis.

Ch. VI. Number in Secondary Words 163

6.1 Adjuncts. — 6.2 Predicatives. — 6.3—6.6 Concord of the Verb. — 6.7 Attraction. — 6.8 There is — 6.9 Plural of Verbal Idea.

Page

Ch. VII. Number. Appendix 185

7.1—7.2 Number in First-Words of Compounds — 7.3 Two Penny Worth, etc. — 7.4 Number in Genitival First-Words. — 7.5 Number in Derivatives. — 7.6 Words with Numerical Relations. — 7.7 Words Referring to Two. — 7.8—7.9 Words Referring to a Definite Number

Ch. VIII. Substantives 211

8.1 Introductory. — 8.2 Quotation Words. — 8.3 Adjectives Substantivized. — 8.4 Pronouns Substantivized. — 8.5 Adverbs Substantivized. — 8.6 Type Pick-pocket. — 8.7 Type Afternoon. — 8.8 Phrases. — 8.9 Abbreviations.

Ch. IX. Substantivized Adjectives 231

9.1 Old Examples. — 9.2—9.3 Denoting Persons. — 9.4 Comparatives and Superlatives — 9.5 Genitive — 9.6—9.7 Neuters. — 9.8 Superlatives, Ordinals, Participles — 9.9 Genitive of Neuters.

Ch. X. The Prop-Word One 245

10.1 The Beginnings — 10.2 The Numeral. — 10.3 The Real Prop Word, Indefinite. — 10.4 Definite. — 10.5 Recent Developments. the one, a one — 10.6 That one, etc. — 10.7 'un. — 10.8 Importance of the Construction — 10.9 Restrictions.

Ch. XI. Adjectives as Principals 272

11.1 Modern Restrictions — 11.2 Words going in pairs. — 11.3 Singular — 11.4—11.5 Plural. — 11.6 Half-pronominal Adjectives.

Ch. XII. Relations between Adjunct and Principal . . . 283

12.1 Survey. Direct Adjuncts. — 12.2 Shifted Subjunct Adjuncts — 12.3 Partial Adjuncts. — 12.4 Compositional Adjuncts. — 12.5 Other Indirect Adjuncts.

Ch. XIII. Substantival Adjuncts 310

13.1 The Problem — 13.2 Formal Characteristics. — 13.3 Coordination — 13.4 Use of One. — 13.5 Use of Adverbs. — 13.6 Isolation. — 13.7 Adjectival Endings. — 13.8 Conclusion.

Ch. XIV. Adjuncts. Continued 330

14.1 Adjunct and Predicative. — 14.2 Adjectival Groups. — 14.3 Participial Groups. — 14.4 Infinitive Pre-Adjuncts. — 14.5 Other Group-Adjuncts. — 14.6

Page

Preposition with Object. — 14.7 Verb with Object, etc. — 14.8 Quotation Adjuncts. — 14.9 Adverbs used as Adjuncts.

Ch. XV. Adjuncts. Concluded 360
15.1 Two Adjuncts. — 15.2 Adjective-Subjuncts. — 15.3 New born, newly born, Moderate(ly) sized. — 15.4—15.5 Post Adjuncts — 15.6—15.7 Semi-Predicative Post-Adjuncts — 15.8 Infinitive Post-Adjuncts.

Ch. XVI. Functions of the Pronouns 398
16.1 Personal. — 16.2 Possessive — 16.3—16.4 Demonstrative — 16.5 Interrogative and Relative. — 16.6 Other Pronouns None — 16.7 No = nān. — 16.8 No = nā.

Ch. XVII. Functions of the Pronouns. Concluded . . . 439
17.1 Some and Any — 17.2 Compounds with body and one — 17.3 Something, etc — 17.4 Somewhat, Somedeal, Aught. — 17.5 All — 17.6 Either Both, Every, Each — 17.7 Other

Index 463

Appendix 485

Abbreviations and List of Books.

(In this list L = London, MM = Macmillan, N Y. = New York, T = Tauchnitz edition)

Ade A George Ade, Artie Chicago 1897
adj = adjective
adv = adverb
Alden U = Percy Alden, The Unemployed. L.
Aldrich S = Thomas B Aldrich, The Stillwater Tragedy. T. 1880.
Alford Q = Dean Alford, The Queen's English, 8th ed. L 1889.
Allen W = Grant Allen, The Woman Who Did T 1895
S = — Strange Stories. L 1899
Amr American
Anstey V = F Anstey, Vice Versa. L 1882
AR = The Ancren (better, Ancrene) Riwle, ed by Morton L 1853
Archer A William Archer, America To-Day L 1904.
Arnold P = Matthew Arnold, Poetical Works. L 1890 (MM).
Ascham S Roger Ascham, The Schoolemaster (Arber's)
T — Toxophilus (ib.)
Austen E = Jane Austen, Emma T
M = — Mansfield Park L 1897
P = — Pride and Prejudice. L 1894.
S = — Sense and Sensibility L n. d.
AV = The Authorised Version of the Bible 1611 (Facsimile ed., Oxford 1833). — 20th C V [or Tr] = The Twentieth Century New Testament, L 1898—1901.
Bacon A = Francis Bacon, The New Atlantis, ed. Moore Smith. Cambridge 1900.
E = — Essays, ed. Wright. L 1881
Bale T = John Bale, A Comedy concernynge Thre Lawes 1538, ed Schröer (Anglia V 1882).
Barrie A = James M. Barrie, Auld Licht Idylls. L. 1898.
M = — The Little Minister L 1898.
MO = — Margaret Ogilvy T 1897.
T = — Tommy and Grizel. L 1900.

Beaconsfield L = Benjamin Disraeli, Lothair. L n. d.
Beaumont = Francis Beaumont and John Fletcher, ed. Glover and Waller Cambridge 1905
(Sometimes also quoted from Mermaid series ed.)
Behn = Aphra Behn, The Novels, ed. E. A Baker. L 1904.
Bellamy L = Bellamy, Looking Backward L. n. d.
Bennett A = Arnold Bennett, Anna of the Five Towns. L 1912.
B = — The Grand Babylon Hotel L(1912).
C = — Clayhanger T 1912.
H = — How to Live on 24 Hours L 1912.
HL = — Hilda Lessways T 1912.
W = — Old Wives' Tale T 1909
Benson W = Arthur C Benson, From a College Window L 1906.
Benson B = Edward F Benson, The Babe B A L 1911
D = — Dodo. T 1894
J = — The Judgment Books. L 1895
Bentley T = E C. Bentley, Trent's Last Case. L 1912
Beow = Beowulf
Birrell O = Augustine Birrell, Obiter Dicta. L (6 d ed.)
BJo = Ben Jonson, generally quoted from Mermaid ed
Black F = William Black, The New Prince Fortunatus. T 1890
P = — The Princess of Thule T
Ph = — The Strange Adventures of a Phaeton. L. s. a.
Boghoim = N Beghoim, Bacon og Shakespeare Kobenhavn 1906.
Borst G = Eugen Borst, Die Gradadverbien im Englischen. Heidelberg 1902.
Boswell = James Boswell, Life of S Johnson, ed Fitzgerald. L 1900
Bradley M = Henry Bradley, The Making of English. L 1904.
Bradley S = Andrew C Bradley, Shakespearean Tragedy L 1904.
Bridges E = Robert Bridges, Eros and Psyche L 1894.
Bronte P = Charlotte Bronte, The Professor L 1857
Browning = Robert Browning, Poetical Works L 1896 Two vols.)
Mrs Browning A = Elizabeth Barrett Browning, Aurora Leigh. T
Buchanan J = Robert Buchanan, The Wandering Jew L 1893.
Bunyan G = John Bunyan, Grace Abounding, etc, ed. Brown. Cambridge 1907.
Burns = Robert Burns The Centenary edition Edinburgh 1896.
Butler Er = Samuel Butler († 1902), Erewhon L 1913.
E = — Essays on Life, Art and Science. L 1908
N = — Note-Books. L 1912
Butler H = Samuel Butler († 1680), Hudibras, ed. by Waller. Cambridge 1906

Byron = George Gordon Byron, Poetical Works, ed. E. H. Coleridge. L 1905.
Ch = -- Childe Harold (Canto and stanza).
DJ = -- Don Juan (Canto and stanza).

c. = century.
Caine C = Hall Caine The Christian L 1897
E = — The Eternal Life. L 1901
M = — The Manxman. L 1894.
P = — The Prodigal Son. L 1904.
S = — The Shadow of a Crime (The Engl. Libr.) 1892.
Carlyle F = Thomas Carlyle in Froude, Life (1,2 = First 40 Years of his Life. L 1882. 3,4 = His Life in London L 1884).
G = — Correspondence with Goethe, ed. Norton L 1887.
H = — Heroes and Hero-Worship. L 1890
P = — Past and Present. L 1893.
R = — Reminiscences, ed by Froude. L 1881
S = -- Sartor Resartus L n d
Cambridge Trifles (anonymous). L 1881
Carpenter C = Edward Carpenter, Civilisation its Cause and Cure 1 1897.
E = England's Ideal L 1887
I — Love's Coming of Age Manchester 1897
P = — Prisons, Police, and Punishment. L 1905.
Carroll L = Lewis Carroll, Through the Looking-Glass. L (6 d).
A = Alice's Adventures in Wonderland. L (6 d).
Caxton B = William Caxton, Blanchardyn, ed. Kellner. L 1890.
R = — Reynard the Fox (Arber)
cf = confer
Ch = Geoffrey Chaucer. Skeat's Six Volume Edition. (A, B, C, etc., the Groups in Canterbury Tales MP = Minor Poems. HF = House of Fame L(GW) = Legend of Good Women. T = Troilus)
Chesterton B = Gilbert K Chesterton, Browning. L 1906.
F = — The Innocence of Father Brown T 1911.
Clough = Arthur H. Clough, Poems and Prose Remains. L 1869 (2 vols.).

Coleridge = Samuel Taylor Coleridge, Poetical Works. L 1893 (MM).
B = — Biographia Literaria. (Everyman.)
Sh = — Lectures on Shakespeare. (Bohn.)
coll. = colloquial
Collier E = Price Collier, England and the English New York 1909
Collingwood R = W. G Collingwood, Life of John Ruskin. L 1905
Congreve = William Congreve, Mermaid ed L.
Conway C = Hugh Conway, Called Back. T 1884.
Cowper = William Cowper, Poetical Works Globe ed. L 1889.
L = — Letters ed J G Fraser L 1912.
cp = compare.
Dan = Danish
Darwin B = Charles Darwin, His Life, etc., by F. Darwin. L 1892.
L = — Life and Letters, 3 vols. L 1888
Decker S = Thomas Decker, The Seven Deadly Sins, ed. Arber L 1879
Defoe G = Daniel Defoe, The Complete Gentleman, ed. by Bullbring L 1890
P = — Journal of the Plague Year, ed by Brayley L n d.
R = — Robinson Crusoe 1719 [Facsimile ed. L 1883]
R2 = — Farther Adventures of Robinson Crusoe L 1719
Di D = Charles Dickens, David Copperfield L 1897 (MM).
Do = — Dombey and Son. L 1887 (Ch. D. ed.)
L = — Letters. L 1893 (MM).
M = — Martin Chuzzlewit. L n. d. (Ch D ed.)
N = — Nicholas Nickleby L 1900 (MM).
Pw = — Pickwick Papers T
Sk = — Sketches T
T = — Tale of Two Cities. T.
X = — Christmas Books. L 1892 (MM).
dial. = dialect(s), dialectical
Dickinson C = G Lowes Dickinson, Letters from John Chinaman. L 1904.
Im = — Is Immortality Desirable? Boston 1909.
R = — Religion. L 1906.
S = — A Modern Symposion. L 1906.

Dobson F = Henry A. Dobson, Fielding. L 1889.
P = — Collected Poems. L 1897.
Doyle B = Arthur Conan Doyle, The Hound of the Baskervilles. T 1902.
F = — The Sign of Four. T 1891.
G = — The Great Shadow. T 1893.
M = — The Stark Munro Letters. T 1895.
S 1,2 = — Adventures; 3,4 = Memoirs; 5,6 = Return; of Sherlock Holmes. T 1893—1905.
St = — A Study in Scarlet. T 1892.
Dryden = John Dryden, Poetical Works. Globe ed. L. 1890. (Sometimes also quoted vol 5 of Scott's ed.)
Dyboski T = Roman Dyboski, Tennysons Sprache und Stil. Wien 1907
E = English
E3, see below Sh
ed. = edition, edited
EDD = Joseph Wright, English Dialect Dictionary L 1898 ff.
EEP = Alexander Ellis, On Early English Pronunciation. L 1869 ff.
Egerton Castle K = Egerton Castle, Keynotes L 1893
EIE = Elizabethan English.
Eliot, see GE
Elizabeth R = The Adventures of Elizabeth in Rügen. L 1911
Ellis M = Havelock Ellis, Man and Woman L 1904
N = — The New Spirit. L 1892.
Escott E = T H. S. Escott, England. L 1887
ESt = Englische Studien Leipzig
F = French, folio
Farquhar B = George Farquhar, The Beaux' Stratagem (in Restoration Plays, Everyman 1912).
Fielding = Henry Fielding, Works, Second ed L 1762 (8 vols.).
T = — Tom Jones. L 1792 (4 vols.).
First = My First Book, by W. Besant and 20 other writers. L 1897.
Fludyer = Harry Fludyer at Cambridge [by R. C. Lehmann]. L 1890.
Fox = Memories of Old Friends, from the Journals of Caroline Fox. T 1882
Franklin = Benjamin Franklin, Autobiography, ed. by Macdonald. L 1905.
Franz = W. Franz, Shakespeare-Grammatik 2. Aufl. Heidelberg 1909.
Froude C = James Anthony Froude, Carlyle [see above].
O = — Oceana. T 1886.

Jevons L = W. Stanley Jevons, Elementary Lessons in Logic. L 1885.
Johnson R = Samuel Johnson, Rasselas ed. by Birkbeck-Hill. Oxford 1887
Jonson, see BJo.
Joyce Ir = P W Joyce, English as we speak it in Ireland. L 1910.
Keats = John Keats, The Complete Works, ed. Buxton Forman. Glasgow 1900
Ker E = W P. Ker, English Literature, Medieval. L 1912.
Kidd S = Benjamin Kidd, Social Evolution. L 1894.
Kingsley H = Charles Kingsley, Hypatia. L n. d.
Kipling B = Rudyard Kipling, Barrack-Room Ballads. 1892 (Engl. Libr.).
J1 = — The Jungle Book 1897. (Engl. L.)
J2 = — The Second Jungle Book. T. 1897.
L = — The Light that Failed. (Engl. L.)
MOP = — Mine Own People (Engl. L.)
P = — Puck of Pook's Hill. T
S = — Stalky & Co T
ST = — Soldiers Three. T.
Knecht K = Jacob Knecht, Die Kongruenz zw. Subjekt und Prädikat. Heidelberg 1911.
Krüger = Gustav Krüger, Schwierigkeiten des Englischen. Dresden u. Leipzig 1897 ff
Lamb E = Charles Lamb, The Essays of Elia L 1899 (Dent).
R = Rosamund Gray. L 1905.
Landor C = Walter S. Landor, Imaginary Conversations, ed. Havelock Ellis. L 1886.
P = — Pericles and Aspasia, ed. id. L n. d.
Lang C = Andrew Lang, Custom and Myth. L 1893.
E = — Essays in Little L 1891.
T = — Tennyson 1904.
Lat = Latin
Lecky D = William E. H Lecky, Democracy and Liberty L 1896.
Le Gallienne Y = Richard Le Gallienne, Young Lives. L.
Lewes H = George H. Lewes, History of Philosophy. L 1893.
London A = Jack London, Adventure. L 1911.
C = — The War of the Classes. N. Y. 1905.
F = — The Faith of Men. L 1904.
W = — White Fang. L 1908.
Longfellow = Henry W. Longfellow, Poetical Works. L 1881.
Lounsbury SU = Thomas R. Lounsbury, The Standard of Usage in English. N Y. 1908.
Lowell = James R. Lowell, Poetical Works in one vol. L 1892 (MM).
St = — My Study Windows. L n. d. (Scott).

Lubbock P = John Lubbock, The Pleasures of Life. L (3d ed.).
Lyly C = John Lyly, Campaspe, in Manly, Specimens of the Pre-Shakespearean Drama. Boston 1900 (Page).
Macaulay B = Thomas B. Macaulay, Biographical Essays. T.
E = — Essays, Critical and Historical. T.
H = — History of England. T.
MacCarthy = Justin MacCarthy, A History of Our Own Times. N. Y. 1880.
Macdonald F, see Franklin
Maclaren A = Ian Maclaren [John Watson], The Days of Auld Langsyne. L 1896
Mal = Malory.
Malet C = Lucas Malet [Mary Harrison], Sir Richard Calmady. L 1901.
Malory = Thomas Malory, Morte D'Arthur, ed. O. Sommer. L 1889.
Marlowe F = Christopher Marlowe, Dr. Faustus.
J = — The Jew of Malta.
T = — Tamburlaine.
All in Breymann & Wagner's ed Heilbronn 1885 ff.
Marlowe H = Christopher Marlowe, Hero and Leander; in Tucker Brooke's ed Oxf 1910
The name of Marlowe often abbreviated Ml or Marl.
Masefield C = John Masefield, Captain Margaret. L n.d. (Nelson).
E = — The Everlasting Mercy. L 1912.
M = — Multitude and Solitude. L n. d. (Nelson).
W = — The Widow in the Bye-Street. L 1912.
Matthews A = Brander Matthews, The American of the Future. N. Y. 1909.
F = — His Father's Son. N. Y 1896.
Maurier T = George Du Maurier, Trilby L 1894.
ME = Middle English.
Mered E = George Meredith, The Egoist. L 1892.
H = — Evan Harrington. L 1889.
R = — The Ordeal of Richard Feverel. L 1895.
T = — The Tragic Comedians. L 1893.
Merm. = The Mermaid Series of the Old Dramatists.
Merriman S = H. Seton Merriman [H. S. Scott], The Sowers. L 1905.
V = — The Vultures. L 1902.
Mi. see Milton.
Mill L = John Stuart Mill, On Liberty. L 1859.

Milton A = John Milton, Areopagitica, ed. Hales. Oxf. 1898. Poetical Works from H. C. Beeching's ed. Oxf. 1900: C = Comus, PL = Paradise Lost; PR = Paradise Regained; S = Sonnets, SA = Samson Agonistes. Other titles occasionally abbreviated

M], see Marlowe

ModE = Modern English

More U = Thomas More, Utopia, Robinson's transl. ed. by J. H Lupton, Oxf 1895 (A = Arber's reprint of 2d ed.).

Morley M = John Morley, Miscellanies. L 1886.

Morris C = William Morris, Signs of Change L 1888.
E = — — The Earthly Paradise. L 1890.
N = — — News from Nowhere L 1908.

Mulock H = Dinah Mulock (Mrs Craik), John Halifax Gentleman l

Murray D = James A H. Murray, The Dialect of the Southern Counties of Scotland. L 1878.

NED = A New English Dictionary, by Murray, Bradley, Craigie Oxf 1884 ff

Norris O = Frank Norris, The Octopus. L 1908 (Nelson).
P = — The Pit. L 1908 (ib)
S = — Shanghaied. L (ib).

NP = Newspaper (or periodical; among those most frequently quoted are The Times, Daily News, Daily Chronicle, Westminster Gazette, The Tribune, New York Times, Evening News, Everyman, Public Opinion, The Outlook, The Bookman, Review of Reviews, The World's Work

OE = Old English

OF = Old French

Orr L = Mrs Orr, Life of Robert Browning L 1891.

Otway = Thomas Otway, The Orphan and Venice Preserved, ed McClumpha. Boston (1904?).

Page J = Thomas Nelson Page, John Marvel Assistant N Y. 1909

Palm P = Birger Palm, The Place of the Adjective Attribute. Lund 1911

Parker R = Gilbert Parker, The Right of Way. L 1906.

Pater P = Walter Pater, Imaginary Portraits L 1887
R = — The Renaissance. L 1912.

Payn S = James Payn, Sunny Stories L.

PE = Present English.

Peacock S = Thomas L. Peacock, Memoirs of Shelley, ed. Brett-Smith. L 1909.

Peele D = George Peele, David and Bethsabe, in Manly's Specimens of Pre-Sh Drama II (page).

Philips L = F. C. Philips, As in a Looking-Glass T 1886

Phillips P = Stephen Phillips, Paolo and Francesca. L 1900.
Phillpotts K = Eden Phillpotts, The Three Knaves. L 1912.
M = — The Mother. L 1908.
PhSt = Phonetische Studien. Marburg.
Pinero B = Arthur W. Pinero, The Benefit of the Doubt. L 1895.
M = — The Magistrate. L 1897.
Q = — The Gay Lord Quex. L 1900.
S = — The Second Mrs. Tanqueray L 1895.
pl = plural.
Poe = Edgar Allan Poe, The Works. L 1872.
Poe S = — Selections L (1887?, Cassell's Red Libr.)
Pope = Alexander Pope, Poetical Works. Globe ed. L 1892.
prep = preposition
ptc = participle
Q = quarto
(q) = quoted second-hand
Quincey = Thomas De Quincey, Confessions of an Opium-Eater, etc L 1901 (MM.)
Quiller-Couch M = Arthur T. Quiller-Couch, Major Vigoureux. L 1907
Raleigh M = Walter A. Raleigh, Milton L 1909
S = — Style. L 1904
Sh = — Shakespeare. L 1907
Read K = Opie Read, A Kentucky Colonel
Rehearsal = George Villiers, The Rehearsal (Arber.)
Ridge B = William Pett Ridge, 69 Birnam Road L 1907
G = — Name of Garland. T
L = — Lost Property L 1902
N = — Nearly Five Million. L 1907.
S = — A Son of the State. L (6d ed.)
Ritchie M = Anne Thackeray Ritchie, Chapters from some Memoirs T 1896
Roberts M = Morley Roberts, The Private Life of Henry Maitland L 1912
Roister = (Udall), Ralph Roister Doister (Arber.)
Roosevelt A = Theodore Roosevelt, American Ideals. N. Y. 1901.
Rossetti = Dante G. Rossetti, Poetical Works in one vol L 1893.
RoR = Review of Reviews (generally quoted as NP.)
Royce R = Josiah Royce, Race Questions. N. Y 1908.
Ruskin C = John Ruskin, The Crown of Wild Olive L 1904.
F = — Fors Clavigera, Readings. L 1902.
P = — Praeterita L 1907
S = — Sesame and Lilies. L 1904
Sel = — Selections, 2 vol L 1893.

E = — Erechtheus. L 1876.
L = — Love's Cross Currents. T 1905.
SbS = — Songs before Sunrise. L 1908.
T = — Tristram of Lyonesse. L 1884.

Tenn (or Tennyson) = Alfred Tennyson, Poetical Works in one vol. L 1894.
L = — Life and Letters. T

Thack B = William M Thackeray, Burlesques. L 1869.
E = — Esmond T
H = — History of Sam Titmarsh and The Great Hoggarty Diamond. L 1878
N = — The Newcomes. L 1901.
P = — The History of Pendennis T
S = — The Book of Snobs L 1900.
Sk = — Sketches and Travels in London L 1901.
V = — Vanity Fair L 1890 (Minerva)

Thenks = Thenks Awfully Sketches in Cockney L 1890
Thomson S = James Thomson, The Seasons, etc., ed J L. Robertson. Oxf 1881
Trollope D = Anthony Trollope, The Duke's Children. T
O = — An Old Man's Love. T.
Twain H = Mark Twain [Samuel Clemens], Huckleberry Finn T
M = — Life on the Mississippi L 1887.
Tylor A = Edward B Tylor, Anthropology. L 1881

US = United States of America

Vachell H = Horace A. Vachell, The Hill L 1905
vb = verb.
vg = vulgar.

Walker L = Hugh Walker, Literature of the Victorian Era. L 1910.
Ward D = Mrs. Humphrey Ward, David Grieve. T 1892
E = — Eleanor. L 1900
F = — Fenwick's Career. L 1906.
M = — The Marriage of Wm Ashe. L (Nelson).
R = — Robert Elsmere. T.
Washington U = Booker Washington, Up from Slavery. N.Y.1905.

Wells A = H. G. Wells, Anticipations. L 1902.
F = — The Future in America. L 1907.
Fm = — The First Men in the Moon. L (Nelson).
L = — Love and Mr. Lewisham. L 1900.
M = — Mankind in the Making. L 1903.
N = — The New Macchiavelli. L 1911
T = — Twelve Stories and a Dream. L (6d ed.).
TM = — The Time Machine. L 1895
V = — Ann Veronica. L 1909.
WW = — The War of the Worlds. L 1912 (Nelson).
Westermarck M = Edward Westermarck, The History of Human Marriage. L 1894
White N = Percy White, The New Christians. T
Whitman L = Walt Whitman, Leaves of Grass Boston 1898.
Whittier = John Greenleaf Whittier, Poetical Works. (Oxf ed) 1904
Wilde D = Oscar Wilde, The Picture of Dorian Gray N. Y n d.
H = — The Happy Prince. L 1889.
Im = — The Importance of Being Earnest. L n.d
In = — Intentions 1891 [Engl Libr].
L = — Lord Arthur Saville's Crime T
P = — De Profundis. L 1905
R = — The Ballad of Reading Gaol L 1898.
S = — Sebastian Melmoth. L 1904.
Wilkins P = Wilkins, Pericles, ed by Mommsen. Oldenburg 1857.
Williamson L = C N & A M Williamson, The Lightning Conductor. L (Nelson).
P = — The Princess Passes. L (ib).
Winter G = Owen Wister, General Grant
R = — Red Men and White. N. Y 1895.
Wordsworth = William Wordsworth, Poetical Works. ed. Hutchinson (The Oxf ed).
(Sometimes from Macmillans one-vol. ed. L.)
Wordsworth P = William Wordsworth, The Prelude (Book and line).
Worth S = Nicholas Worth, The Southerner N. Y. 1909.
Yonge G = Charlotte M Yonge, A Book of Golden Deeds. L.
Zangwill G = Israel Zangwill, The Grey Wig. L 1903.

Chronological List

of the chief works quoted

Caxton 1481—89 Malory 1485. Bale 1538 Ascham 1545—70. More 1551 Hoister 1566 (1553?). Spenser 1579—96 Lyly 1584. Peele 1585. Marlowe 1587—93 Shakespeare 1588—1613 Greene 1588. Sidney (1595) Ben Jonson 1596—1637 Bacon 1597—1627

Beaumont and Fletcher 1607—11 Wilkins 1608. Authorized Version 1611 Milton 1634—71 Dryden 1660—1700. Butler 1663—78 Bunyan 1666—84. Behn 1668 Rehearsal 1671. Otway 1682 Congreve 1698—1700

Swift 1704—38 Farquhar 1707 Pope 1709—88. Spectator 1711—14 Defoe 1719—31 Thomson 1726—48 Fielding 1743—54. Johnson 1759 Sterne 1759—68 Goldsmith 1764—78 Sheridan 1775—79. Gibbon 1764—91 Cowper 1779—95 Franklin (bef 1790). Burns 1786—96 Boswell 1791 Coleridge 1794—1834. Wordsworth 1798—1850 Lamb 1798—1824.

Scott 1805—20. Byron 1807—24. Shelley 1811—22 Austen 1811—16 Keats 1817—20 De Quincey 1821—59 Landor 1824—36. Tennyson 1830—92 Carlyle 1833—81 Dickens 1834—70 Browning 1835—89. Whittier 1836—74 Mrs. Browning 1838—61 Poe 1838—49. Longfellow 1838—92. Thackeray 1841—55. Macaulay 1841—59 Lowell 1841—76 Lewes 1845. Jerrold 1845 Arnold 1848—58 Clough 1848—61. Kingsley 1858. Whitman 1855—81 Brontë 1857 Mulock 1857. Holmes 1857 Hughes 1857—61. Peacock 1858 George Eliot 1859—81. Mill 1859 Ruskin 1862—85 Swinburne 1864—1905 Rossetti 1870—82. Beaconsfield 1870 Many recent writers.

Chapter I.

Introductory.

1.1. Syntax, in the sense in which it is taken in this book, looks at grammatical facts from within, that is to say from the side of their meaning or signification. It is contrasted with **Morphology**, which looks at the same phenomena from without, from the side of their form. Morphology treats under one head the same change of form wherever it occurs, for instance the addition of *s* in *cats* and *eats* in one place, and the vowel-mutation in *geese* and *feed* as compared with *goose* and *food* in another place, asking in each case only secondarily what the influence of these changes is on the meaning of the form. Syntax, on the other hand, starts from such grammatical sense-categories as number or tense, and groups together the various means of expressing plurality: *-s* in *cats*, mutation in *geese*, *-en* in *oxen*, etc., then it deals with the meanings and uses or functions of plurality, which, of course, are the same in all plurals, no matter how formed. Under a different head the form *eats* is treated together with the other third person singulars of verbs (*eateth*, *can*, etc.). The full significance of this system will appear from the whole of this work; arguments in favour of this way of dealing with grammar will also be found in a forthcoming smaller work to be called "The Basis of Grammar".

The Three Ranks.

1.21. When anyone wishes to call up a picture or an idea in the mind of another man he does not always find one single word that is sufficiently definite for his purposes. In most cases he has to piece together the picture or idea by means of several words One word is defined (or modified) by another word, which in its turn may be defined (or modified) by a third word, etc. We are thus led to establish different ranks of words according to their mutual relations as defined or defining. In the combination *extremely hot weather*, *weather* may be called a primary word or a **principal**, *hot*, which defines *weather*, is a secondary word or an **adjunct**, and *extremely*, which defines *hot*, is a tertiary word or a **subjunct**. Though a tertiary word may be further defined by a (quaternary) word, and this again by a (quinary?) word, and so forth, it is of no use to distinguish more than the three orders mentioned, as there are no formal or other traits that distinguish words of these lower orders from tertiary words Thus, in *a certainly not very cleverly worded remark* each of the words *certainly*, *not*, and *very*, though defining the following word, is in no way grammatically different from what it would be as a tertiary word, as in *certainly a clever remark*, *not a clever remark*, *a very clever remark*

1.22. We thus get the following classification:

I. Primary words—Principals
II Secondary words—Adjuncts.
III. Tertiary words—Subjuncts

Primary and secondary words are *superior* in relation to tertiary words; secondary and tertiary words are *inferior* in relation to primary words

1.23. It is of course possible to have two or more coordinate adjuncts to the same principal; thus in *that nice young lady* both *that*, *nice* and *young*, equally define *lady*; compare also *much* (II) *good* (II) *wine* with *very* (III)

good (II) *wine*. Coordinate adjuncts may also be joined by means of connectives, as in *a rainy and stormy afternoon* | *a brilliant, though lengthy novel*. Where there is no connective the last adjunct often stands in a specially close connexion with the principal as forming one idea, one compound principal (*young-lady*). Sometimes also, the first of two adjuncts tends to be subordinate to the second and thus nearly becomes a subjunct, as in *icy cold* or *burning hot* (ch. XIV)

1.24. The logical basis of this system of subordination is the greater or lesser degree of specialization. Primary words are more special (apply to a smaller number of individuals) than secondary words, and these in their turn are less general than tertiary words. Thus in *a very poor widow*, we see that *widow* is the most special idea; *poor* can be applied to many more men and things than the word *widow*, and *very*, which indicates only a high degree, can be applied to any idea that may be found in various degrees. It is very important to keep in view this principle, which is so often overlooked, namely that **the word defined by another word, is in itself always more special than the word defining it, though the latter serves, of course, to render the former more special than it is in itself.** *Widow* is more special than *poor*, though *a poor widow* is more special than *a widow*; *poor* is more special than *very*, though *very poor* is more special than *poor*.

1.25. It is a natural consequence of these definitions that individual names (**proper names** in the real sense of that word) can only be used as principals, and never as adjuncts and still less as subjuncts. The seeming exceptions as in *a Reynolds picture, Gladstone bag, Japan tables*, can easily be explained when we notice that the names in these combinations have shifted their signification; they no longer point out the individual person or country called *Reynolds, Gladstone, Japan*, but have the much more general signification "painted by

Reynolds", "named after Gladstone", "lacquered in the Japanese style".

1.26. While there are thus some words that can only stand as principals as expressing highly specialized ideas, we have other words that may in different combinations be either primary or secondary words. Thus we may speak of *conservative Liberals* as well as of *liberal Conservatives*, but it is noticeable that as primary words (substantives) *a Liberal* and *a Conservative* have more specialized meanings (a man belonging to that definite political party) than when standing as secondary words or adjectives, in which case they indicate a much vaguer trend of the mind

1.27. Further we have words of such very general signification that they can never be used as primary words, as the least specialized among adjuncts may be mentioned the articles, especially the indefinite article.

1.28. When an adjective is made into a substantive, its subjunct is shifted into an adjunct, as seen in these examples

absolutely novel	absolute novelty
utterly dark	utter darkness
awfully funny	awful fun
perfectly strange	perfect stranger
III + II	II + I.

Cf. on these shifted subjunct adjuncts chapter XII.

Parts of Speech.

1.31. In the examples hitherto chosen we have always seen **substantives** as principals, **adjectives** as adjuncts, and **adverbs** as subjuncts, and there certainly is some degree of correspondence between the three orders of subordination we have established and the three "parts of speech" mentioned. We might even define substantives as words standing habitually as principals, adjectives as words standing habitually as adjuncts, and adverbs as words

standing habitually as subjuncts. But the correspondence is not complete. While the distinction between primary, secondary, and tertiary is purely logical, the distinction between the three parts of speech is purely grammatical and as such may vary from one language to another. In some languages, such as Finnish, there is no formal distinction between substantives and adjectives, which thus form together the one part of speech called "nouns" (in the old historical sense of Latin *nomen*, still preserved in German). In English the two classes are kept apart with a fair degree of distinctness, especially by the formation of the plural. *Poor*, in *the poor people* as well as in the combination *the poor*, is an adjective, though in the former case it is an adjunct and in the latter a principal; but *(the) blacks*, though derived from the adjective *black*, shows by its plural ending *-s* that it has become a substantive as well as principal; in the combinations *the black ones* we have the adjective-adjunct *black* added to the substantive *ones*; see on these phenomena chapters IX, X and XI. The genitive case *butcher's* remains a substantive, though it is an adjunct in the combination *the butcher's shop*; but the same form is a principal when we say *I bought it at the butcher's*. This view will throw some light on the disputed question whether *cannon* in *cannon ball* is a substantive or an adjective, as shown in chapter XIII.

1.32. The formal difference between adjectives and adverbs in English is much less pronounced than that between substantives and adjectives, as neither adjectives nor adverbs have any inflexion (apart from comparison). Therefore we may hesitate whether *then* in *the then government* belongs to one or the other class, though there is no doubt that it is an adjunct. In such cases it will be the safer course to say that *then* is still an adverb; thus also *here* in *this man here*, as well as in the vulgar *this 'ere man*. Some forms, such as *fast* and *early*, must certainly be recognized as adjectives in some combinations, and adverbs in others, while there are a great many

forms in *-ly* which are always adverbs, such as *necessarily*; they can never be used as adjuncts. Words from which substantives in *-ness* and adverbs in *-ly* may be formed, always must rank as adjectives.

1.39. It will be seen that the distinction between different parts of speech always depends on formal criteria. The importance of this will also be seen below, when we come to deal with the mutual relations of adverbs, prepositions, and conjunctions. On the other hand, it must be recognized that such formal criteria are not always present with the same degree of clearness, and Modern English in many cases has obliterated distinctions that were formerly more evident.

Verbs. Verbids

1.41. If we compare the two combinations *the barking dog* and *the dog barks*, we find that the same two ideas are combined in different ways, though the logical subordination is the same. *Dog* in both cases is the primary word, and *barks* as well as *barking* is secondary to it. A tertiary word may be added in the same form in both cases: *the furiously barking dog* (*the dog barking furiously*) | *the dog barks furiously*. But though the two combinations have thus much in common, they are felt to be distinctly different: the group of words *the dog barks* is rounded off in a way that *the barking dog* is not. The former is a complete piece of information, while *the barking dog* makes us expect some continuation (like *does not bite*). We express this peculiar kind of finish, which is found in one combination and lacking in the other, by saying that a combination containing a **verb** form like *barks* in our example is regularly capable of forming a sentence, while a combination containing no verb can only in exceptional cases form a sentence. This will be illustrated in a following chapter.

1.42. This sentence-building power is found in all real verb forms (often called finite verb forms), but not

in such forms as *barking* or *stolen* (participles) or in infinitives like *to bark*, *to steal*. Participles are really a kind of adjectives, and infinitives have something in common with substantives, though syntactically they retain many of the verbal characteristics. We shall therefore do well to restrict the name of *verb* to those forms that have the eminently verbal power of forming sentences, and to apply the name of **verbid** to participles and infinitives.

1.43. The primary word with which a verb is intimately connected as a kind of adjunct, is called the **subject** of the verb.

1.44. In the old Arian (Indo-Germanic) languages, as well as in some languages belonging to other groups, the verb form, besides expressing the verbal idea of some activity or condition, united or incorporated a great many subordinate ideas, such as grammatical person (i. e. the distinction between [1] the actual speaker, [2] the person or persons addressed, and [3] what is neither speaker nor spoken to), number of subject, modality, tense (in the widest signification of that term, including time, duration, "perfectivity" and other "aspects"). Very often such a verb form was sufficient in itself to express a whole composite thought; what could not be incorporated into the verb form, stood more or less isolated outside the sentence proper, in what may be called **extraposition**. In course of time, the tendency has been to strip the verbal idea or root idea of these accessory notions; but though in a form like *must* there are no longer any indications of person, number, tense, or mood, most other verb forms still retain some or all of these accessory ideas, and we must therefore devote separate chapters to person, tense, and mood in connexion with our treatment of the verbs, while number in the verb is best treated together with number in the substantives, see chapters II—VI.

1.45. When a verb is made into a substantive, we have the same kind of shifting as above (1.28), for instance:

describes accurately	accurate description
visits frequently	frequent visits
reads carefully	careful reader.

Predicatives.

1.51. As we have seen, what is added to a verb to define or modify it is generally in the form of a subjunct. But some verbs on account of their signification are especially adapted to connect two ideas in such a way that the second becomes a kind of adjunct to the first (the subject). The most typical instance is the verb *is*: while in the combination *the red rose*, *red* is the immediate adjunct to *rose*, in the combination *the rose is red* we have *red* joined to *rose* by means of *is*. Such mediate adjuncts are called **predicatives**. The only difference between the two combinations is that *the red rose* forms no sentence while *the rose is red* does.

1.52. Some other verbs that are not so colourless as *is*, admit of the same construction, as *he gets angry*, *turns red*, *falls sick*. The predicative necessarily stands in the same logical relation to the subject as the adjunct to its principal, that is, it is more general (less special or individual) than the subject. Thus it is possible to say: *An owl is a bird*, but not: *A bird* (subject) *is an owl* (predicative). If we say, *A strange bird is the owl*, the latter is just as much the subject as with the usual word order. In comparatively few cases the two may be equally, or very nearly equally, special, and then one may hesitate which to reckon as the subject and which as the predicative. In other cases it is almost immaterial whether an addition be treated as a mediate adjunct to the subject or as a subjunct to the verbal idea, as in *the rose smells sweet* (predicative adjective) or *smells sweetly* (adverbial subjunct).

Objects.

1.61. Some words of the secondary and tertiary classes indicate a relation between two or more persons or things and therefore may take an object beside the superior word to which they are attached. Such an **object** is always a primary word, but it may be more special as well as more general than the first principal. Thus, both sentences: *An owl sees a bird*, and *A bird sees an owl*, are perfectly legitimate and natural.

1.62. There are comparatively few adjectives that can take an object, as *like* in *He is like his brother*, and *worth* in *A book, worth two shillings*.

1.63. The number of verbs, on the other hand, that take or may take an object, is very considerable indeed. They are called **transitive** verbs, and such verbs as *takes* and *plays* are said to be used transitively in such sentences as *He takes his hat*, or *He plays football*, while they are said to be used intransitively in *He takes after his father*, and *He never plays*.

1.64. In a great many cases the same idea may be expressed in two different ways, called the **active** and the **passive**. By this means two principals may change places, so that what is the object in the active is made the subject in the passive; what is the subject in the active, is in Modern English passive sentences generally added by means of *by* (the "converted subject"); for instance: *Cats eat rats* (active) = *rats are eaten by cats* (passive). It will be seen that the passive verb in English always has an auxiliary verb (*is*, sometimes *gets*, etc.).

1.65. On the different nature of the relation between the verb and its object, and especially on the "object of result" as in *I make* (*bore*, *dig*) *a hole*, I may refer to chapter XVIII.

1.66. Some verbs may take two objects, as *offered* in *John offered the lady a chair*. Here *a chair* is called the **direct object**, and *the lady* the **indirect object**; the

latter is equivalent to the expression *to the lady*. In the passive there is nowadays (see ch. XIX) a tendency to get rid of the restriction by which only the direct object could be turned into the subject, thus *The lady was offered a seat* is found by the side of *A seat was offered (to) the lady*

1.67. A different phenomenon is found in such sentences as *They called their boy Tom | he made his wife happy | he acknowledged himself beaten* Here we have not two different objects, one direct and one indirect; neither would it do to consider only the first as the real object: the meaning would be quite different if we said only: *They called their boy | he made his wife | he acknowledged himself* In each of these sentences we have really one **complex object**, made up of two parts standing in the relation of a principal and its adjunct or predicate From a logical point of view, the first, or subjectal part, is necessarily more special than the second part, and therefore is the only one that can be made into a subject if we turn the sentence into the passive *Their boy was called Tom | his wife was made happy* (The third sentence does not admit of being turned into the passive form.)

A special subdivision of the complex object is the "accusative with infinitive" as in *We saw John come | He made John come (caused John to come)*. The same general remarks that were made on complex objects also apply to these cases, for further details and on the use of *to* in the passive (*John was seen, made to come*), see chapter XX

1.68. A great many adverbs also are capable of taking an object. The relation between *in* as used in the sentence *Mary was in* and the same word in the sentence *Mary was in the house*, or between *after* in *Jill came tumbling after* and *Jill came tumbling after Jack* is exactly the same as that between an intransitive and a transitive verb, only the same terms are not generally used in grammar in these cases. The ordinary terms

are **adverb** for *in* and *after* in the first sentences, and **preposition** for the same words in the second sentence, and these are generally reckoned as two different "parts of speech". As, however, there are no formal distinctions at all, we should deviate from the principle indicated above if we were to look upon adverbs and prepositions as two classes of words, though these two names are so firmly established that it will be practically convenient to retain them.

Pronouns.

1.71. Pronouns constitute a separate "part of speech" which presents many peculiar features. It is not easy to give one comprehensive definition of the meanings covered by these words and their relations to other classes. A distinguishing trait of many of them, such as *I*, *you*, *it*, *this*, is that they will be understood differently according to the situation in which they are spoken. *I* and *you* might be called variable individual names, as *I* means in each case the speaker, whoever that may happen to be, and *you* in the same way refers to the person or persons addressed in each case, etc. But the same variability according to circumstances cannot be predicated of *none* (*no*, *nobody*), and hardly of the interrogative *who* and *what*; and yet these words are always reckoned as pronouns. Whether such words as *same*, *such*, *all*, are to be called pronouns or not, is to some extent a matter of taste and of no great importance.

1.72. Some pronouns can only be employed as principals, for instance *I*, *you*, *he*, *who*. These cannot be called substantives, as their inflexion is different from that of all substantives. Other pronouns may be used without change of form as principals and as adjuncts; thus *what* (*What happened*? *What house*) and *that*. Others again have different forms for the two employments, compare e. g. *mine* with *my house*, *ours* with *our house*, *none* (*nobody*, *nothing*) with *no house* (ch. XVI).

1.73. In general the forms of pronouns show a great many irregularities; the formation of the plural for example in *I* : *we*, *he* : *they*; again, instead of a genitive in *-s* of the personal pronouns we have the possessive pronouns, as *my*, *mine* corresponding to *I*, *your*, *yours* corresponding to *you*. Some pronouns have two cases which are not distinguished in the other classes of words: *I*, *he*, *she*, *who* being the nominative, and *me*, *him*, *her*, *whom*, the accusative, which is used especially, but not exclusively, as the object of verbs and adverbs. Some pronouns distinguish genders and have either a twofold division as the interrogative *who* : *what*, compare also *anybody* : *anything*, or else a threefold division as in *he* : *she* · *it*. The functions of all these various forms will be dealt with in separate chapters

1.74. Corresponding to these pronouns and formed etymologically from the same stems we have a set of adverbs such as *then*, *there*, *when*, *where*, *thus*, *so*. As the rest of the adverbs they have no change of form; and if irregularity of inflexion is made the criterion of pronouns, we cannot include them under pronouns. Their use, however, presents so many peculiarities that we may count them as a subclass by themselves and designate them as **pronominal adverbs.**

Word groups Clauses. Phrases.

1.81. A word group consisting of two or more words may in many instances play the same rôle as a single word. Thus the group *Sunday afternoon* is principal in the sentences *Sunday afternoon was fine* (subject) and *I spent Sunday afternoon* (object) *at home*; it is adjunct in *a Sunday afternoon lecture*, and subjunct in *I slept all Sunday afternoon*. Or we may take such a combination as *He lives on this side the river*; here the whole group consisting of the last five words is subjunct to *lives*; *on this side*, which consists of the adverb (prep.) *on* with its object *this* (adjunct) *side* (principal), forms a group adverb,

which here takes an object, *the* (adjunct) *river* (principal), and may therefore be called a group preposition.

1.82. Other examples of groups in various employments: *After dinner* is a subjunct in *He smokes after dinner*, but an adjunct in *His after dinner pipe*. The infinitive with *to* is a principal in *To see* (subject) *is to believe* (predicative); it is an adjunct in *The life to come*, and a subjunct in *He came to see his uncle*.

1.83. *Our very old friend*, which consists of a principal (*friend*) with two adjuncts (*our*, *old*), one of which has a subjunct (*very*), is turned into a group adjunct by being put in the genitive. *Our very old friend's daughter*. In a similar way we have *The King of Persia's daughter*, where the four first words form a genitival group adjunct to *daughter*, while in the group *The King of Persia*, *King* as principal is determined by two adjuncts, the definite article (determining pronominal adjective) *the* and the group *of Persia*. In this way it will be easy to give a natural and consistent analysis of the various combinations actually occurring in our language.

1.84. A special case of great importance is presented by those groups that are generally called **clauses**. If we define a clause as a member of a sentence which has in itself the form of a sentence, we get the following gradation of clauses parallel to that presented by single words or by other groups:

1 Clause principals:

That he will come is certain (cp. His coming is c.).

Who steals my purse steals trash (cp. The thief steals . .)

What you say is quite true (cp. Your assertion . . .).

I do not know *where I was born* (cp. . . . my own birthplace).

I expect (*that*) *he will arrive at 6* (cp. . . his arrival).

We talked of *what he would do* (cp. . . . of his plans).

In the first three sentences the clause is the subject, in the three last the object, either of the verb or of the preposition *of*.

II. Clause adjuncts.

I like a boy *who speaks the truth* (cp. . . . a truthful boy).

This is the land *where I was born* (cp. my native land).

III. Clause subjuncts

It is a custom *where I was born* (cp there).

When he comes, I must go (cp. then)

If he comes I must go (cp. in that case)

As this is so, there is no harm done (cp. accordingly).

Lend me your knife, *that I may cut this string* (cp. to cut this with).

1.85. The reader is specially warned not to confound the term "clause principal" as here used with the term "principal clause" found in many grammars. The latter means that part of the sentence which remains if all (dependent) clauses are taken away *I know the man who told you this* here *I know the man* is called the principal clause, etc But though it must be admitted that in some instances the "dependent clauses" may be left out without any material detriment to the meaning, there seems to be no reason for a special term for what remains after it has been stripped of those elements. An adjective or an adverb may also often be left out, and yet we want no name for the residue. If we take away the clause *where I was born* from the three sentences given above, what remains is (1) I do not know, (2) This is the land, (3) It is a custom; but there is just as little reason for treating these as a separate grammatical category as if they had originated from leaving out the underlined parts of the sentences (1) I do not know *my birthplace*, (2) This is my *native* land, (3) It is a custom *at Bath*. The grammatical unit is the whole sentence in-

cluding all that the speaker or writer has brought together to express his thought; and it is of subordinate importance that some parts of the sentence may be in the form of "sentences" or "clauses".

1.86. The term "**conjunction**" is regularly used of such words as *because, that, after*, when they serve to introduce a clause and connect it with the rest of the sentence, and we may retain that term, though we cannot count conjunctions as a special "part of speech", but must look upon them as adverbs in a special function, namely that of having a clause as their object. We do not call *believe* one part of speech when it has no object, another when it has a word as object, and a third when it has a clause as its object, neither should we do so with *after*, as the cases are really parallel, compare for instance

(1) I *believe* in a Supreme Being | Jill came tumbling *after*

(2) I *believe* your words | Jill came tumbling *after* Jack

(3) I *believe* that you are right | he came *after* we had left.

Compare also, (They have lived happily) *ever since* | *ever since their marriage* | *ever since they were married*.

1.87. A **phrase** is a combination of words which together form a sense unit, though they need not always come in immediate juxtaposition. Thus the words *puts off*, which make up a phrase, the sense of which ('postpones') cannot be inferred from that of the words taken separately, may be separated, e g by *it*: *he puts it off*. The verb phrase *will take* admits of such a word as *not* between *will* and *take*, etc

Chapter II.

Number.

2.1. In English only two numbers are distinguished, singular (to denote one-ness) and plural (to denote more-than-one-ness). The few survivals of a dual number will be discussed in 7 7.

The two numbers are distinguished in substantives, pronouns and verbs, but not as a rule in adjectives and never in adverbs.

The only instances in which one might feel inclined to talk of plurals of adverbs are *twice*, *thrice* (and why not *more than once*, *now and then*, *sometimes*, *often*, *always*?). These may be considered a kind of plural of *once*, *here and there* is a kind of indefinite plural of *at one place* (but neither of *here* nor of *there*).

2.2. The formal means by which the plural is distinguished from the singular are the following.

2.21. In Substantives.

(1) The regular *s* ending, that is

[iz] after a sibilant [z, s, ʒ, ʃ] as in *roses*, *princes*, *bridges*, *dishes*,

[z] after a voiced non sibilant, as in *ideas*, *kings*;

[s] after a voiceless non-sibilant, as in *hats*, *baths*

(2) The regular *s*-ending with change in the kernel, as in *houses* [hauziz] from *house* [haus], *wives* from *wife*, *paths* [pa ðz] from *path* [pa·þ], *staves* [steivz] from *staff* [sta·f], now also sg *stave* and pl *staffs*

(3) The irregular *s*-ending as in *pence* [pens] from *penny* [peni].

On these three see Morphology, s-ending.

(4) The addition of *-en*, in *oxen*; this is combined with change of the kernel in *children* [tʃildrən] from *child* [tʃaild] and *brethren* [breðrin] from *brother* [brʌðə]. See Morphology, -n-ending.

(5) Change of the kernel without any ending, as in *men* from *man*, *women* [wimin] from *woman* [wumən]. See Morphology, Mutation.

(6) One of the un-English plural-endings used in certain foreign words, see here below 2.6.

On the formation of the plural in compound substantives, in which sometimes the first, sometimes the last, and sometimes both components are inflected, see below 2.3—2.5.

A kind of substitutive plural is found in *Messrs N*, rarely written in full *Messieurs N*, pronounced [mesəz, meʃəz], plural of *Mr. N* [mistə], and *Mesdames N*, pronounced in the French way or rarely [mezdəmz], pl of *Mrs. N* (and *Miss N*), both used in business style; further in *Gentlemen* in superscription of letters, pl of *Sir*, though (*Dear*) *Sirs* is also written; in speech *Sirs* is no longer said, cf. Ml T 3609 Wel, sirs! By 566 Well, sirs. Cf. also 4.91 on *people* as a substitutive plural of *person*.

Some substantives do not show by their form whether the singular or the plural is meant, these will be treated here ch III.

In the genitive the distinction between singular and plural is in most words only graphical and recent, compare *prince's* : *princes'*, *king's* : *kings'*, *count's* : *counts'*, *lady's* : *ladies'*. On the use of the apostrophe, see Morphology, -*s*-ending. A real distinction is found only in those cases in which the plural is not formed regularly, as in *wife's* : *wives'* *child's* : *children's*, *man's* : *men's*, and in some compounds, for instance *sister-in-law's* : *sisters-in-law's*, but forms of the latter kind are generally avoided.

2.22. In Adjectives.

The only adjectives in which a distinction between the two numbers exists or has existed in the Modern English period are those mentioned in 2.7. Cf. also the pronominal adjectives *that* : *those* and *this* : *these*, and the vulgar *them*: I shall never go down *them stairs* again.

We have a kind of substitutive plural, when *such long sermons* is generally used as the pl of *so long a sermon* in preference to *so long sermons*.

Such numerical adjectives as *four* and *forty*, etc, are of course always plural. So is also the adjective *divers* which is only used as adjunct to plural words, while its doublet *diverse* may be used with a singular. *Several* generally is used to qualify a plural word, though sometimes it may be found with a singular:

Sh Cæs III 2.246 he gives to *every severall man*, seuenty fiue drachmaes | Rehearsal 77 you have *a several design* for every scene | Ru Sel 1.399 in *each several profession* | ib. 1.410 *every several mind* needs different books.

Both of course is plural (dual), see 7.7. But *all* (and *whole*) may be used with sg and pl substantives all the money | all the men | one whole year two whole lambs. Also *the whole circumstances* = all the circumstances'.

2.23. In Pronouns.

The irregularity of pronominal inflexion makes it necessary to enumerate here all the forms.

Singular	Plural
I, me	*we, us*
(thou, thee) you	*(ye) you*
he, him *she, her* *it*	*they, them*
myself (ourself)	*ourselves*
(thyself), yourself	*yourselves*
himself *herself* *itself*	*themselves*
this	*these*
that	*those.*

With regard to the last forms it should, however, be noted that although *those trees* is the regular plural

of *that tree*, there is no exact correspondence between them as principals before a relative pronoun, as the sg of *those who* (*those that*) is really *he who* and *she who* (the old pl *they who* being obsolete), while *that* is only used before a relative pronoun as a neuter: *that which*. Thus also to *those present* we have no corresponding personal singular, as *that present* cannot be used for 'the person present'.

Some pronouns are the same in both numbers, e. g. *the*, *who*, *what* (cf 5.5); others are used only in the sg, as *each*, *an* (*a*), or only in the pl, as *both*.

All these forms will be dealt with in the Morphology; in this volume there will only be occasion to speak separately about *thou*, *thee*, *ye*, *you*, 2 8

In Verbs.

2.241. A distinction between the two numbers is only made in the present tense, and only in the third person, which in the sg has the regular *s* ending, namely

[ɪz] after a sibilant, as in *praises*, *kisses*, *manages*, *crushes*;

[z] after a voiced non-sibilant, as in *goes*, *sings*;

[s] after a voiceless non-sibilant, as in *rests*, *coughs*;

while the pl has no ending and is therefore identical with the form used in the first person singular: (*I*, *we*, *you*, *they*) *praise*, *kiss*, *manage*, *wish*, *go*, *sing*, *rest*, *cough*.

Irregular forms with change in the kernel are *has* [hæz] from *have* [hæv], *says* [sez] from *say* [sei], *does* [dʌz] from *do* [du·], as also (*I*) *am*, (*thou*) *art*, (*he*) *is* corresponding to the pl *are* Cf 2 243.

On the *s* ending see Morphology, where will also be discussed the obsolete singular endings *-st* and *-t* in the second person (*thou goest*, *shalt*, etc.) and *-th* in the third person (*he goeth*).

2.242. With regard to the verb forms it is important to remember that the forms in *-s* and in *-th* (including *is*, *was*, *hath*, *doth*) were very frequently used in ELE as

plurals. This usage begins about 1540 and declines about 1640. It belonged to the (standard) conversational language and is accordingly found very frequently in plays and letters, also in prose fiction, while it is very rare in higher literary or scientific prose. Among dramatists Ben Jonson is the only one who makes little use of it Though the forms in *-s* originated in the North, the syntactical usage may very well have started in the South, after 1640 it lives on in vulgar or dialectal speech. (This is chiefly a summary of Knecht, K, p 49—152). In the following chapters these plurals in *-s* (*th*) have not been considered, as they have had little influence on the development of standard PE

2.243. The two numbers are identical in all past tenses: (*he they*) *went, spoke*, etc., the only exception being *were* (indicative) corresponding to the sg *was* (obsolete second person *wast, wert*). In consequence of this no numerical distinction is made in the present tense if this was originally a past tense, as in the old preterite present verbs (*can, may*, etc) and in *must* and *ought* which have more recently developed present-tense signification. On these forms as well as on *need(s)* and on the old distinction between sg *drank* and pl *drunk* see Morphology

Plurals of compounds.

2.31. In the vast majority of compounds the final element only takes the plural inflexion as the one that represents the central idea, this is quite independent of the spelling as "one word" or "two words". Thus *gentlemen* | *steel pens* | *boy-and-girl loves* | *greengages* | *greenbacks* | *greengrocers* | *womanhaters*, etc

2.32. Thus also in the conversationally frequent combinations of a proper name as first word and *child, girl, sister*, etc as last-word.

Those *Johnson children* | the four *Smith girls* | GE M 1.82 all the *Dodson sisters* | ib. 176 the *Tulliver children* | Trollope D 2 232 the *Fitz Howard young ladies* | Doyle

S 1.11 the *Atkinson brothers* | Hardy T 519 the *d'Urberville knights and dames* slept on. (Cf. Thack V 292 all the *Jenkins people*).

Appositional Compounds.

2.33. In appositional compounds the same rule generally obtains, that only the last part is inflected in the plural:

lady friends | *girl graduates* | *boy messengers* | Bellamy L 93 parents desiring *boy* rather than *girl children* | Ridge L 260 two small *girl strangers*.

fellow travellers | AV Matth 18.28 and 31 his *fellow-servants*

Fielding T 4.181 these *soldier fellows* . those *officer fellows* | Ward R 2.75 one of those London *dealer fellows* | Ru C 160 you *soldier youths*

Sh H5 1 2.122 Your *brother kings* and monarchs of the earth | Carlyle R 1.287 a million *brother Englishmen* | Darwin L 2 26 a few *brother naturalists* | Wells T 102 certain *grocer cousins* | Swift J 71 Stratford and my other *friend merchants* (now rather *merchant friends*) | Ml T 2852 our *neighbour kings*.

Mc Carthy 2.184 respectable *Mussulman inhabitants* of Damascus.

Lamb E 1 181 the *Robin Redbreasts* . Carlyle S 138 *boa constrictors* (also Stevenson B 68)

Tennyson L 1 14 daily *something nothings* | Sheridan 296 *noun substantives* (NED *nouns substantives* 1530, *noun-substantives* 1779, 1832, *nouns substantive* 1843).

2.34. But when *man* or *woman* is the first word of an appositional compound, both elements are inflected, the reason being apparently that the pl here does not end in *s* and thus is not liable to be misheard as a genitive case, which would be possible if we formed the pl *ladies friends*:

More U 285 the *men priestes* | Sh Mach I. 7 72 Bring forth *men-children* onely | AV Gen 32.5 *men servants* and

women servants | Luke 12.45 | Franklin A 44 two *women friends* | Scott A 1 345 *men* and *women singers* | Wells F 52 an army of *men cooks* | Hope Q 164 We conspire like Fenians or *Women Suffragists* | Ruskin Sel 2.431 *men-saints* . . *women-saints*

Note especially the frequent contrast: *men-servants and maid-servants* (Defoe P 43, Thack N 120, Kingsley H 227, Kipl L 33) and the different treatment in *women writers* = *lady writers*, *women artists* = *lady artists*, etc

Thus we have also frequently *men-folk* (Hardy T 102, Mered E 144, Kipl J 1.84, 2.16, Zangwill G 357, Barrie M 58 etc., Fielding T 1.192 (dialect) men yoke, 3.26 men folks) and *women-folk* (Hardy F 284, Stevenson Catr 68, Zangwill G 370, Kipl J 2.184, Harraden F 237, Doyle S 4 40, Norris O 233, Herrick M 50, etc), rarer *women people* Norris O 207, scornfully *men-things* Caine C 218; in Scotch Barrie W 45 us *women-bodies*

This use of *women* as first word is transferred to *womenkind* (Sh Per IV. 6.159 wemenkinde, Beaumont 1 106, Trelawney 20, Darwin L 3.40, Stevenson Catr 18, Zangwill G 319, Lang Essays in Little 203) by the side of the more usual *womankind* (e.g Sh Shr IV 2.14, Beaumont 1 115, Scott A 1.90, etc etc).

The unchanged *man* or *woman* in such compounds is rare:

Haggard S 178 manservants | Carpenter L 81 woman-friends | London W 101 the man-animals | Pater R 13 my man-servants and my maid servants.

2.35. If the first-word is in itself a compound of *-man* (other than *woman*), there is some uncertainty in the plural, owing no doubt to the identity in sound of *gentleman* and *gentlemen* [dʒentlmən], etc., in conversational pronunciation:

I have found *gentlemen* before *farmers* (Fielding T 4.237, Collier Engl 324), *commoners* (Swift PC 32, Colling wood Ru 59), *volunteers* (Scott A 1.94), *students* (Dr D 373), *screws* (Mered E 54), *acquaintance* (ib 74), *cricketers* (ib.

162), *pensioners* (Thack P 1 249), *sidesmen* (Caine C 28), *ushers* (Morley Spect XV), *painters* (Thack N 472), *highwaymen* (Holmes A 326), *riders*, *passengers*, *friends*

But *gentleman* before the plurals *commoners* (Harrison Ru 34), *sharpers* (Collier Engl 324), *friends* (Harraden F 201).

Similarly *journeymen carpenters* (Greene F 139), but *journeyman-carpenters* (Hardy L 92), *journeyman shoemakers* (Dr N 158), *journeyman plasterers* (Ellis Early E Pron. 4.1163).

Clergyman-poets (Tennyson L 4.12).

2.36. With *child* also we find some vacillation: NP '07 child visitors to the Zoo | NP '10 child-geniuses; *children lovers* in Thack. V 371 seems to mean 'lovers of children'.

Compound Titles.

2.37. "In groups consisting of two titles, says Sweet NEG § 1019, both elements are inflected, as in *lords-lieutenants*, *lords justices*, *knights-templars*." This rule, however, is not universally observed. One Englishman whom I asked, insisted on *Lord Chancellors*, another hesitated between *Lords Chancellor* and *Lord Chancellors*, but neither mentioned the double plural of Saxon.

Examples from literature:

Lord Cardinals: Ml F 161b, 915, 1006, 1041 | *Lords-presidents*: Latimer Specimens 111. 21 244 | *Lord Mayors*: (Mered E 326 | *Lords-justices*: M'Carthy 2 436 | *Lord-Lieutenants*: Hope Cn 94.

Knights Templars: Thack N 262, Hawth S 264, Wells U 159 | *Knights Hospitallers*: Scott Iv 70, Hales Longer Poems 296 | *knights challengers*: Scott Iv 92 | *Knights Companions*: Defoe G 28.

sir squires: Scott Iv 127 | *Sir Knights*: ib 172 — not thus used now.

Mr. Speakers: Holmes A 135.

Lieutenant-Colonels (Thack S 19, 176) | *lieutenant-generals* (Thack E 2.291) | *Lieutenant-Governors* (Kipl J 2.38).

major-generals (Thack E 2.291, Shaw 2.30, *major generals* Shaw P XIX).

Title and Name.

2.38. In groups consisting of a title + a proper name there has been for the last two centuries a tendency to give the plural inflexion to the latter. This is mentioned by Elphinston 1765 vol 1.230: "several *Mr. Johns* (for Mester Johns), various *Master-Jacky's*, the *Mr. Wests* and the *Mrs. Wests*, the *Mr. and Mrs Wests*, the *Master-Wests* and the *Miss-Wests*, both the *Lord-Stranges*, etc."

Examples of both constructions:

Mr. [Mister]: Austen M 41 the Mr. Bertrams | Hope C 178 a thousand Mr. Taylors. Thus also Austen E 96, 97, Di N 554, Thack V 375, etc. *Misters* before a name seems never to have been used; in commercial language *Messrs* [mesəz, mesjəz, meʃəz] is used instead. *Messrs Jackson* = colloquially *the Mr. Jacksons*.

Master. Di N (several times) *the Master Crummleses*, once (599) with double plural *the Masters Crummleses*.

Mrs here the plural [misiz, misiz] is naturally avoided for the sake of euphony, M'Carthy 2.651 hundreds of Mrs. Tullivers all over England

Miss: Ever since the first appearance of this shortened form of *Mistress* (*Mrs*) there has been some hesitation in the plural; but "such combinations as *the Misses Smith, the brothers Smith* now sound pedantic, the former being also liable to cause confusion with *Mrs* [misiz], and in colloquial language it is usual to say *the Miss Smiths*" (Sweet NEG § 1020) The difference between pedantic and natural grammar is well brought out in the following quotation (from Yates, Flügel's Dict.) "the Miss Inderwicks, as the girls called them, or the Misses Inderwick, as they called themselves"

I have taken the superfluous pains to note down a number of passages in literature, in which both types occur; I have found the type *the Misses N.* in Fielding, Thack, Carlyle, Di, GE, Mrs Ward, Ridge, and the type *the Miss Ns* in Fielding, Goldsmith, Richardson, Miss Austen, Byron (DJ 13.85), Coleridge, Thack, Di, GE, Trollope, Anstey, Mrs Ward, H James.

Examples with other titles:

Sh Wiv I. 2.2 twenty *Sir John Falstaffs* | ib IV. 5.71 Three *Doctor Faustasses* | Stevenson V 96 there are not many *Doctor Johnsons* | Franklin 172 the two *Doctors Bond* | Trollope D 3.98 *Major Tiftos* are cheap | Swift J 154 [note of editor] There were several *Colonel Fieldings* in the first half of the 18th cent. | ib 158 I saw two *Lady Bettys* there | By DJ 11.80 the *Lady Carolines* | Ru Sel 2.431 Gonerils, Regans, and *Lady Macbeths* | Carlyle H 129 I would ride into Leipzig, though it rained *Duke-Georges* for nine days running | ib. 141 *Regent-Murrays* | ib. 261 *King-Henrys, Queen Elizabeths*

2.39. *The brothers Smith* is no parallel case, as *brother* is no title, therefore *s* is never added to the name: Thack V 77 the two brothers Crawley | Mered E 463 the brothers Coggleshy, etc

Substantive and Adjective.

2.41. Compounds with post-adjunct adjectives are chiefly French, and we sometimes find the French inflexion of both substantive and adjective (cf Progress § 141, below 2.76) But generally only one *s* is found; in the older, and still to some extent in modern, literary language the sb took the *s*, while the tendency, especially in conversation, is now towards inflecting the groups as wholes and thus to add *s* to the adjective This tendency is strengthened by the fact that to the modern linguistic feeling the final element may often stand as a substantive rather than as an adjective (*patent, general,*

plural).—Carlyle's (F 2.97) *fifty Leo Tenths* is the plural of a proper name (4.43).

letters patents † (Sh R2 II. 1.202, II. 3.130, Jack Straw III. 1.90, 94, also Pope); *letters patent* (Hope C 168, many ex. in NED), *letter patents* does not seem to be found.

knights errant (Mal 134 knyȝtes erraunte | Butler H 117 | Scott Iv 181 | Mrs Browning A 236 | Ru C 180 with knights patient), *knight-errants* Farquhar B 323 | Di Do 31 | Doyle F 164, now the usual form. *Damsels-errant* nonce-word Tennyson 423

Courts-martial still frequent in books and newspapers; *court-martials* (in NED from 1660, Steele 1712, also for instance Steele, Face of Wat. 25), the ordinary form in conversation In the Daily News Sept. 14 '06 I noted *court-martials* in the leader, but *courts-martial* twice on p 7.

Weale publyques (†) More U 30.

Heirs-apparent Thack V 382; *heir apparents* Austen M 425

Attorneys-General Byron DJ 13 69, NED Examiner 1812, Murray: better *Attorney Generals* (Leigh Hunt) | *Governors General* Seeley E 251; NP 11 *Governor Generals* | *heirs general* Swift T 46 | *The States General* (= les États généraux) Macaulay B 208 | *Farmer Generals* Di T 1.167.

Lords Appealants Sh R2 IV 1 104 | *lords paramount* M'Carthy 2.43

Cousins germans † (Ch, Hall 1649), *cousins german* the prevalent form; *cousin germans* pretty common in 15th to 18th c, see NED, which has it also from Southey; see also Sh Wiv IV. 5.79 three Cozen-Jermans

Accounts current Ru U 139 | *prices current* Bennett W 2.129

femes covert NED from 1818, *femme covert* ib. from Butler Hud

brides-elect Wagner Manners 96

crown-imperials (a plant) Ward F 153.

genitive plurals in preference to *genitives plural* | Ridge B 199 please don't count the *first person singulars* in my letter *indicative presents*

Type handful.

2.42. A special class comprises compounds with *full*. The older construction in which the sb was inflected and *full* was added as an adjective (followed by *of*) has generally given way to the modern one, in which the whole group is apprehended as *one* name of measure. This is quite natural, as a person may have three *handfuls* of peas, though he has only two hands, and several *basketfuls* of fruit even if he possesses not a single basket himself. (German has *ganze händevoll*, while Danish says *hele handfulde*).

Examples of both constructions:

bag *bagsful* Mered T 102 | *bagfuls* NED from Kane 1856.

basket: AV Matth 14 20 twelue *baskets full* | *basketfuls* (NED) from Hall 1650) Ru F 81, Ru P 2.117, GE A 301, Ritchie M 126, Barrie M 195.

book: Ward E 414 I can give you *books-full* of them.

box: Thack S 119 whole *boxfuls* of pills

bucket: Conway C 187 *bucketsfull* of tea.

city: Wells T 22 *cityfuls* of people.

column: Page J 112 *columns-full* (in newspaper)

cup: Ru U 117 by handfuls and *cupfuls*

donkey: Thack N 313 two *donkeysful* of children

hand *handfuls* Butler Bees 1634.39, GE A 447, Hawth S 106 *etc*

mouth: *mouthfuls* Austen M 9, Morris EP 116

pail: Sh Tp II 2 20 by *pails-fuls*

pew: Bennett W 1.110 other *pew-fuls*

spoon: *spoonfuls* Byron DJ 2.158, Ridge L 294

thimble: Thack S 76 by *thimblefuls*

vial: *vialfuls* Ru P 1.335.

For compounds with *-worth* see 7.

Type break-down.

2.43. Substantives formed (without ending) from a verb-phrase consisting of verb and adverb (prep.) some-

times take the plural ending in the first and sometimes in the second element.

(*answer-back*: Ridge N 137 servants with their *answers back* and evenings out.)

break away: *breaks away*: Times in NED.

break down: Ellis Trans. Philol. Soc. '88.80 *breaks down*; more often *breakdowns*: Stedman Oxf. 121, Caine in First B 73, Zangwill G 16, Academy $^{15}/_{8}$ '96, Max Müller Cosmopolis '97.659.

cut off: London W 23 the *cut-offs* around which the sled had to go (Amr).

draw back: always *drawbacks*.

go between: always *go-betweens*.

go down: obsolete *go-downs* ('gulps', see NED).

hand out: Adie A 50 *hand-outs* (meaning?).

hang by: *hang-by's*, *hangbyes* RJo 1.46 and 73 (= *hangers-on*), obsolete.

hold up: Herrick M 228 (and common in U. S.) the *hold-ups*.

kick up: Fludyer 104 *kick-ups*

lean to: NED 1638 *lean-toos*

lock out. Review of R. Jan. '06.70 *locks-out*; *lock-outs* more common, thus Times '06, London C 21, NP often.

look-out: Masefield C 66 the *look-outs* (men on the look-out).

make up: GE Life 2 189 the Zouaves, with their wondrous *make-ups* as women, also NP '11.

(*sally out*: Defoe P 77 make *sallies out*).

set back. Wyatt, ed. of Cymb. 123 to mend . . slowly and with apparent *sets-back*; NP '09 the same *set-backs*, the same difficulties; also NP '11 and 12, Wells N 502.

set down: Austen P 17 and GE A 162 *set-downs* ('rebukes').

set off: Brontë P 134 foils . . . as *set-offs* for her own endowments.

set to: NP several *sets-to*; Amr NP '09 this world's hair-pulling *set-tos* ('fights').

shake down ('bad bed'): always *shake-downs* (Caine S 2.67, etc.) or *shakedowns*.

shake up: giving our ship several *shakes-up* into the wind (Brynildsen's Dict.).

stand fast: Mered E 215 those veteran old *stand/asts*.

start up: Beaumont 2.397 lest the wet Soke through your *startups* ('kind of boots').

stop over: *stop-overs* common U. S. ('breaks of railway journey').

take in *take-ins* and *take-ins* (NED).

take off: Mitford (NED) *take-offs*.

try-back: Boothby Dr Nic. 292 *try-backs*

try-down: Benson B 50 *try-downs*

turn out Steele Face of W 58 *turn-outs* | NP '94 and '10 *turnouts*.

turn over: an Englishman answered: "*turnovers*, I suppose, but one would avoid using it in the pl."

write-up Amr NP '12 newspaper *write-ups*.

2.44. In some of these compounds it is perhaps more natural to take the first element as containing the past participle than the common form (inf.) of the verb, thus in

cast-away: Sh R3 II 2 6 *castawayes* | Mrs. Browning A 177, Doyle St 164, etc. *castaways*.

run-away Sh As II. 2 21 *runawaies* | now frequently *runaways*

We have certainly the participle in *dug-outs* ('canoes' or 'rough dwellings').

grown-ups ('grown up people'), which has lately become common: Bo-Peep (a children's paper) '85 71, Kipling J 1.113, Douglas Green Shutters 59, Ridge G 179, N 182, Bookman Dec '05.107.

Type breakwater.

2.451. These compounds of a verb + its object always form the plural by adding *s* to the whole word, the two tendencies to inflect the substantival part and to

inflect the last part giving here the same result. Thus *breakfasts* . *breakstones* . *breakwaters* . *cure-alls* NP '11 . *cut-throats* Sh Macb III 4.16, etc. . *finde-faults* Sh H5 V 2.295 . *hold-alls* . *knotnothings* *pickpockets* . *pick-purses* Sh LL IV. 3.208 *scare-crows* . *tell-tales* (NED as early as 1548).

Hangman belongs to this class (one who hangs a man) though now it is apprehended as a man (subject) who hangs (S 64). The pl is *hangmen*, Sh Cor I. 5 7, II. 1 103

Note the difficulty when the final element in such compounds does not form its pl in *-s*, as seen in a letter from. Ingleby (ESt 12 150) I did coin two [words]|| i. e, in MS; but one I expunged before sending it off — that was *scare-child* — a nurse's bogie. It seems a good word, yet, when I came to test it, it failed Try the plural. who could bear the sound of *scare-childs*?

2.452. The latter part of a compound of this type may be a pl form, and yet the whole a sg substantive; thus *a sawbones* (e.g. Stevenson JHF 7) | *a 'scape-gallows* (Di N 544; cf however on *gallows*) | Hay B 139 the *shake-hands* was disposed of | [Herrick M 19 a cross-roads; generally *a cross-road*, where *cross* of course may be adj] Thus also *a sweepstakes* Beaconsf L 118 a most exciting sweepstakes | Holmes A 106 a slashing sweepstakes. The form *sweepstake*, which is also found, is originally incorrect.

I have no examples of plurals of such words.

2.46. I have two examples of plurals of words made up of vb + object + adverb, besides the familiar *forgetmenots*:

Shaw Church 3 *pick-me-ups* (also as a title of book 1902) | Wells A 238 the English bookshop, with its gaudy *reach-me-downs* of gilded and embossed cover.

Other phrase compounds.

2.47. Other substantives containing verb phrases: (*farewells*) | *ne'er-do-wells* NED 1845, also Hankin 1.132 | *fly-by-nights* | NP 98 political *fly-by-the-skies* [not in dicts] | Parker R 155 *merry-go-rounds* | Bennett W 2.265 *stay-at-*

homes | Hardy F 138 *pulls-all-together* | Swift J 89 one of these *odd-come-shortly's* I'll consider | ib. 141 One of these odd-come-shortlies | NP 04 suppressing *speakeasies* [U. S. unlicensed inns'] | Mered R 431 spite o' the *might 'a beens* | Kipl L 229 everlasting consideration of might-have-beens | Ridge G 227 an old lady who gave proud information that she belonged to the *has-beens* | Butler N 184 moral *try-your-strengths* | The "*Shall-Nots*" of the Bible [title of book 1887]

Note especially the double inflexion in Thack H 9 *what-d'ye-call-ems* [= pantaloons] | Di N 306 to break up old associations and what-do-you-callems of that kind | Thack V 201 I walked by the side of the what-dy'e-call-'em | Di D 305 Oh my stars and *what's-their-names* [= what's-his name] — Cf also Wells V 30 advanced notions, *Women who Did's* [from a well-known book by Grant Allen]

2.48. Not to be distinguished from these compounds are the plurals of whole utterances (sentences or parts of sentences) treated as quotation-words (cf. 8.2). Examples are not needed in great number:

Defoe R 2 43 the expense of ten thousand *said I's*, and *said he's*, and *he told me's*, and *I told him's*, and the like | GE A 202 the pupils had said their "Good-nights" | NP '12 if all the 'if onlys' could be realized | Hughes T 2 170 all the "*Thou shalt not's*" which the law wrote up | Byron DJ 13 91 Proud of his "*Hear him's!*" | Thack V 295 to talk of burning *IOU's* was child's play | GE A 77 hand-shakings and "*How are you's*" | Ward D 2 70 He could not remember that she had said any "*thank you's*" since she came | NP One "*I m sorry for you!*" weighs more than ten "*I told you so's!*" | Bennett B 16 "*I am afraid.*" "*I don't want any 'I'm afrands'.*"

Type afternoon.

2.49. Substantives consisting of a preposition and its object take *s* finally:

afternoons | *at-homes*, NED from 1745, Ward R 3.209 four "At homes" | Caine C 201 their "At Homes" | Shaw C 205 four at homes [thus spelt differently] | Carlyle R 2.330 these perpetual 'not-at-home's' of Irving | Hardy F 83 Not-at-homes were hardly naturalized in Weatherbury | NP '04, etc., the *out-of-works* | GE A 382 long *to-morrows* of activity | Carlyle S 39, etc., *overalls*.

Cf. also XIXth Cent. '90.458 Those '*nearly to nothings*' of which Sir Frederick Bramwell spoke recently.

A case analogous to those mentioned in 2.452, where the object was in the pl, is the sb *between-decks*; this is used as a pl by Dana 1840 (NED) these between decks were

Type looker-on

2.51. Words of this type (verbal noun in *-er* + adverb) always have *s* added to the first element:

Piers Pl A II. 47 (NED) *comers aboute* | Ascham S 72 breeders and *bringers vp* of the worthiest men | Mi H 1.106 the *standers by*, also Sh Cymb II 1 12, R3 I. 2.162, L 3.210, Spect 5 a | Sh Wint V. 1.29, Incertaine *lookers on* | Alls I. 1.132 *blowers vp* | ib. I 2 45 *goers backward* | Troil III. 2.208 all pittiful *goers betweene* | Beaumont 1.98 Not a bed Ladies? Y'are good *sitters vp* | Fielding T 2.45 *setters-on* | Fielding 3.451 his *whippers-in* | Lamb E 2.213 purposeless visitants, *droppers in*, as they are called | Hardy F 366 screened from the view of *passers along the road* | Galsworthy M 135 *goers out* | *hangers-on* | *passers-by*.

Type going-on.

2.52. The same is true of verbal nouns in *-ing* + adv.: Sh H5 IV. 1 260 what are thy *commings in?*; also GE M 1 131 | Meas III 2.154 his owne *bringings forth* | Swift T 54 greater *layings out* | Wordsw P 1.142 *goadings on* | Austen M 41 his usual *goings on*; also GE M 1.341, Caine C 8, etc. | Quincey 32 the daily *callings-over* | Carlyle H 14 all *rushings down* | Mrs Browning A 47 facile

settings up Of minnow gods | Di N 646 the faintings and the *comings-to* | Stevenson C 73 *carryings on* | Shaw C 18 *knockings down* ‖ Caine E 164 in regard to my poor doings, or *tryings-to-do*.

Type son-in-law.

2.53. In groups of sb + prep + sb generally the first sb takes the plural inflection:

sons-in-law | *mauls-of-honour* | *coats-of-arms* (sg coat-of-arms) | Thack V 312 all the *maids-of-all-work*) three *quarters of an hour* | *men-of-war* | McCarthy 2 471 *tenants-at-will*.

But here also we find some results of the tendency to treat such groups as inseparable units, taking *-s* finally. (Cf. Spanish *hidalgos* instead of the earlier *hijos de algo*, Portuguese *fidalgos*) This is particularly natural when the word is no more analyzed into its original components, e.g *slugabeds* (Mered E 24), where *a* originally stood for the prep. *on*. Other examples are.

will-o'-the wisps Doyle F 39, NP '93, Wells T 40, Jackson, Shaw 144, but Tennys 51 *wills-o'-the-wisp* | Thack V 54 the *cold-round-of-beefs* inside; but GE S 33 the *rounds of beef* | Stevenson V [p.?] so many *Joan-of-Arc's* | Brontë P 107 a march full of *Jack-o'-lanthorns* | Lowell 324a on *Fourth-of-Julys* | Parker R 207 "Stand off, *Jack-in-boxes!*" [two constables], but Butler Essays [p. ?] a couple of Jacks-in-the-box | Zangwill G 191 Men are *dog-in-the-mangers* [also dogs-in-the-manger].

Cat o' mountain (pl NED 1432 cattes of the mowntayne and 1842 (Lytton) *cats-a-mountain*) is often felt as a single word and spelt *catamountain*; pl 1650 *catamountaines*; the shorter form *catamount* always seems to be treated in this way; there are three quotations from 19th c. in NED for *catamounts*.

This is the rule in some dialects also for the *-in-law* combinations: *father-in-laws*, *daughter-in-laws*, Darlington, Folk Speech of South Cheshire 36.

A special case, in which both substantives may be inflected, is seen in Shaw J 43 hotels at which he spends his *Fridays-to-Tuesdays*

2.54. Sometimes the preposition is left out, and then *s* is added to the whole compound:

Hardy T 514 People marry *sister-laws* continually about Marlott | Hardy W 244 it was begun by my father and his, who were *brother-laws* [dialectal] | Shaw C 203 it was hard to spend *quarterhours* with him, cf Hardy W 231 this quarter-hour [cf. 12.9]

Type good-for-nothing.

2.55. A substantive made up of a adjective + prep. + subst. sometimes is inflected as a whole: *good-for-nothings* (Spencer Man v. State 18, Ridge G 81, etc.). Thus also Beaumont 4 364 one of your London *light o' loves* (= 'loose women'), while Du Maurier, Trilby 142, writes *lights o' love*, and Mrs. Browning A 260 those *light-of-love*.

Four-in-hand ('carriage with four horses driven by one person') has a final *-s* (Disraeli NED), Caine C 375 carriages, *four-in-hands* | Rev. of R Febr. '99 125 the Kaiser's greys are used mostly as "*four-in-hands*" But in Queen's London 127 The *fours-in-hand* assembled

2.56. When two words are connected by means of a foreign preposition, we have some hesitation between the natural English *auto-da-fés* and the foreign *autos-da-fe* (NED), it is usual to write pl *aides-de camp* (Thack. N 202, V. 351, Kingsley H 343, Caine E 123 etc), but the *s* is not pronounced, the gen pl is written *the aides-de-camp' quarters* in Thack. E 2.20. Goldsm 647 agreeable *tête à-têtes*.

Type coach-and-six.

2.57. Examples of plurals of words connected by means of *and*:

Doyle M 229 How many *one and sixpences* are necessary to make up fifteen pounds || Bennett A 86 I've no patience with *six-and-eight-pences* [i e. solicitors' fees] |

Bennett W 1.99 you'll want more of *seven-and-three-quarters* and eights [numbers of gloves] than anything || Thack Lect. (ed. Regel) 31 the sound of *coaches and six* | Ru P 2.34 the convenience of English *carriages and four* | Di (cit. Flugel, *look*) looking *post-chaises-and-six* at Dolly | Hankin 3 152 I don't want your *carriages and pair* || Ward D 2.250 All the tones of the street, its *white and greys* || Doyle M 13 the affair ended in universal *whisky-and-sodas* | Galsworthy P 3.84 two *whiskies and sodas* | Chesterton F 108 endless *brandies and sodas* | Zangwill G 363 *brandies-and-soda* | Philips L 82 keeping himself up with unlimited *brandies and soda* || Sh H4A IV. 2.22 I prest me none but such *tostes and butter* [= effeminate fellows].

Other compounds.

2.58. It is not easy to class the following examples of plurals of compounds

Di Do 116 three unknown *something elses* | Lowell 337 the American *everything elses* | ib 339 And so many *everythings-else* || Austen E 23 forming these schemes in the *in-betweens* || Egerton K 134 *none-so-prettys* || Di Do 53 in the dullest of *No Thoroughfares* | ib 136 backing out of no thoroughfares | Gissing G 215 her bandboxes, and her *what-nots* | *dry-as-dusts* (from Scott A)

Foreign plurals.

2.6. Many foreign words, especially Latin and Greek, keep their original (nominative) plurals, though in the more familiar words there is a strong tendency to form a regular English plural. In some cases the traditional pronunciation of Latin involves changes in the kernel of the word.

2.61. *-a* (rarely *-e* Greek) pl *-æ* (Lat.) · *agape -æ*, also *-ai*, rarely *-es* . *alga* [ælgə] *-æ* [ældʒɪ·] . *antenna -æ* (GE S 86) *-as* . *formula -æ* (Spencer A 1 448) and, much more frequently *-as* (Carlyle H 137, Bronte P 265, Thack N 314, Caine C 341, Gissing B 219, Shaw J 256, James

A 1 69, Gummere Ballads often, Sinclair IR 84, etc). *lacuna* **-æ** (Zangw G 203) **-as** . *larva* **-æ** (Darwin, Romanes, Kipl S 73). *minutiæ* [m(a)i'nju·ʃii] rare in the sg . *nebula* **-æ** *penumbra* **-æ** (Hardy F 309) . *stria* **-æ** (Ru S 1.386) . *tenebræ* (Beaconsf L 58) not used in sg . *verruca* **-æ** . *vvula* **-æ**, also **-as** (Shaw D *75) . *vertebra* **-æ** (Spencer A 1 400) *vesica* **-æ** [vi'saisi].—*Arena* and *idea* have only *as*. Thus also *subpœna* (in which **-a** is the Latin ablative **-ā**) and the Italian *sonata* **-as** (Congr. 229) and *vista* **-as**

Cornucopia is the recognized form (Scott A 2 30, etc) from a late Latin nom instead of *cornucopiæ* (**-æ** is the gen . sg), NED has the pl *cornucopias* 1670, *cornucopiæs* 1762

2.62. -us pl **-i** (Lat., pron. [-ai]): *anthropophagus* **-i** . *cactus* **-i** (Kipl J 43) **-uses** (Hardy F 4, Spencer A. 2.128) *cirrus* **-i** (Ru P 2 140, there also *cirrostrati*) . *colossus* **-i** (GE Mm 128, 176) **-uses**. *Columbus* Ritchie M 155 a thousand Columbuses or Columbi, whatever the plural may be, cross the ocean . *convolvolus* **-i** **-uses**, Matthew Arnold 274 uses *convolvoli* as pl *cumulus* **-i** (Phillpotts M 358). *focus* **-i** (Archer Am 66) **-uses** . *fungus* [fʌŋgəs] *fungi* [fʌndʒai fʌŋgai] (Hardy F 355, Holmes A 215, 287), **-uses** (Stevenson JHF 181) *genius* **-i** in the sense 'spirits' (Macaulay E 4.68, Archer Am 7) **-uses** 'men of genius' (Spectator 234 spelt *Genius's*, Zangw G 93) *hippocampus* **-i** (Bridges E 14) . *hippopotamus* **-i** (Poe 355, Haggard S 63) **-uses** . *humerus* **-i** (Ru U 4) . *incubus* **-i** (By DJ 5.90) *literatus* **-i** . *Magus* **-i** . *mythus* **-i** (Coleridge) **-uses** (Carlyle H 18), generally *myth, myths* . *narcissus* **-i** (Shelley 655, Zangwill Cosmop. 1897 620) **-uses**, also *narcissus* as pl (Galsworthy C 75) . *nucleus* **-i** . *octopus* **-i** (Review of R. March '06 255 the Octopus of Octopi); NED gives only *octopodes*, a pedantic form for which no quotation is found, and anglicized **-uses** (1884) . *polypus* **-i** (Tennys. 6) **-uses**, NED has also *polypodes* (1635) *radius* **-i**, rarely **-uses** *ranunculus* **-i** **-uses**. *sarcophagus* **-i** (Poe 348) **-uses** (Carlyle H 86) . *stimulus* **-i** (Ellis M 340, Spencer A 2 45, Kidd Soc Ev 8) *terminus* **-i** (Bennett W 2.126) **-uses** *tumulus* **-i** (Di Do 41).

The following words seem only to have *-uses* : *bolus* . *bonus* . *callus* (*-es* Holmes A 156, 326) . *chorus* (*-es* Stevenson M 91) . *circus crocus.*

It is only too natural that many people feel considerable difficulty in applying the Lat ending *-i* correctly; Palmer, Folk-Etymology, quotes *ignorami* (The Standard, 1880) and *omnibi.* Aldrich Stillw. 73 has "that Shakford is what I call a born *genei*" as vg.

2.63. ***-us*** pl ***-us*** (Lat.); in pronunciation a difference is sometimes made from the traditional pronunciation of Latin quantity, sg [-əs] pl [-ju s, -jus]: *apparatus -us -uses* (pl rare, the sg often used collectively) . *meatus.* Most of the words belonging to this class take *-uses*: *censuses* . *prospectuses sinuses.*

Words, in which *-us* is not the Lat. nominative ending, take *-es*: *rebuses omnibuses* Cf also Ruskin U 131 the plus quantities or,—if I may be allowed to coin an awkward plural—the *pluses* . the *minuses* (constantly used in schools)

2.64. ***-o*** pl ***-i*** (Italian, pron. [-i]): *banditto -i*, this latter form used as a sg Macaulay E 4 273 a banditti of bailiff's followers, also *bandit -s palazzo -i* (Allan W 142). *solo -i -os* (Congreve 229, Zangwill Cosmop '97.618) . *soprano -i -os* . *virtuoso -i -os.* Cf. also Shelley Pr 275 two *alto relievos*, Ru S 1 269 *bassi-relievi* (but 1 376 *bas-reliefs*) . Mrs Browning A 249, 256 has the pl *persiani*

-e pl ***-i*** (Italian, pron [-i], pl thus in sound = sg) *dilettante -i* . *gondoliere -i* (Shl 207), generally *gondolier* [gɔndə'liə] *-s lazzarone -i.*

2.651. ***-um -on*** (Greek) pl ***-a***: *aquarium -a* (Spencer A 1.473) *-ums* . *arcanum -a* (Swift T 62), rare in sg . *automaton -a* . *bacterium -a candelabrum -a* (Di Do 266, Ward E 112, Doyle S 6 14), cf below *compendium -a* (Huxley) *-ums* (Swift T 84) *criterion -a* . *datum -a*, cf. below . *desideratum -a* . *effluvium -a* . *encomium -a*, generally *-s* (Di N 443, Meredith H 43) *erratum -a* (Franklin 41, 51), cf below *lustrum -a -ums*, cf. 2 653 . *medium -a* (Mase-

field M 272) *-ums* (ib.). *maximum -a* (Ru U 89). *memorandum -a* (Di Do 185, Shaw D 53) *-ums* (Defoe R 2.35, P$_1$ 51, 101, Galsworthy C 270; now usual). *minimum -a* (Ru U 89). *pendulum -a* (rare) *-ums* (Stevenson D 256). *phenomenon -a*, rarely *-ons* (Di N 309). *ovum -a* (Defoe P 99) *serum -a* (Masefield M 222, 272). *symposium -a* (Wells V 138).

The following words seem to have only *s*-plurals: *chrysanthemum -s* (Phillpotts M 136) *decorum -s* (Goldsmith 621, Austen P 192; Fox 1.238 Wilh. Meister abounds with *indecorums*). *geranium -s* (Hardy F 4). *gymnasium -s lexicon -s magnum* (Hope C 78 champagne in magnums) *millennium -s*. *nostrum -s* (NP '11) *premium -s* (Spencer A 1.450).

2.652. Isolated plurals in *-a*: *genus* [dʒi·nəs] *genera* [dʒenərə], cf Egerton K 93 *subgenuses stamen* [steimən] *stamina* [stæminə], now usually *stamens*, while *stamina* has become a sg, cf below. *abdomen abdomina* (Wells T 27). *specimen specimina* (rare) *-mens* (frequent). *dogma dogmata* (Ru P 3.26), generally *dogmas*. *phantasma phantasmata* (Scott A 1.159). *thema themata* rare *vas* [væs] *vasa* [veisə].

2.653. These *a*-plurals are liable to be confused with the *a*-singulars, and new plurals in *-æ* are sometimes formed. Thus instead of the unfamiliar *animalculum* the word *animalcula* is used as a sg; pl *animalculæ* is pretty frequent (Norris O 634, Wells N 300, Page J 114, Review of R. Febr. '05 200). *apocrypha* pl *-as* is now the ordinary word. *bronchia* pl *-æ* by the side of *-a* as a pl *-a candelabra* sg (Merriman V 50, Caine P 24), pl *-as* (Scott Iv 76). *data* often sg in the sense 'information' (Krapp, Mod. Engl. 296; Ridge L 204 she discovered much data about the university). *errata* 'printer's error' pl *-as -aes* in 17th and 18th c; now in a different sense *an errata* 'a list of printers' errors'. *lustra* pl *-as observanda's* pl (Swift T 84) *phenomena -as* see NED *saturnalia* (Scott A 2 1 an universal saturnalia seems to be proclaimed). *stamina* now frequent as a sg in the sense 'power, vitality' *strata -as*.

2.66. *-es* pl *-es* (thus unchanged): *series . species,* rarely *specieses* (Butler H 25) . *superficies.*

-is pl *-es* (Lat.) "in careful speaking we distinguish the pl [pə'renþisi·z] from the sg [pə'renþisis], but in ordinary speech the *-es* is shortened to [-is] so that no distinction is made between sg and pl in the more familiar words." (Sweet NEG § 1008). *analysis analyses* (Kingsley H 333) . *axis axes . basis bases . crisis crises,* rarely *crisises* (Tennyson L 1.256) . *hypothesis -ses . ignis fatuus ignes fatui* (Byron 992) . *metamorphosis -ses . metropolis* probably only *-lises* (Slosson, Am. Univ. 443) . *nemesis nemeses* (Moulton, Sh as Artist 47) . *oasis oases pelvis pelves* (Ellis M 72) . *thesis theses*

2.67. Other learned plurals in *-es*:

abducens [æb'dju sənz] *abducentes* [æbdju'senti·z] *apex* [eipeks] *apices* [æpisi·z, eipisi z] . *aphis aphides* . *appendix appendices* (Shaw D *75) *-dixes*, the former especially in mathematics . *apsis apsides* [æp'saidi z] or more often ['æpsidiz] . *atlas* rare pl *atlantes* in architecture 'figures of supporting men', always *atlases* 'collections of maps' . *calyx calyces* [kælisi·z, keilisi z] . *chrysalis chrysalides* [kri'sælidi·z] *chrysalises* ['krisəlisi z] (Darwin B 109), also *chrysalid -ids* . *cicatrix* [si'keitriks, 'sikətriks] *cicatrices* [si'ke'trisi z] . *cyclops cyclopes* [sai'kloupi·z] *cyclopses*, also *cyclop -ps* . *ephemeris* [i'femərис] *ephemerides* [efi'meridi·z] . *helix* [hi·liks] *helices* [helisi·z] *helixes* . *ilex ilices* or, practically always, *ilexes* (Bridges E 74) *index indices* [indisi·z], now only in mathematics, and *indexes* ['indeksi·z] generally (Milton A 10). *matrix matrices* [mætrisi z] rarely [mə'traisi z] *orchis orchides orchises* (Ward E 159), also *orchid -ds* . *oxalis oxalides*?, *oxalises* (Ruskin in Collingwood 363) . *phalanx phalanges* [fæləndʒi·z] in anatomy, *phalanxes* generally . *rhinoceros rhinocerotes -roses -ros*, formerly also *-rontes, -rōs* = *-rons, -roes, -ro's, -ri* (NED, see also the highly characteristic quotation from Sir Charles Eliot in *Growth and Str.* p. 143 note) . *vortex vortices* (Mrs Browning A 38, GE M 54, Ru P 1.55).

Antipodes [æntɪpodɪˑz] properly is a pl only, but is sometimes used as a sg: Shelley Pr 285 she is the antipodes of enthusiasm. Formerly also pronounced [ˈæntipoudz], whence a sg *antipode* is still in use in the transferred sense as in Shelley. *Boanerges* also is a pl, which is often used as a sg with a new pl *boanerges(s)es* Inversely the sg *forceps* is sometimes used as a pl, Sterne 77 a pair of forceps, Kipl S 246 those forceps (not in NED). —*Naiad* besides the more popular pl *naiads* (Sh, etc.) has the learned form *naiades* (Spenser, Milton, Shelley)

2.68. *French plurals*: *adieu adieux* (GE M 204). *beau beaux* [bouz] thus phonetically with the English ending spelt beaus Spect 182 *flambeau -x portmanteau -s -x* (Gosse Father and Son 193) *tableau -s -x.*—*Sioux* is written the same in both numbers, in the sg it is pronounced [suˑ, sju], in the pl either the same or with [-z] Browning 1.600 writes *bals-paré*, not quite French —*Messieurs*, abbreviated *Messrs*, has no sg in English (cf 2.21 and 2.38), Milton Pr 308 writes contemptuously the *monsieurs* of Paris *Mounseer -s* once common

2.69. *Hebrew plurals in -im cherub cherubim*, also, and more naturally *cherubs*, sometimes a distinction is made. *-im* angels, *-s* images or models of a cherub; Sh has sg *cherub* and *cherubin*, pl only *cherubins*; Bacon pl *cherubim* and *cherubins*, Peele D 450 pl *cherubins*, Bunyan G 147 and Kipl S 26 pl *cherubims*. Sometimes *cherubim* is made a sg Spectator 170 | Di D 286 a conventional cherubim | Di N 562 a cherubim. *Seraph -im -s*; Peele D 486 seraphins, Bunyan G 147 Seraphims. Milton A 33 has the plural *Philistims*.

Number in Adjectives.

2.71. Some quantitative words are different when used with sg and pl substantives:

little bread: *few* loaves (but see 2.72)

less courage: *fewer* pins (cf Numbers quoted 2.74).

much money: *many* books (but see 2.73)
more leisure· *mo* reasons (see 2.74)
time *enough*: words *enow* (see 2.75).

2.72. In a different sense *little* can be freely used with a pl. *little children* (as a pl of *a little child*) = 'small children' referring to size, not to number as *few children* does, cf. the comparative *lesser the lesser lights* = 'the smaller lights', different from *less light* = 'a smaller quantity of light' See Morphology

2.73. The word *many*, which from a purely abstract logical point of view would seem to be exclusively plural, presents some peculiar features with relation to number.

(1) *Many* has from old Germanic times been frequently used with a singular subst , cf G *manches jahr*, *manch ein weib*, Dan *mangt (et) år*, *mangen en kvinde*. The use without the indefinite article (as in OE, Oros. 20 ðær bið swyðe *manig burh*, and ME, AR 64 *to moni mon*, *oðer to moni wummon*) became extinct in the 16 th c , and now we have only the combination with *an*, as already in AR 62 *to moni on ancre* and Ch 2266 ful *many another man* hath founden *many a womman* ful good Thus in Sh Merch II 7 67 *many a man his life hath sold*, and very frequently in PE. Formerly also in rare instances with a pl verb: Ch B 1932 Ful *many maide* bright in bour *Thay mourne* for him par amour | NED 1475 *Many a page Have* become men by mariage

Many one (Ch A 3153 and E 1989 with vb in pl, Caxton R 61, Latimer in Specimens III, 21.164) is obsolete except in Scotch Scott Iv 142 there is many one of them upon the amble.

But *many a one* is still used· Sh Cor V. 6 153 hee Hath widdowed and vnchilded *many a one* | Sh Cy V. 5.71 *many a bold one* ‖ Thack N 666 who has not looked on *many such a one*

(2) *Many* is used predicatively (only with inversion) with a sg subject·

many is the time I have told him

[With a pl subject Di Ch 23 Many's the kind things they say to me.]

On *a (great) many*, and *a few* see 4.97.

2.74. *Mo* (*moe*) originally was the adverb (OE *mā*, the Anan ending *-is* having disappeared), while *more* (OE *māra*) was the adjective. But the former form was often used with a gen pl, and thus in ME *mo* comes to be used as a pl, and *more* as a sg: AR 200 monie *mo hweolpes* | Ch C 6 No *children* hadde he *mo* in al his lyf | ib. C 94 Though ye han *children*, be it oon or *mo* (but in the sense 'greater' *more* could be used with pl as in Ch C 53) | Caxton R 7 many *mo tymes* | Malory, see Baldwin § 48 | More U 234 *lawes* whiche be in numbre *mo* than be able to be readde | ib. 239 *mo . cerymonies* | Sh Meas I. 3 48 *Moe reasons* for this action At our *more leysure* shall I render you | ib. III. 140 *moe* thousand *deaths* | ib. R3 IV. 4 199 and 504, IV. 5 14 | AV Numbers 33 54 To the *moe* ye shall giue the *more inheritance*, and to the fewer yee shall giue the lesse inheritance | ib Ps 139.18 they are *moe* in number then the sand. But about the year 1600 the distinction was already becoming obsolete; cf. Sh Ado II. 3 72 Sing no *more ditties*, sing no *moe*, Milton never uses the form *mo*, and apart from an occasional occurrence in poetry, *mo* has now completely disappeared.

2.75. The distinction between sg *enough* and pl *enow* (with the voiced sound on account of the ME plural ending *-e*) is expressly taught by Wallis 1653 p 65 *Inough* (singulare) sat multum, sonatur inuff; at *inough* (plurale) sat multa, sonatur enow, and by Strong 1699 p. 51 I had Content enough, an Pence enow to pay for what I did myself allow. The distinction is still retained in Sc dial, see Murray D 175 Aneuwch o' syller bryngs aneuw o' freinds, Ellis V 753 (Perth), EDD; but in other dialects *enow* is used indiscriminately for sg or pl (EDD) George Eliot seems to observe the distinction in her dialect dialogues, see for instance A 410 Methodists enow |

412 folks enow | 431 times enow, but 411 victual enough .. provide enough and to spare | M 1 35 there's fools enoo —an' rogues enoo.

Literary quotations in which the distinction is observed: Ml J 1094 Jewes enow | Straw I 1 99 men inow | Sh Mcb II. 3.7 napkins enow (Sh-lex has nine further quotations) | ib II. 3.11 treason enough | Butler Fem. Mon. 1634 (I slightly change the quasi-phonetic spelling) 36 hiv's enow | 37 big enough, stif enough | 48 hunni enough | Mi Lyc 114 anow of such as (pl) | Mi PL 2 504 hellish foes anow | Mi A 12 letters anow | Fielding T 1.71 sluts enow | Sterne 60 the dangers are enow | Scott A 1 140 beds enow | Scott Iv 346 enow of men | By 581 Have I not cares enow, and pangs enow

But pretty early we find *enow* used with sg words, thus Ch B 3958, E 1213 (in G 861 we have *ynogh* sg riming with *rogh* 'rough', OE *rūh* sg, but some MSS have wrongly *ynowe* · *rowe*) | Mi C ed. 1673 have I said anow? And 19th c poets simply use *enow* as a variant of *enough*, as Morris E 115 they were small enow | ib 116 hard enow (riming with [ou]-words, though the legitimate pronunciation is [au]) | Buchanan J 9 light enew (riming with *threw*).

On the other hand *enough* is used with pl substantives: Ml T 1335 garrisons enough | Straw II. 3 38 mouthes inough | Sh Meas V 1 350 bolts enough; thus also in the following places (not collected in the Sh lex): Ado III. 4.48, Wint IV. 4.579, Mcb IV 3.73, John IV. 3.138 Though Milton never uses *enough* with pl words, the usage becomes firmly established from the 17th c, and now *enough* is the only recognized form for both numbers.

2.76. In ME we have a few instances of French adjectives taking the (French) plural ending *s*; in Ch we have *places delitables*, *thinges espirituels* (Ten Brink § 243), *the goddes celestials* (HF 460), thus only when the adjective is placed after its substantive. In Malory 88 we have *the most valyaunts men* To French law language are due

heirs males (Bacon, now *heirs male*), *letters patents* and the other compounds mentioned 2.41, and finally *by these presents* (Ml F 544, Caine C 163, still in official use), where we should perhaps consider *presents* as a sb. On the Middle Scotch pl of adjectives in *-is*, see Murray Sc 57.

You.

2.81. The original inflexion of the second person pronoun was

singular: nominative *thou* — accusative *thee*
plural » *ye* — » *you*.

But though these forms still survive in poetry and are familiar to everyone through the Bible, their function has been greatly changed since ME times, both as regards their case value (cf. *Progress* ch VII and below) and as regards their numerical value, which is the only thing that concerns us here

2.82. In the first place, French politeness introduced in the ME period the use of the plural *ye, you* as a courteous form of addressing a single person Thus we get the inflexion:

singular *thou thee* or *ye you*
plural: *ye you*.

In the sg, however, the form *ye* was much less used than *you*. More U has often *you* (*yow*) and only rarely (26) *ye* in speaking to one person. The distinction between the two forms of addressing one person corresponded pretty nearly to that of the French *tu* and *vous*; but it was looser, as very frequently one person addressed the same other person now with *thou* and now with *you* (*ye*), according as the mood or the tone of the conversation changed ever so little. Thus in Malory 67 *ye* are a merueillous man; but I merueylle moche, of *thy* wordes | ib. 69 Sythen I haue made *yow* knygte *thow* must yeue me a gyfte . *thou* shalt promyse me by the feythe of *thy* body whan *thou* hast justed with the knyght, that ryght so *ye* shal come | ib. 94 Fair lady, why hav- *ye* broken my

promyse, for *thow* promysest me to mete me . . and I maye curse *the* that euer *ye* gaf me this swerd | ib. 132, etc | Sh H4A II. 3.99 Do *ye* not love me? Do *ye* not indeed? Well, do not then. For since *you* loue me not I will not loue my selfe Do *you* not loue me? Nay, tell me, if *thou* speak'st in iest or no | Goldsmith 663 Kate, art *thou* not ashamed to deceive *your* father so? | Fielding 3.478 I have a violent affection for *thee*, my dear Struddle, if *you* will follow my advice | Scott Iv 83 (arch) I trow *you* might as well have told his favourite boar of *thy* vigils

2.83. *Thou* and *thee* went out of use in standard speech in the 18th c. In dialects, however, the forms survived (Di N 781 uses *thee* in the pl in Yorkshire talk, see also Joseph Wright's EDG), and Friends (Quakers) kept or keep up the old forms in speech from religious reasons, using, however, as a rule, *thee* in both cases and in both numbers (and with the verb in the form of the 3d person) Carlyle in his letters very often uses *thou, thee* to his wife by the side of *you*, which probably was the only form he actually used in conversation.

2.84. While in poetry the form *you* is often avoided, in speech the form *ye* has practically disappeared, although still found in many dialects (Carlyle and his wife are mentioned as often using this form, see Fox 2.123, Ritchie M 163). Cf the interesting passage Benson D 219 "He discoursed agriculture and farming with tenants, to whom he always said *thank ye* instead of *thank you*, in order that they might feel quite at their ease" In the West of Ireland, according to an observation made by my colleague Holger Pedersen, one person is addressed as *you* (possessive *your*) and more than one as *ye* (possessive *yeer*) According to Joyce, Ir 88, the Irish use *you* as a sg and *ye* as a pl, both as a nominative and as an objective, but besides they have created new forms for the plural, such as *yous*, *yez*, *yiz* I find *yous* in Synge, Playboy 73 Is it mad *yous* are? The same form

is said to occur in children's language in England; it is found also in vg American: Herrick M 11 I can make it hot for some of *youse* | Ade A 120 Won't one o' *youse* pay me?

2.85. Apart from these dialectal usages and from grammars, in which *ye* is had recourse to in order to render the separate plural forms of other languages, Latin *vos*, German *Ihr*, etc, we have the following forms in present-day English:

	everyday	poetical
nom sg	*you*	*thou*
acc. sg	*you*	*thee*
nom. pl	*you*	*ye*
acc. pl	*you*	*ye*

2.86. In most cases no inconvenience is felt from the identity of the two numbers. A logical mind like John Stuart Mill, however, feels the ambiguity, as is seen in two letters, in Fox 2.275 You will certainly receive in due time what has been from the first destined for you. I mean you in the plural number, for I never separate you in fact or in thought [*you* = the Fox family] | ib. 2.278 thanks for the votes which your (plural) persevering kindness has got for the little girl.

In the 'emphatic' pronouns with *self* the distinction is naturally made between *yourself* (to one person) and *yourselves* (to more than one): *help yourself* (*yourselves*) | *you should do it yourself* (*yourselves*). Sometimes *yourselves* may be used instead of *you* simply to avoid ambiguity with regard to number: Argyll in Tennyson L 2.218 How are you standing this tropical heat, and Mrs. Tennyson? [i. e. and how is she standing it] Let us have a good account of *yourselves*.

2.87. In ordinary speech, the pl is often expressed by means of the addition of some pl word like *people, fellows, chaps, boys, girls, children* — an addition which may be compared with the addition of some restrictive word to *we* (4.54). Examples (I have only recent ones, except

the first): Fielding T 3.21 Sure *you People* that keep Inns imagine your Betters are like yourselves | Di Do 172 I don't know what it is *you people* see in Joe | Norris Oct 95 that will interest *you people*.

Herrick M 323 if *you folks* were honest | ib. 339 if *you folks* are so obstinate.

Stevenson T 230 when *you fellows* are in court for piracy, I'll save you all I can | Hope. Ch 8 look here, *you fellows* | Wilde W 37 Excuse me, *you fellows* | Haggard S 95 Have *you fellows* got your revolvers? Because, if so, you had better see that they are loaded | Herrick M 323 any of *you fellows*

Stevenson T 231 any of *you gentlemen* | id. Dy 264 if any of *you gentry* lose your money | Haggard S [p. ?] if *both you gentlemen* are going you will want somebody to look after you | Hope M 83 What are *you gentlemen* up to? | Kipl S 66 *you chaps* had better clear out.

It will be apparent from some of the examples that the addition is not required in repetitions.

2.88. In some dialects (E. Anglia) *you together* is used as a kind of pl of *you* (NED, *together* 2e), and in the southern states of North America *you all* (stressed [ˈjuˑɔˑl]) is very frequently said in addressing more than one, in such a way that *all* is no longer felt in its original sense (*you all* is thus different from *all of you*). Thus a mother will say to her children "If you all don't make less noise, I'll send you to bed" and a teacher to his pupils: "You all haven't studied this lesson," a customer to a clerk. "Do you all [you men who compose the firm, or you fellows behind the counter] keep fresh eggs here?" See an interesting article by C Alphonso Smith, in "Uncle Remus's Magazine," July 1907, who repudiates the idea prevalent in the northern states that this *you all* is used where only one person is implied. (The last example shows that one person may be addressed, if the remark refers to other people beside himself). Mr. Smith mentions the genitive *you all's* or *yo all's*; and

connects the idiom with Elizabethan and other English quotations, in which *you all* is used without the idea of *all* being emphatic Payne gives as the Alabama form *yall* (from *ye all*). Cf also London F 92 where has *you-all* ben this summer? Never you mind where we-all's ben | ib 94 I tell *you-alls*

As for *you uns,* see 10.66.

2.89. While the verb is ordinarily put in the pl form with *you* (you are, go, etc) even when a single person is meant, a differentiation was formerly made between *you was* sg (in addressing one person) and *you were* pl (in addressing more than one), on the analogy of *he was, they were* My oldest example of *you was* is from Bunyan G 120, it is found once in Pope (Concordance VII) and occasionally in Swift, but is very frequent in other 18th c writers (Defoe G 49, 51, Fielding 3.533, 564, 607, Sheridan, Goldsmith, etc ; some quotations Storm EPh 745) Boswell in the second edition of his Life of Dr Johnson corrected his own *you was* into *you were* Miss Austen makes a half-educated lady say *you was* (S 134, 149, 237); Scott's Antiquary once indulges in the same form (2 16), though usually saying *you were.* Byron DJ 4 88 has *You was not* Since that time it is distinctly vulgar, and is found frequently in novels, etc , to characterize the speech of low class people: Di Do 33, 45, Thack N 53 (but H 63 in the mouth of a person who does not otherwise speak vulgarly), GE S 37, 124, Barrie T 143, Henley B 37, Ridge G 211, L 80, 90, S 7, Jerome T 8, Wells T 30. Shaw C 24, 192, 2.94, Hankin 3.49, Ade A 54, 133 Cf especially Ridge G 169 you've grown a bit taller than what *you was* when *you were* 'ere | Ridge L 181 I like you best as *you was* "*Were,*" suggested Lucas, "*were.*" "As *you were,* then." Probably the distinction between a sg *you was* and a pl *you were* is not kept up in vulgar PE, which has also *was* after *we* and *they* (this vg pl *was* is found as early as Bunyan G 105, 106, 109, 114).

Chapter III.
The Unchanged Plural.

3.11. In a great many substantives the pl is either always or in certain combinations identical in form with the sg. Some of these belong to the morphological part of grammar and will be treated there, thus the ElE plurals *sense*, *corpse*, *voice*, *princess*, *hose*, *merchandize*, etc., further the colloquial identification of *gentleman* and *gentlemen* [dʒentlmən]. On *species* etc see here 2.66; on *you* 2.8. But in this chapter we shall deal with such unchanged plurals as have syntactical importance, very frequently we have doublets like *fish* and *fishes*, *dozen* and *dozens*, but on the whole there is a good deal of uncertainty in the use of the forms

3.12. This unchanged plural is found especially in words denoting various animals and in names of measures of various kinds. It is a complicated phenomenon, the sources of which are

(1) the OE pl forms without any *s* This was found in neuters, which had either no ending (*swine* OE *swīn*, *deer* OE *dēor*, *sheep* OE *scēap*, *horse* OE *hors*, *year* OE *gēar*, *pound* OE *pūnd*) or the ending *-u* (*head* OE pl *heafdu*, *hundred* OE pl *hundredu*), rarely in masculines and feminines (*month* in *twelvemonth*, OE pl *mōnaþ*, *night* in *sevennight*, *fortnight*, OE pl *niht*, *score* late OE pl *score* from ON).

(2) the OE gen pl in *-a*; this was used after the higher numerals (OE *twentig fōta* twenty foot), and with adjectives denoting measure (OE *eorþwall eahta fōta brād* | *twegea mīla hēah* | *þrittiges mīla lang*) After the disappearance of the weak vowel, which in ME had become *-e*, the form would be identical with the singular It should be noted that the words belonging to the class we are here considering, especially names of measures, etc, are used more often with numerals than most other substantives

(3) the adjunct use of the *s*-less form, as in *a twelve stone man*, *a five-pound note*, etc, see 7 1. This is historically to a great extend a kind of subdivision of (2), in so far as the old genitive plural enters into these combinations.

(4) the use of the sg when the word may be considered as a mass-word (cf. below 5 2). *To eat fish* would be said in contrast to *flesh* (*meat, lamb*, etc.), *snipe* in *he shoots snipe* would be comparable to *game*, etc. Further the use of these forms with a numerical adjective (*many fish, twenty snipe*) would not be very different from the similar use with other singular forms which is found with collectives (*many people, twenty clergy*, see 4.8)

3.13. It is not sufficient to take only the first of these explanations (as Sweet does, NEG § 994, 1966): the analogy of the old *s*-less plurals could not have extended so far without being assisted by the other motives to use the same form for both numbers Why should this analogy be so powerful, if we see, on the other hand, the old *s*-less plurals disappear from neuters that do not belong to the categories here dealt with? (Chaucer: *bones*, *londes*, *wordes, shippes*, *knees*, etc.) Number (2) makes us understand why the *s*-less form is used so often after numerals, number (4) why it is often used when the animals, etc., are viewed more or less like a mass, while the *s*-form is used as an 'individual' plural; and the cooperation of all four helps us to understand the essentially vague character of the phenomenon, which in no period has had quite fixed limits

3.14. It must be noted that a closely similar use of original sg forms is found in German (e g *zwei fuss, drei mark, 400 mann*, see Wilmanns, *Deutsche Grammatik* III, p. 450 ff, and the literature there quoted) and in Scandinavian (e g. *to fod, tre mark, 400 mand*; *fisk, sten*; the explanation in Falk and Torp, *Dansk-norskens syntax* p 59 is not quite satisfactory). It should also be remembered that some languages (e.g Magyar) have the

rule that after numerals the indication of plural is omitted in the noun as being superfluous

3.15. In the following lists the letter O added to a substantive indicates that it belonged in OE to one of the classes that had no *s* in the nom. pl.

I take first names of animals, subdivided not after the fashion of scientific zoology, but according to a more popular classification into animals living on the ground, in the air, or in the water, then names of measures of various kind, and finally words belonging to neither of these classes

I have purposely left the whole of this chapter unaltered as I wrote it in 1910, in spite of the full and very able treatment of the subject found in Professor Eilert Ekwall's book *On the Origin and History of the Unchanged Plural in English* (Lund 1912). Professor Ekwall has very diligently gone through a great variety of sources not utilized by me, books of travel and of natural history, etc, and thus has been able to collect many more examples than I can offer, and also in many cases to assign a comparatively early date to the unchanged plurals

Animals.

3.21. With regard to animals we have the curious restriction that — apart, of course, from the OE plurals *swine* and *sheep* — the unchanged pl is "confined to the names of wild animals" and "used only when the animals are hunted because of their usefulness to man, or are taken in considerable numbers, but not when they are killed only in self-defence or as vermin" (Sweet, NEGr § 1967f) Hence, according to Sweet, *fowls* = poultry, but *to shot wildfowl*, "*duck* in *to shoot duck* would imply that they were wild ducks". This, however, is stated too absolutely (cf some of the examples below) and indicates a tendency rather than a strict rule. It should also be observed that it is not quite correct to speak here of "collective singulars", not even if we use the word *collective* loosely (as is frequently done) so as to include 'mass-words' like *iron, powder* (4.8 and 5.2). In

five snipe or *a few antelope* (or *twenty sail*, Sweet § 1970), we have neither a "collective" word nor a "singular", but a real (individualizing) plural, though the form be identical with the singular, exactly as (to take an example from another sphere) *cut* in "I cut my finger yesterday" is in the past tense though the form is identical with the present

3.22. The starting-point may have been the sg of mass. This genuine singular is seen in the following quotations (I italicize the words that show the word to be taken as sg).

Ch Parl 337 water-foul sat lowest in the dale, And *foul* that *liveth* by seed sat on the grene | ib. 603 | Caxton R 49 wododekkis [wooddekkis] and *moche* other wilde *fowle* | Defoe R 23 he commanded that as soon as I had got some *fish* I should bring *it* home | ib 98 I frequently caught *fish* enough, as *much* as I car'd to eat, all which I dry'd in the sun, and eat them dry. But the last sentence shows the transition to the plural construction, found ib 24 when I had *fish* on my hook, I would not pull *them* up

3.23. *Deer* (O) now both as sg and as pl, thus also *reindeer* Longfellow 552 I own six hundred reindeer, with *sheep* and *swine* beside Dr. Murray once told me that he had often heard *deers.*

Sheep (O) now both sg and pl, *sheeps* is found once in Sh LL II. 219 (pun with *ships*)

Horse (O) see 3 71

Swine (O), formerly used in the sg, e g Sh Ven 616 | LL IV 291 | Mi Co 53 a groveling swine Now this is rare and literary. Ruskin Sel 2 196 a jewel of gold in a swine's snout (from Proverbs 11 22) | Browning 1 428 like a fresh-singed swine. *Swine* is now used as a (collective) plural; throw pearls before swine | keep swine, etc , the sg being *hog* or *pig*, after numerals, too, these words are used: *these three pigs*, not *these three swine.* But as a term of abuse *swine* is still used as a sg. B Jonson

3.80 Forbear, foul ravisher! libidinous swine | Doyle M 32 You swine you | Kipling S 56 that little swine Manders minor | Vachell H 161 B. was a swine And in this sense a pl *swines* is even sometimes found (quotation in Brynildsen's Dict.)

3.24. "While this usage is freely extended to unfamiliar foreign animals, as in *a few antelope(s)*, *herds of buffalo(es) and giraffe*, *to hunt pig* (implying wild boars), it is never used with such words as *lion*, *wolf*, *badger*, *weasel*; but it is admissible with *bear*, because this animal is hunted for its flesh". (Sweet, NEGr § 1969).

Examples: Doyle S 1 171 a herd of *buffalo* | Kipl M 192 between the heads of *sambhur*, *nilghai*, *markhor* | Kipl J 2 94 let the deer and the pig and the *nilghai* look to it | ib 2 98 drove upon drove of *buck* fled | ib 2 216ff *dhole* and *dholes* | NP 06 The gift by the Government of Nepal to the Prince of Wales consists of two *nilgai*, . three *sambhar*, two *ogrial*, . three *bhurrel*, two *thar*, . . | London W 48 *moose* (pl) | Wells T 22 a line of dark bulks—wild *hog* perhaps | Morris Austral E 231 *kangaroo* pl by the side of *-s* | NP '11 a herd of five *giraffe*

It is strange to find *mouse*: Masefield E 59 little baskets full of mouse

3.31. Examples of *fowl*, which is nowadays much rarer than *fowls*

More U 158 all maner of vn-footed beastes and wilde foule that be mans meate | AV Gen 1.26 let them haue dominion ouer the fish of the sea, and ouer the foule of the aire, and ouer the cattell | Sh Cy I 4.97 strange fowle light vpon neighbouring ponds | Bacon A 36.10 lakes, wherof we have use for the fish and fowle | Johnson R 113 as vultures descend upon domestic fowl | Lamb E 1 168 those Virgilian fowl

Examples of *fowls*·

Caxton R 54 ther were many fowles and byrdes also | More U 294 fetheres of fowles | Sh Err II 1.18 The beasts, the fishes, and the winged fowles | ib. II 1 23 of

more preheminence then fish and fowles | ib. III. 1.49 Ay, when fowles haue no feathers, and fish haue no fins | Defoe R 61 abundance of fowls | Johnson R 51 the heavier domestic fowls | Thack N 407 carving roast fowls | GE A 7 some speckled fowls | Browning 1 411[a] like fowls in a farm-yard

3.32. Compounds of *fowl* now have only the form without *-s*, except *peafowl(s)*; formerly *-fowls* was also used:

Defoe R 214 several tame *sea-fowls* | Scott A 1.110 unnumbered *sea-fowl* | Hawth S 197 these small sea-fowl | Arnold Poems I. 149 where in and out the screaming sea-fowl fly | ib. 189 where seafowl scream | Buley Australian Life 14 Flocks of wild swan and ducks feed in it undisturbed, and even shyer *water fowl* | Merriman S 241 the dabchicks and waterfowl did not cease their chatter | Kipl J 2 180 snares for *wild-fowl* | Stevenson M 5 *moorfowl*.

3.33. Other names of birds:

Black Ph 368 There are *plover* calling and whirling over the marshy levels. There are *black cock* and *grey hen* dusting themselves in the road . a brace of *wild duck* go swiftly past | Caine P 27 an island inhabited by ten thousand *eider duck* | Phillpotts M 28 two *snipe* | ib 261 a brace of golden *plover* | Haggard S 115 Geese, cranes, ducks, *teal*, *coot*, *snipe*, and *plover* swarmed all around us | ib. 116 hundreds of *snipe* | London A 89 to shoot *wild duck* and wild pigeons for the table

3.34. From the very rich collection of quotations given by Sattler, ESt 12.376, I extract the following list of the plural forms there found: the addition of (*s*) as in *partridge(s)* means that both *partridge* and *partridges* occur; if no (*s*) is added, Sattler has only one form: *black-cock blue-wings . bustard . capercailzie coot . cranes curlew(s) dikkop duck(s) . dunlins . flamingoes . floriken francolin .* (wild) *goose*, and *geese . grouse . heron . koran lapwings larks . mallards . partridge(s) peacock* and *peafowl . pelicans . petrel .*

pheasant(s) . pigeons . plover(s) . prairie-chicken . ptarmigan . quail(s) . ruff . sandlarks . skylark . snipe(s) . spoonbills . swans . teal(s) . tern . turkey(s) . waterhens . widgeon(s) wildfowl . woodcock(s).

3.41. With regard to *fish*, a distinction is sometimes made between *fish* 'collectively' and *fishes* individually, as seen in the proverbs: "There are as good fish in the sea as ever come out of it" (found for instance in Zangwill G 197) and "Fishes are cast away that are cast into dry ponds". But the distinction is not made by every one. (For examples, see also sub *fowl.*)

Examples of *fish*:

Swift J 57 I have other fish to fry | Franklin 43 when the fish were opened, I saw smaller fish taken out of their stomachs | Shelley 138 The fish were poisoned in the streams | Ru T & T 120 the natural history of sea fish and sea birds | Hughes T 23 they had caught three or four coarse fish | Holmes A 311 Memory is a net; one finds it full of fish when he takes it from the brook | Mered E 203 men are queer fish.

Examples of *fishes*:

AV Matth 16.37 seuen loaues and a few little fishes | Wordsw P 4 261 weeds, fishes, flowers | Hallam (quoted Sattler) the greater fishes swallowing up the lesser.

It must be noted that *fish* from F. *fiche* 'piece of bone to keep account in games' has been by popular etymology attached to the zoological fish ("sometimes made in the form of a fish") and therefore has the pl *fish* besides *fishes*: Austen P 107 she talked incessantly of lottery tickets, of the fish she had lost and the fish she had won.

3.42. Compounds of *fish*:

Di D 29 her brother dealt in lobsters, crabs and *crawfish* | Di X 38 the very *gold and silver fish*, though members of a dull race | Norris O 403 watching the *goldfish* | ib 404 Hilma looked at the *goldfishes* | ib 407 a globe of goldfish | Di D 96 the *shellfish* (pl) | Tenn L 1 253

two *starfish* | Di D 35 some stranded starfish | Norris S 105 At long intervals *flying-fish* skittered over the water.

3.43. Other kinds of "fishes":

Sh H4A II 4.395 as cheape as stinking *mackrell* | Sh Lr III 6 33 two white *herring* | Spect 166 how the *perch* bite | Lamb E 1.24 [we were] wanton like young *dace* in the streams | Thack N 686 the negotiation about the three *mackerel* | Holmes A 45 Mary's lake, full of flashing *pickerel* | Phillpotts M 299 a few *salmon* | Kipl J 2 175 three big *seal* | Ru F 19 a dozen of the fattest *trout* I ever saw | Phillpotts M 66 dozens of good *trout* | Norris S 105 *Turtle* were everywhere | ib. 119 The *shark* were plentiful certain of these shark [here they are mentioned as something fished for, but p 158, where they are spoken of as something to fear, we find The sharks!] | ib 138 They fish for *shrimp*.

3.44. From Sattler's article (ESt 12 377 ff.) I subjoin a list of the forms found by him (as above 3.34): *allice anchovies barbel(s) bass bleak(s) bloaters bream . brill . burbot . carp(s) . char cheven chub . clams cockles . cod . colefish . congers conger-eel(s) crabs crayfish . cuddies dabs . dace . dogfish dorces dories eels escallops fire-flaws flat-fish flounders gobies . grayling . green grigs grilse god fish(es) . gudgeon(s) gurnards* or *gurnets . haddock(s) hake halibut(s) . herring(s) . homelings . humber . jack kippers lampreys . latchets . ling . lobsters lumps lythe . mackerel menhaden minnow(s) . mullet . murrel . mussels . parr . perch(es) periwinkles pike pilchards . plaice . poggies . popes porgies pouting . redherrings rock . rock coddling(s) . rokers . ruffs . ruft saithe salmon(s)* only once with *s*, very often without . *sardines . scer . shad(s) . shark(s) . shrimps . skate . smeer-dabs . smelts . smolts soles . sprats . squid . sticklebacks . sturgeon . sythe tench thornbacks . trout(s) . turbot(s) turtle . vendace weaver(s) . whales . whelks . whitebait . whiting . whitches . willis.*

3.45. When different species (or subspecies, varieties) of birds or fishes are meant, the *s*-plural is em-

ployed there are said to be a dozen different *salmons* in Norway | the *plovers* of North America.

Words indicating number.

3.51. Names indicating number, from *pair* to *million*, are often used in the pl without *-s*, but only after numerals (cf Sattler ESt 16 42)

Pair: the *s*-plural seems to be gaining ground Dr Craigie once wrote to me "*Six pairs of gloves* is the only expression among educated speakers The other [*pair*] is distinctly provincial, though it would not excite attention if anyone chose to use it; to some it would probably suggest commercial language", and similarly another correspondent says "In ordinary language *six pairs* is more usual, we expect to hear *six pair* from a shop assistant". But the reverse opinion was expressed by Professor Keane, who wrote to me "we say *six pair*, but the trade always *six pairs*, both are right" Quotations for both forms show *pairs* in most recent writers

Ch Parl 238 of doves . many a hundred *paire* | Sh Gent II 4 95 Loue hath twenty *paire* of eyes | Swift T 121 two *pair* of compasses | Defoe R 228 three or four *pair* of shoes | Gibbon M 38 so many *pair* of wings | By DJ 4.110 few *pair* | Thack N 259 two *pair* of eyes | Dr X 28 three or four and twenty *pair* of partners | Dr D 168 a great many coats and *pairs* of trousers | Dr Do 392 two *pairs* of women's eyes | Kipl L 129 the two *pairs* of shoulders | Ridge G 53 a dozen *pairs* six and three-quarters [= pairs of gloves] | Wells T 69 two *pairs* of white flannel trousers | Wells V 148 a dozen *pairs* of stockings | Zangwill G 256 He bought her six *pairs* of tan kid | ib 303 three more *pairs* of gloves | Hewlett Q 72 half a dozen *pairs* of eyes | Norris P 152 gloves . . . how many *pairs* | ib 156 nine *pair*.

Couple: Malory 65 the questyng of XXX *coupyl* houndes | Austen P 406 three *couple* of ducks just fit to be killed | Austen S 170 Lady M had given a small dance

of eight or nine *couple* (thus extremely frequent in that writer) | Thack N 264 two *couple* of waltzers | 1875 (NED) The Lancers must be danced by four *couples.*

Brace: Austen M 159 [pheasants] we brought home six *brace* between us | Kingsley H 269 four or five *brace* of greyhounds Never *braces* in this sense.

Yoke: Ml J 407 two hundred *yoake* Of labouring oxen | AV Luke 14 19 fiue *yoke* of oxen (in Twentieth Cent Transl. five pairs of bullocks) | Kipl J 1 235 to put all twenty *yoke* of us to the big gun. Never *yokes* in this sense

Leash (a set of three): 1792 (NED) ninety-nine *leash* of languages

Warp (dial. 'a set of four') quotations for the unchanged pl from Scott and others in EDD.

3.52. *Dozen* (NED treats the pl *dozen* as if it were quite recent; the only examples are from 1835 and 1839):

Greene F 5 8 four or five *dozen* geese | Ml J 1904 fifty *dozen* | Sh Hml III. 2 167 thirtie *dozen* moones | Sh H4B V 1.71 foure *dozen* of such bearded hermites staues, as Master Shallow | Defoe R 224 about two *dozen* of my small loaves | ib. 158 three *dozen* of shirts | Swift J 83 I made two or three *dozen* of bows | Sterne 84 ten *dozen* of hornets | By DJ 5.152 four *dozen* sons | Thack N 88 one of two dozen purchased . . | Stevenson D 164 she presented him with a couple of *dozen* of wine | Ru P 2.120 two *dozen* of stone houses

Score: Malory 85 with a iii *score* horses | Ml J 94 *threescore* camels | Greene F 11.83 these *threescore* days | Sh Cy III. 2.69 How many *score* of miles | AV Ps 90.10 The dayes of our yeres are *threescore* yeeres and ten, and if by reason of strength they be *fourescore* yeeres . . | Defoe R 100 *threescore* eggs | Carlyle S 83 striplings of *threescore*-and-ten | Thack S 126 with who knows how many *score* more | Parker R 303 a few *score* of books | Ward E 147 a few *score* of heads | Hope R 245.

Quire and *ream* generally have *s*.

Gross (twelve dozen) examples (five g., two g., a few gross) in ESt 16.50. The pl *grosses*, which is not mentioned in grammars and dictionaries, is found Dickens D 3 some *grosses* of prophetic pins.

3.53. *Hundred* (O): two hundred times | Bennett W 2.60 a couple of hundred [= . . . hundred pounds sterling].

Thousand (O): More U 219 manye *thousande* of copyes | Sh Merch III. 2.301 six *thousand* | Thack P 3.367 with a couple of *thousand* a-year. Very rarely as in Sh Cymb I. 4.138 ten *thousands* duckets

Million: Carlyle S 182 in two hours . . in two *million* | Di Do 407 twenty *million* times | Stacpoole, Cottage 19 millions do not confer power . . . but a man of genius, with seven *million* in cash and credit . . . | Wells TM 139 thirty *million* years.

Billion.

File (military), NED Wellington 1810: 59 file; generally *files.*

3.54. With these words must be classed a few others, which mean units:

Head (O; examples in NED from 1513 on): Darwin B 109 I killed seventy-five *head* of game | Harraden D 104 he had worked his herd up to about four thousand *head* | Caine P 30 five thousand *head* of sheep | NP 300 *head* of asparagus

Poll (= head) †, NED ex from 1494—1601 Sh All IV 3 190 The muster file amounts not to fifteene thousand pole

Stand of arms = 'a musket or rifle with its usual appendages, as a bayonet, cartridge-box': 100 stand of arms | Macaulay: Fifty stand of colours

Cf possibly also *pile* in Sh All IV 5.103, and *tire* 'row, rank', see NED 1569, 1625, 1632, 1686

3.55. If these substantives are used without any numeral, the ordinary pl is employed: *dozens* (*hundreds, thousands*) *of times* | *the sheep died by scores* | NP *wealth is*

reckoned by heads of cattle, etc After the indefinite numerical adjectives *many, few,* both forms are found. Cf also 5.11

Measures of time.

3.61. *Year* (O), the pl *years* is at least as old as Ch (B 463 yeres and dayes, but 499 thre yeer and more), Mal *yere* and *yeres* after numerals, in other cases *yeres*, Sh *years* more often than *year*, which is found 'particularly in the language of low persons' (Sh-lex.), both forms together in Meas II 1 274 (Elbow) Seuen yeere, and a halfe sir. (Escalus) . . you say seauen yeares together | Defoe R 46 eight year | Di N 446 (vg) Four-and-forty year | Mered R 415 (vg) twelve year In educated speech now always *years*

As for the use in *four-year-old*, etc , see 7 15.

Month (O), now always pl *months*, except in *a twelvemonth* (5 172). In OE both plurals are seen in Chron 871, where MS A has *ymb* ii *monaþ*, and MS E: *ymb twægen monðas*

Night (O), now always pl *nights*, except in *fortnight* and the obsolete *sennight* (*sevennight*), which are new singulars (5 172). Malory 143 has *a* vij *nyghte*, but 137 *these thre nyghtes.*

Week and *hour* seem vulgarly to have also plurals without *s* GE A 241 a five week | Shaw 2 128 a couple-o-hour.

Measures of length

3.62. *Foot* (Ch, see MP 3 420, I 6, 8, 9, Fame 1335)· More U 130 twenty *fote* brode | Ml F 221 within fortie *foote* of the place | Sh John IV 2 100 three *foot* of it | Bacon A 18 26 not past fourty *foote* from the ground | Defoe K 12 there was four *foot* water in the hold | Fielding T 3.144 one that is six *foot* under ground | By DJ 7 37 six *foot* high | Austen M 90 he was not five *foot* nine· I should not wonder if he was not more than five *foot*

eight | Di D 118 he was five *foot* nine and a half | Jerome T 7 the figure rose to its full height of five *foot* one.— On *foot* in a different sense see 3 7

Fathom (cf Ch MP 3 422, Ros 1393) Sh As IV. 1.210 how many *fathome* deep I am in loue | Sh Alls IV. 1 63 How deepe? Thirty *fadome* | Defoe R 149 forty five *fathom* | Scott A 1 74 to drink healths five *fathom* deep | Shaw P 160 fifty *fathom* | Haggard S 63 within ten or a dozen *fathoms* of the boat | London A 197 eleven *fadom*.

Mile (cf Ch Fame 1979, G 555 fyve *myle*, but G 561 *miles* three). Caxton R 17 wel a ij or iij *myle*; thus also 85 | Malory 49 x *myle* oute of London; thus also 65, 95, 125, etc | More U 252 500 *myles* | Sh *mile* pl 6 times, *miles* oftener | Sh R3 IV. 4 461 so many *mile* (Fol. *miles*) | Beaum & Fl 1 287 (Merm) A hundred *mile* a day is nothing with me | Defoe R 167 about three *mile* | ib 214 about two *mile* towards the end of the island | Thack P 44 Came the nine *mile* in two-and-forty minutes | Di D 283 five *mile* round | GE A 417 (vg) thirty *mile* off | Shaw P 265 (vg) Matter o two *mawl* [= mile].

Nowadays, *feet*, *fathoms*, *miles* are always said in educated speech, though the pl *foot* is perhaps a little less vulgar than *mile*, especially when followed by a number indicating the inches (five foot ten) *Ells* and *yards* never occur without the *-s*; and *inches* is used universally, though I have found one instance of *inch*: Masefield C 217 sliding down a mud-bank with eighteen *inch* on top (a sea-captain speaking)

Measures of weight.

3.63. *Pound* O (also in the meaning 'pound sterling'). [Ch pound, e.g F 683, G 1361, 1364] Roister very often *pound(e)* after numerals, also 32 ten thousand poundes, cf 72, and without a numeral 14 besides poundes of gold | Sh *pound* more frequent than *pounds* after a numeral, without a numeral *pounds* | AV only *pound* | Bunyan G 34 *pound* | Farquhar B 319 *pound*, but 324, 328,

376 *pounds* | Swift J *pounds* often, hardly *pound* | Pope *pound* and *pounds* after numerals | Defoe R 199 six *pound* of gunpowder | ib. 325 two *pound* of excellent good tobacco | ib. 331 two hundred *pounds* sterling | Fielding T 1.64 ten *pound* | Austen M 114 twenty *pounds* | Thack N 41 three *pound* (schoolboy) | Di D 704 a hundred *pound* | Hope Ch 62 two *pound* ten | Hope F 21 I've won five *pound* of him | Shaw C 192 (vg) I lost a hundred *pound*.—*Pound* is now decidedly vulgar (in the last quotation but one an aristocrat is speaking) except when followed by a numeral (shillings) as in *two pound ten*; cf for *a five-pound note* 7 12

Stone; pl generally unchanged, but Sattler has a few examples of *stones* (ESt 16 49): Thack V 369 Jack . . . weighs five *stone* | Thack P 1 191 I have known a twelve *stone* man go down to nine stone five | Shaw J 240 thirteen *stun* four (vg)

Hundredweight, pl unchanged, though *-s* also occurs. *Weight* probably is to be considered as a kind of subjunct (two hundred [pounds] weight), cf. the old spelling: 2 or 300 *weight* of iron (Defoe R 99) A modern example: Quiller M 131 from two to three *hundredweight*.

Pennyweight(s).

Tun, ton pl now generally *-s*; but Ml J 980 a hundred *tun* of wine | Farquhar B 316 ten *tun* of ale | Spect 17 fifteen persons weighed above three *tun* | ib 118 fifty *tun* of tobacco | Defoe R 2.137 two ton of iron | Kipl L 125 fifteen *ton* of coal.

Ounce, dram, grain and other weights always have the pl in *-s*

Words indicating money.

3.64. *Pound*, see 3 63.

Mark. Caxton R 20,41 a thousand marke Thus also twice in Sh, who has generally *marks*. In modern usage always *marks* (in speaking of German coin).

Shilling: Sh generally *shillings*, but twice *shilling* in the language of clowns Now always *-s*.

Bob (slang = 'shilling') always pl unchanged, e.g. Di D 312, X 40.

Quid (slang = 'pound'), pl unchanged Kipl L 153 | Shaw Pur 264 | Vachell H 198.

3.65. A few isolated examples of unchanged plurals in similar words

BJo 3.27 it doubles the twelve *caract* [= carat] | AV Judges 14 12 thirtie *change* of garments, but Gen 45.22 fiue changes of raiment

Besides measures mentioned above, Elphinstone 1765 (I. 228) gives also as unchanged in the plural: *chaldron* (cf NED 1664). *bushel*. *last* (cf NED 1583, 1712). *coil* (of ropes) *load* (cf. NED 1533)

For *horsepower* and *pennyworth* see 7.3

Other Unchanged Plurals.

3.7. The following instances present somewhat complicated features, and one may in some cases hesitate whether to place them here or with sg words of mass (5.2).

3.71. *Horse* is an old neuter, and as such had its plural unchanged (OE and Ch *hors*); this is retained to some extent in ModE. Malory has *hors* (157) and *horses* (111), Greene F 5 5 has *post-horse* pl, Shakespeare has the pl *horse* some ten times (e.g. Gent III 1 265 a teeme of horse shall not plucke that from me), the form is even found in Byron (Maz 17 a thousand horse—and none to ride!) But the analogical form *horses*, which is found as early as the 13th c. and which was the usual form with Sh, is now the only one in use in speaking of the animal *Horse*, however, is used in the sense 'horse soldiers, cavalry', also with a numeral The present distinction is seen clearly in the Macaulay quotation below.

Hall (1548, NED) king Henry with a *fewe horse* | (Sh) Edw3 II 2.31 I haue . leuied *those horse and foote*. . Then let *those foote* trudge hence upon *those horse* | Sh R3 V. 3 294 My foreward Consisting equally of *horse and foot* | Sh All IV. 3 170 Fiue or six *thousand horse* | Mi SA 1618 Both *horse and foot* before him and behind | Macaulay H 2 177 The royal troops fired such a volley of musketry as sent the rebel *horse* flying in all directions . their *horses* were unused, not only to stand fire, but to obey the rein A few minutes after the Duke's *horse* had dispersed themselves, his infantry came up running fast . The Life Guards scattered in an instant some of Grey's *horse*, who had attempted to rally

3.72. *Foot* is used in the signification 'foot soldiers, infantry', also with a numeral

Sh H4B II 1 186 *Fifteene hundred foot*, fiue hundred horse Are march'd up | Fielding T 2 135 two companies of *foot* | Macaulay H 2 161 The *foot* were divided into six regiments | ib 2 175 The *foot* were led by Monmouth himself. The horse were confided to Grey | ib 177 the King's *foot* were hastily forming in order of battle

3.73. *Craft* from the meaning 'skill, trade acquires also that of 'boat(s), vessel(s)'; apparently (see NED) at first in *small craft* = boats of small craft, i e small trading vessels; then *craft* collectively = vessels, and at last also individually in the same sense, with a sg = 'boat, vessel', from which a new pl *crafts* is occasionally formed (NED examples in *s* from 1775 and 1871).

Macdonald F 281 three or four such tiny craft | Doyle G 33 two great ugly lugger-like craft . the three craft | Shaw P 215 waters crowded with other craft.

3.74. The explanation of these combinations is perhaps to be sought in some such conversations as these. "How many people have they?" "4000." "What kind?" "Foot"—then condensed: "4000 foot" Or "how many vessels?" "Twenty" "Small craft or large ships?"—then condensed: "twenty small craft". Cf also Di T 1.271

the guard, horse and foot [= horse g. and foot g.] surrounded him In the case of *horse* and *foot*, the old use of these forms in the plural (in other senses, 3.62, 3 71) may of course have been a concurring motive for the use of these forms after numerals.

3.75. *Cannon* has the pl *cannons*, often in Sh, now not so frequent (Sattler, ESt 12.370f. has six instances from recent NP); besides *cannon* is used as a sg of mass, and now also as the pl of *cannon*, with a numeral:

Sh John II 382 let France and England mount Their battering *canon* charged to the mouthes | Defoe R 212 like *pieces of cannon* | ib. 215 I loaded all my *cannon*, as I called *them* | Franklin 132 some old *cannon* . *these* not being sufficient | By DJ 7.12 two and-thirty cannon | Macaulay H 1 231 *cannon were* planted round Whitehall | Kipl J 1 223 the screw-guns are tiny little *cannon* made in two pieces | (NP q) The *three* old British *cannon* sunk off Plozisel were recovered during the recent low tides. The Mayor has asked government permission to place *these cannons* at the front of the monument. But *gun, rifle, musket, pistol* are never used collectively or unchanged in the plural.

3.76. *Sail* besides the meaning 'single piece of canvas' with the ordinary pl *sails* has the signification 'mass of sails, all the sails of a vessel' she carries much sail | under sail, under all sail | Macaulay (NED) the Dutch armament had run full sail down the Channel | Fox M 1 133 a ship in full sail (Note that the quantity of sail a ship carries is dependent not only on the number of sails, but also on their superficies, whether reefed, etc) | Defoe R 2.205 we set sail

Finally, *sail* is used (cf *foot*, etc) with a numeral = so many sailing-vessels: a fleet of thirty sail The oldest quotation for this pl *sail* is from 1458. Also *ten sail of ships* | Quiller-Couch M 5 two hundred sail of coasters (Formerly also *sails* in this sense, see NED 4a quotations 1436, 1480, 1568, 1649.)

Kind, etc.

3.81. With words signifying *sort* we often find seeming irregularities of number Some of these may be explained by old *s*-less plurals, as in *kin* = OE *cynn* (not found in this usage in ModE, though common in earlier times) and *kind* = OE *(ge)cynd(e)* neuter and fem. *All manner* might be explained as a sg combination (*all* = 'every'), though I am more inclined to take it from the very first as pl. as *maner(e)* is found very early in the pl (AR 10 two manere of men | 50 þreo manere crevices, etc | Ch HF 1197, 1219 etc | Caxton R 82 thre maner colours | frequent in Malory) whatever may be the explanation of that form. In *that kind of thing* we may have a survival of the old *s*-less pl of *thing* The old construction without *of* has now completely disappeared The usual construction is now to keep *kind*, *sort* (and *manner*) unchanged, and to use before them the sg form (*that*, *this*) if the word following *of* is (apparently or really) sg, but the pl (*those*, *these*) if it is pl in form But the irregular constructions are by many considered "grammatically incorrect" and therefore avoided in careful literary language, which prefers e g *books of that kind* to the colloquial *those kind of books*. In the latter, the popular feeling treats *kind of*, *sort of* as one word, which here is an adjunct, while in *I kind of admire* (vg) it is a subjunct.

3.82. Examples with *manner*.

More U 158 all maner of thynges | Sh H6A 1. 3.74 all manner of men | Bacon A 41.26 all manner of reflexions | Mi A 19 by reading all manner of tractats | Carlyle S 4 fish in all manner of waters, with all manner of nets | Ru Sel 1.10 all manner of strange shapes | Gissing B 182 all manner of benefits.

Many other examples with *all* from Caxton, Malory, Dickens, MacCarthy, Black, Kipling, Mark Twain, Norris, Doyle, Swinburne, Holmes, etc. The only modern

examples without *all* that I have noted, are Ruskin Sel 2.219 *how many manner* of eyes are there? | Mill in Fox 1.164 to imagine *what manner* of persons they might be.

Manners, in the sense of 'kinds' is rare, see NED 1400, 1651, and 1674

The sb after *manner (of)* may, though not so often, be in the sg Malory 96 ther was daunsynge and mynstralsye and alle maner of Joye | AV Matth 10.1 all maner of sickenesse, and all maner of disease | Austen P 188 wish him all manner of evil | Fox 1.50 he does papa all manner of honour.

In the following example, the sg *manner* induces the following sg: Norris O 141 all manner and description of flowers

3.83. Examples with *kind*:

(1) *these, those*: Sh Lear II 2 107 these kind of knaues | Tw N I 5 95 these set kinde of fooles | Swift J 150 if you read those kind of things | Goldsm 652 these kind of things | Austen S 246 The impertinence of these kind of scrutinies | Sw Elb 9 8 dijz kaind ov tuwlz.

That kind of thing: Trollope D 1.50, 214, 2 42, 3 98

This kind of things (rare) Gissing R 248 (followed by . *is* mere futile effort)

(2) other adjectives Sh As II 3 10 some kinde of men | Shr I 1 247 in all kind of companies | Spect 14 Respect to all kind of superiours | Austen S 250 They are very well-behaved, good kind of girls | Ru Sel 1 47 such kind of duties

Examples of *kinds* in similar constructions Sh (only once) Tp III 1.2 some kindes of basenesse | Defoe R 3 all kind [NB] of vertues and all kinds of enjoyment | Sterne 12a in these kinds of fancies of his | Austen S 286 I know so little of these kinds of forms | Holmes A 187 these kinds of exercise || Ru Sel 1 410 not only for art's sake, but for all kinds of sake.

3.84. With *sort* Shakespeare has only the regular construction (Macb I 7.33 all sorts of people), which is

also frequent in the 19th c. (Beaconsf L 463 did all sorts of things), but from the 18th c. *those sort of* is found very often indeed.

(1) *these, those*· Spect 124 Will Honeycomb is one of those sort of men who are very often absent | Swift J 19 it is by these sort of ways that fools get preferment | Fielding 3 527 these sort of great personages | Austen E 164 at those sort of discoveries | Di N 206 These sort of people are glad to sleep anywhere | Hewlett O 442 These sort of speeches | Wells T 116 these ingenious sort of men | Other ex in Trollope, Fox, Mered Haggard, Benson, Norris, etc

That sort of thing is found, for instance, Beaconsf L 201 | Thack P 1 133, 223, 243 | GE Mm 208 | Trollope D 1 149 | Harraden F 116 | Swinburne L 114 | Mac Carthy 2.5 | Hope In 269 | White N 163

This sort of thing in By DJ 1 212 | Di Ch 122 | Di D 45 | Wells T 37

Those sort of things By DJ 14 66

(2) other adjectives: Fielding T 3 169 they are very honest sort of people | Austen E 22 the friends . . though very good sort of people | Harraden D 73 they are rough, ignorant sort of creatures

3.85. As this usage cannot well be separated from the loose insertion of *sort (kind) of* before a singular (with or without the indefinite article), I mention this phenomenon here, though it is really no example of the 'unchanged plural'.

Fielding T 1 175 a loose kind of a fellow | ib. 4 280 a very good sort of a man | Sterne 11 b your knowledge of my character and of what kind of a mortal I am Austen M 38 Mr R is a very good sort of young man Austen P 22 Lady Lucas was a very good kind of woman Keats Agnes 27 In sort of wakeful swoon, perplex'd she lay | Beaconsf L 354 a kind of cousin of the Queen | GE M 1.76 quite a gentleman sort o' man | Thack S 151 this sort of man is scarcely found anywhere but in Clubs

Anstey V 171 He led a nightmare sort of existence | Black Pr 1.77 Ingram was a very good sort of fellow.

Hence, through *sort of (a) fellow, sort* by itself comes to mean 'fellow' in colloquial language.

Cambridge Tr 125 Toyler isn't a bad sort after all | Ward D 2 69 Dora L was a real good sort

Some Cases of Doubtful Number.

3.91. I see survivals of the old unchanged neuter pl *word* in phrases like *send him word* (e.g. Sh Cæs III 2 95) and *by word of mouth* (e g. Di Do 301); but now of course this is felt to be a sg form

Bac A 32 4 There is word come to the governour | Defoe R 2 65 he brings word that . | GE A 280 I might write her word after a while, how we went on | Di Do 354 word was left about some alterations in her room | ib. 355 she gave the word to go on | Hardy W 114 did your mistress leave word where she was going?

3.92. *Knee* is sometimes used so as to suggest rather the plural signification (nearly = 'lap'); this may be a survival of the old neuter pl *cnēow*: Lyly C 323 Thankes to your Maiestie on bended knee | Sh Cæs II 2 54 upon my knee | ib. II. 2.80 | Di Ol 422 these joyous little faces that clustered round her knee

3.93. When *bone* is used in the sense 'all the bones of the body' we may think of a survival of the old unchanged pl (OE *bān*), but the usage may also be partly due to the frequent collocation with the mass-word *flesh*: AV 2Sam 19 13 Art thou not of my bone, and of my flesh? But ib. 19.12 Yee are my bones and my flesh | what is bred in the bone will out in the flesh (in Heywood: It will not out of the fleshe that is bred in the bone) | Mi PL 8 493 I now see Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh (but Gen 2 23 bone of my bones) | Thack N 132 he was but skin and bone when he died (Now also *skin and bones*) | GE A 31 Nature knits us together by *bone* and *muscle*.

Chapter IV.

The Meaning of Singular and Plural in Substantives.

Preliminary Survey

4.11. After thus having disposed of the more formal questions connected with the two numbers, we approach the question of the function or use of singular and plural in substantives, by which various nuances of the idea of number are expressed In the first place we have those plurals which may be called the normal or ordinary plurals, as *horses* in *three horses* meaning (one) horse + (a second) horse + (a third) horse. Here we have several individual objects of the same kind. This class presents very few difficulties, though there are some cases in which the choice of singular or plural may be doubtful, see 4.2.

What objects can be counted together, depends on the classification expressed linguistically In many cases the classification is so natural that it is practically identical in most languages, but there are in some cases differences called forth by varieties in linguistic structure Thus in English there is no difficulty in saying "Tom and Mary are cousins", as *cousin* means both a male and a female cousin, Danish has different words, and therefore must say "T. og M. er fætter og kusine", and it is impossible exactly to translate *five cousins* into Danish. On the other hand English has no comprehensive term for what the Germans call *geschwister*, Dan *søskende*. Sometimes, however, a numeral is placed before such a collocation as *brothers and sisters*: they have ten brothers and sisters (Taine, Notes 69), which may be = 2 brothers + 8 sisters or any other combination. Thus also J. Strange Winter, First Book 244 a very large family—about ten *girls and*

boys | seven *sons and daughters* | we have twenty *cocks and hens* (= Dan. tyve hons) | *fifteen ladies and gentlemen* = x ladies + (15 — x) gentlemen.

We may address an assembly as *Ladies and Gentlemen!* even if there is among them only one lady (or only one gentleman) This use of the plural goes back to primitive ages, see a learned article by H Moller in Zs. f deutsche Wortforschung IV 95 ff

To these normal plurals we must also refer plurals of proper names, though in certain respects they approach the fourth class (differentiation), see 4 4

4.12. Second, the plural denotes several individual objects not exactly of the same kind, though similar, as in *the sixties* = 60 + 61 + 62 . . . . This category will be treated in 4.5; I term it "plural of approximation".

4.13. Third, we have what might be called the plural of social inequality, by which one person either speaks of himself or addresses another person in the plural. We thus have in the first person the 'plural of majesty', by which kings and similarly exalted persons say *we* instead of *I*. The verbal form used with this *we* is the plural, but in the 'emphatic pronoun with *self* a distinction is made between the normal plural *ourselves* and the half-singular *ourself* Thus frequently in Sh, e g. Hml I 2 122 Be as our selfe in Denmarke | Mcb III 1.46 We will keepe our selfe till supper time alone. (In R2 III 2 127, where modern editions have *ourselves*, the folio has *our selfe*; but in R2 I 1,16, F1 has *our selues*) Outside the plural of majesty, Sh has twice *our selfe* (Meas. II. 2.126, LL IV. 3.314) 'in general maxims' (Sh-lex)

When journalists use *we* instead of *I* ('the editorial *we*'), they use it as a real plural, with *ourselves.*

In the second person the plural of social inequality becomes a plural of politeness or deference: *ye, you* instead of *thou, thee*; this has now become universal without regard to social position, see 2.8.

The use of *us* instead of me in Scotland and Ireland (Murray *D* 188, *Joyce Ir* 81) and also in familiar speech elsewhere may have some connexion with the plural of social inequality though its origin is not clear to me.

4.14. In the fourth place, the plural may be more or less differentiated in sense from the singular, as in *draughts* (the game) See 4 6

4.15. In the fifth place a plural may denote a composite object, as in *scissors*, which is not = one scissor + another scissor . . . or + something else The sg here does not exist, or exists in a different signification, in which case the word properly belongs to the preceding class. See 4 7

Not unfrequently it is arbitrary whether an object is to be considered single, requiring the singular number, or composite, requiring the plural Thus English and French have the pl *scissors*, *ciseaux*, where Danish and German have the sg *sax*, *schere* Even in the same language we may sometimes find varying appreciations Thus what to one Englishman is *a pair of moustaches*, to another is *a moustache*, the NED defines *a moustache* as (a) the hair on both sides of the upper lip, (b) the hair covering either side of the upper lip a little gentleman with a dyed moustache (a); he twirled first one moustache and then the other (b) In former times *mustachio(s)* with numerous more or less phantastic spellings, also Ml J [1?] *a muschatoes.*

4.16. A sixth class consists of words which at the same time are in one respect singulars as denoting units, in another respect plurals as denoting more than one thing or person. These words are the so-called collectives (4.8 and 9), and together with them we shall consider other ways of expressing higher units comprising several distinct objects, see 5.1

4.17. Next, we have what are here called mass-words, such as *gold*, *butter*, *milk* (material mass-words), and *pride*, *truth* (immaterial mass-words). Here such

notions as singular and plural are strictly speaking inapplicable, hence some mass-words are formally singular, as those mentioned above, others formally plural, as *dregs*, *measles* Various interesting features concerning the numerical use of these words will be mentioned in 5 2.

4.18. To denote a whole class, sometimes the sg (*man is mortal*) and sometimes the pl (*men were deceivers ever*) is used, as will be seen in 5 4

4.19. Finally we shall deal with the use in some cases of a common or neutral number, and with some peculiarities in the employment of numbers which it has not been possible to include in any of the preceding classes, see 5 5ff

The Normal Plural

4.21. As already stated, the normal meaning of the plural number is that of designating several individual objects included (linguistically) under the same kind; the plurality may, or may not, be indicated by means of qualifying adjuncts *three horses* | *many children* | London and New York are big *cities* | those are *photos* of my daughters, etc

4.22. A substantive with two or more adjectives (or other adjuncts) joined by *and* and indicating each a separate thing or individual is fairly regularly put in the plural the eighteenth and nineteenth *centuries* [= the 18th century and the 19th century] | the English and French *nations* | the Old and New *Worlds* | the East and West *Coasts* of Africa | Chesterton F 217 the second and third *fingers* | NP '11 the Labour and Irish *parties* | NP '11 at the corner of Wall and Nassau *Streets* | Dobson F 28 the Haymarket and Drury Lane *companies* | Zangwill G 131 between the first and second *calls* | Thack P 31 between the *ages* of sixteen and eighteen

In German and Danish the sg is here used das achtzehnte und neunzehnte jahrhundert | det attende og nittende arhundrede The use in English of the (logical)

plural is facilitated by the fact that the definite article is the same in both numbers, and that the same is true of the adjectives, too, so that no conflict is felt as would be the case if we had in G. *das* achtzehnte und neunzehnte jahrhunderte Cf below 4.25 on substantives with the indefinite article, where for the same reason the sg is used.

4.23. The plural form is also found in some cases, where the adjectives are joined by means of other words than *and*·

Emerson Hist. E. Lang. 203 until the last of the sixteenth or beginning of the seventeenth *centuries* | Wilde In 198 the history of England from the fourteenth to the sixteenth *centuries* | Chesterton F 110 collect the youth of the neighbourhood up to the *ages* of ten or twelve

4.24. The sg form, however, is by no means rare, especially when more stress is laid on the separation than on the joining of the two individuals of the same species, thus regularly when we speak of a distinction *between* X and Y (in which case, indeed, we might say that we have an *and* different from the usual additive *and*) Wilde P 69 the real distinction between the classical and romantic *movement* | Macaulay E 4 41 the difference between Asiatic and European *morality* | ib 4 19 hesitating between a military and a commercial *life* | Stevenson MP3 In French colonies . . there is . . a lively contact between the dominant and the dominated *race* | Coleridge Sh 233 a parallel between the ancient and modern *stage*, the stages [NB] of Greece and of England

4.25. The sg is regularly found when the indefinite article is repeated with each substantive:

Collingwood R 143 two styles essentially distinct . . . a speaking and a writing *style* | Kipl J 2.117 there were two, an upper and a lower *shoal* | Hardy F 382 anxiety recognizes a better and a worse *alternative*.

In such cases the type most often used is· *a grey horse and a black one*, with the sb taken to the first adj. and afterwards repeated by *one*

4.26. Other examples of the sg:

Bacon A 13.17 the canonicall bookes of the old and new *testament* | GE A 181 no better lyrics than he could find in the Old and New *Version* | Macaulay H 1.30 before the limits of legislative, executive, and judicial *power* have been traced with precision | Vachell H 250 His grandfathers on the maternal and paternal *side* | Bradley M 97 In the sixteenth and to a great extent in the seventeenth *century* | Seeley E 54 we see in the seventeenth and still more in the eighteenth *century* a period.—In the last two quotations the reason of the sg is the qualifying addition to the second adjective

In many instances, obscurity can be avoided by the use of the sg in such collocations The expression "in the third and fourth *chapters*" (Wells A 212) gives rise to no ambiguity because there is only one third chapter and one fourth chapter, but if in Macaulay H 1.3 "In this, and in the next *chapter*, I have seldom thought it necessary to cite authorities" the pl *chapters* had been similarly used, the reader would naturally have taken the words "next chapters" as applying to more than one chapter. Thackeray writes, N 81, "the old and young *gentlemen* beguiled their way", and only the context shows us that this is = the old gentleman and the young one; but in V 70 he is careful to use the sg form to avoid misunderstandings "The elder and younger *son* of the house of Crawley were never at home together". (Note here the pl of the verb, as also in the following quotation).

The sg may sometimes be necessary or desirable to avoid certain disturbing associations, as in the following sentences, where *lives, spirits*, and *middle-ages* would be easily mis-interpreted: Shaw 2. XI Public and private *life* become daily more theatrical | Collingwood R 163 he had to discuss the Mediaeval and Renaissance *spirit* | Archer A 61 both reputable and disreputable *middle-age* are amply represented || Ru P 1 113 He knew Latin,

German and French *grammar* (cf ib. 114 spending his evenings in compiling French and German *grammars*).

4.27. The sg is always found in the case of a proper name common to two or more persons *Mr. and Mrs. Brown, Professor and Miss Todd, Charles and Mary Lamb*, etc.

Cp on the other hand, *the two Miss Johnsons* = *the two Misses Johnson* (see 2.38)

4.28. The pl form of a substantive is used after a compound numeral ending with *one* (cf on the other hand the 'attraction' in German *tausend und eine nacht*):

twenty-one *years* | the Thousand-and-one *Nights* (an older construction is seen in Stevenson VP 137 a thousand times and one).

Thus also after *half* and other fractions Darwin L 1 379 two and a half *hours* (= two hours and a half) | Kipl Phant R. 3 one man to take the work of two and a half *men* | Frank Fairl 1.57 about fifteen-and-a-half *hands* high | Hardy F 169 three-and-a-half *pounds* | Zangwill G 65 two strides of one and a half *feet* | Ridpath, Hist. U. S. 557 three and a third square *miles* | NP '88 once in every sixteen and a fraction *words* . . one first personal pronoun in every twelve and a fraction *words* || NP 11 over one million and a half *women* (*half* = half a million).

Characteristics of Several Individuals

4.31. "We had made up our *minds* not to make this history public during our joint *lives*" (Haggard She 3). In such cases it is usual to employ the plural of a substantive to indicate that each of the persons mentioned had his own mind, his own life, etc..

Fielding T 1.39 persons of different *sexes* | Spencer Ed 6 we have but span-long *lives* | Sweet E 15 our ancestors must have had good *digestions* | their hearts leaped to their *mouths* | Di Do 477 new horses being put on against their *wills* | Anstey V 77 they whispered under their *breaths* | Stevenson M 284 they were both counting

their *pulses* | Shaw 2 15 we laughed at the other side of our *mouths* | Wells U 321 when we flatten down our little *fingers* on our *palms*, the fourth digit comes down halfway | people of limited *incomes* (sg one person's *income* = his annual receipts)

4.321. The pl may even be used where it cannot be easily justified from a logical point of view: Thackeray Ballads 80 The ladies took the hint, And all day were scraping lint, as became their softer *genders* [their gender, or sex, was the same] See, however, my Progr. p. 290 note

4.322. This pl was formerly frequent in cases where now the sg would generally be used.

Sh Merch III 1 43 more [difference] betweene your *bloods* [the blood of Shylock and of Jessica] then there is betweene red wine and rennish | Sh R2 III. 3.107 by the royalties of both your *bloods* | Sh Hml I 4 56 with thoughts beyond the *reaches* of our soules | Defoe P 84 innumerable stories about the cruel *behaviours* and *practices* of nurses | Sh H8 III 1.68 I thanke you both for your good *wills* | Defoe R 189 people who were here against their *wills* | Sh R2 IV. 1.316 so I were from your *sights* [see note in Clar. Pr. ed.] | Sh R3 IV 1 25 bring me to their *sights* | GE A 292 she'll never go out of our *sights* | Sh Wint I 1 23 they were trayn'd together in their *childhoods*, cf ib II. 1 110, Ado II 1.397, Cor III. 17, H6C IV. 1 45

4.323. With *leave* usage is unsettled, though nowadays *leave* is always preferred, possibly on account of the ambiguity of *leaves* (pl of *leaf*):

Ml F (1616) 1778 wee'l take our *leaues* | Swift 3 290 the friends took their *leaves* | Di N 453 Nicholas and Tim took their *leaves* together | ib 409 we will take our *leaves* | ib. 535 at length the two gentlemen took their *leave*

4.324. *Sake* after a plural genitive is generally put in the plural·

Sh Wiv IV 5 110 I haue suffer'd more for their *sakes* | Swift T 57 for their *sakes* | Di DC 34 for our own *sakes.*—But Sh LL IV. 3 359 for mens sake . or womens *sake.*

Similarly Sh Alls III. 1.22 for your *auailes* they fell | Hughes T 74 for all of your *benefits*

4.33. With such words as *life* and *death*, the sg and pl often express different ideas *their married life was a singularly happy one* (in speaking of a married couple)—*their married lives were led under totally different circumstances* (in speaking of two brothers).

Sh As II 1 15 this our *life*, exempt from publike haunt, Finds tongues in trees | Sh Cæs II 2 32 cowards dye many times before their *deaths* [now rather sg?] | Sh H5 II 2 178 Get you therefore hence, Poore miserable wretches, to your *death* [they are going to die together] | GE A 254 he knew little of the *life* of men in the past [= manner of living, *lives* would be = biographies] | Kipl J 2.118 many people are otherwise Their *life* is on the land | Defoe P 56 to the saving of their *lives*, and restoring their *health* | Haggard S 73 an undertaking which could only end in our *deaths* in this ghastly land | Shaw C 133 Such a party might be formed a week after our marriage—will, I think, be formed a long time before our *deaths* | Doyle S 3 88 our whole *lives* are at stake in this.

Cf also Ml T 2831 Their *faiths*, their *honors*, and their *religion* [they had the same religion] | Caine E 176 ladies in light *dresses*, soldiers in *uniform* [the ladies' dresses were different, but the uniforms alike, cf "they all arrived in evening dress"]

But the distinction is not always observed, as seen in the following examples

Caxton R 24 the kynge shal take alle your *liuys* fro yow | ib. 45 though it sholde touche their *lyf* | ib 87 as they that were aferd of theyr *lyf* | Sh R2 III 1.7 I will vnfold some causes of your *deaths* | ib III. 2.156

sad stories of the *death* of kings | Sh Merch I 2.31 holy men at their *death* haue good inspirations | Caine S 2.128 who could say that the spirits of the dead did not haunt the scenes of their *lives* and *death*? | More U. has the sg *life* on p. 225, 253, but *lives* 224 without any clear distinction Perhaps *deaths* is sometimes avoided for phonetic reasons [ps]

4.34. *Healths* is found in the pl in speaking of toasts in honour of more than one person

Hughes T 69 drinking the *healths* of those who are going to leave | Beaconsf L 252 his proposition of the ladies' *healths*

But in colloquial English, most people would here say *health* to avoid the sound group [lps], and outside of that phrase, *health* is certainly preferred even in speaking of several persons Macaulay E 4 295 their *health* gave way.

4.35. In some set phrases the sg is invariably used even with reference to a plural subject A typical instance is *women with child* as the plural of *a woman with child* = 'a pregnant woman' (*with child* is an adjunct and as such invariable), while *women with children* would mean 'women together with (some) children'

More U 162 as many tymes happeneth to *women with chylde* (also 202) | Sh John III 1 89 let *wiues with childe* Pray that their burthens may not fall this day | Fielding 8 385 timorous *women with child* | Defoe R 2.215 three *sows* big with *pig* || Haggard S 52 the three of us baled away *for dear life* | ib 177 the Arabs took their women *to wife* | Matthews F 61 afraid they might *catch their death* of cold | Macaulay H 2.159 they *lost heart* when the critical time drew near | most men *have an eye* for beauty in women | women generally *have* a better *ear* for music than men.

4.36. In condensed constructions, the sg is used even in speaking of several subjects Three men came

marching along, *pipe in mouth* and *sword in hand* = with (or having) pipes in their mouths and swords in their hands.

4.37. The following examples show the sg without any apparent reason:

Sh H5 V. 2 295 the libertie that followes our places stoppes the *mouth* of all finde-faults | Mi SA 192 in prosperous days [friends] swarm, but in adverse withdraw their *head* | Defoe P 41 to know their *fortune*, or, as it is vulgarly expressed, to have their fortunes told them | GE A 357 the all-conquering feeling in the *mind* both of father and son | Stevenson D 30 their whole *soul* was fixed on the dead carcass | Barrie T 166 we are simple creatures, and yearn to be loved for our *face* | Haggard S 302 what I do wonder at is that we escaped at all with our *reason* [= mentally sane, *reasons* might be misunderstood].

4.381. When *exchange* (*change*) means 'interchange, give and receive reciprocally', the object is put in the pl:

Shall we exchange *seats*? | Sh As I. 3 93 Wilt thou change *fathers*? I will giue thee mine | Gissing B 245 she found herself changing *places* with the daughter | Goldsm 617 you're so plaguy shy, that one would think you had changed *sexes* | I changed *hats* with him.

But otherwise the sg may (or must) be used, as in *they changed colour*.

4.382. In some set phrases the pl also denotes reciprocity, as *cross swords with*, *touch glasses with*, *shake hands with* someone *he shook hands with her* (as both their right hands are shaken); but of course also *he shook her by the hand* (sg)

Plurals of Proper Names

4.4. When a plural is formed from a proper name, this evidently by that very fact loses its strict character of a proper name. As such it 'denotes' one single individual and (to the hearer who understands the name, i.e. who knows what individual is referred to) it

'connotes' all those characteristics by which that individual is recognized. In this complete sense a plural is unthinkable. If in the course of a conversation I mention *John*, I want to call up the image of one definite individual, and in that sense there is only one "John" in existence in spite of the fact that there are several other individuals bearing that name But each of these is *a John*, and in that sense ('an individual called John') a plural is perfectly natural. If the John mentioned is characterized by one quality (sagacity, or meanness, or whatever it may be) and if those I am talking to know this as well as I do, I may be easily understood if I say in referring to his younger brother Tom, "he will be another John some day"—and in that sense too a plural may be formed (4.43). In all cases except that mentioned in 4.42 we may thus have a singular with the indefinite article in the same sense, the change in signification is thus already found in one application of the 'proper name' in the sg, and (always with 4 42 as an exception) the plural is a 'normal plural' in the sense defined 4 11 It will therefore be evident that the superscription of this section is not strictly correct, but it is clear enough to serve its purpose.

4.41. The plural of a personal name may in the first place denote two or more individuals bearing the same name (either accidentally, or by reason of their belonging to the same family)

In the party there were *three Johns* and *four Marys* | *the Stuarts* | Di N 594 There can't be *two Vincent Crummleses* [= two persons of that name].

4.42. But ib 603 we have the same pl used in a second sense. he took farewell of *the Vincent Crummleses* [= the family whose head was Mr. V C].

The transition between (1) and (2) is seen when only the family name is mentioned, as in Fox 2 55 *the Carlyles* had been to see it [= Mr. and Mrs. C.]. But as the wife is often called by her husband's Christian

name plus family name (Mrs. Henry Spinker), we have really the first category in Di D 346 Immense deference was shown to *the Henry Spinkers*, male and female. And it is only when *the John Philipses* comprise the children as well as the parents that we have a clear instance of (2) and may refer it to the plural of approximation (4 5).

It is noteworthy that the ending *s* might here really (apart from the spelling which may be arbitrary) just as well be the genitive as the plural ending This is shown by other languages, in German *s* is used in the same meaning (for instance Schnitzler, Weg ins freie 25, wo *die Rosners* wohnten . *Rosners* waren zu hause); this evidently is the genitive ending (see Wilmanns, Deutsche Gr III, p 401) though it may (in North Germany) be often felt to be the Low German plural ending, see Polle, Wie denkt das volk uber die sprache 74, who relates a case in which a party were mentioned als "*Schulzes* sind dagewesen" though the party comprised not a single Schulze, but only distant relations of other names staying with the Schulze family. In Danish *Hansens* means the Hansen family, but this genitive case may be preceded by an adjective in the plural, as in J. Fibiger Levnet 198 Da jeg kom tilbage, var *de gamle Suhrs* døde. For the corresponding phenomena in Swedish cf *Sprak och Stil* VII 127 and 243 In French the plural article is used: *les Paul* ont été ici = M. Paul et Mme Paul (et leurs enfants).

Note that in the genitive plural the definite article is the only mark of plurality in the spoken language

Austen M 41 *The Miss Bertrams'* admiration of Mr. C | ib. 185 the first fortnight after *the Miss Bertrams* going away | Hardy L 134 the great interest of *the Jolliffes'* married life | ib 147 the asylum of the Lesters' house | Aldrich S 257 I spent the evening at *the Slocums'*.

4.43. Third, the pl of a proper name may mean: people like N., as in.

Shakespeares and *Lionardo da Vincis* will always be rare

in any generation | Carlyle F 2.97 Benvenuto Cellini gives more insight into Italy than *fifty Leo Tenths* would do | Carlyle Fox 1.270 there are thoughts in Goethe which *a dozen Wordsworths* could not see into | Bennett B 121 The *Mr. Jacksons* of this world never die till they are hung | Gissing R 166 *Edisons* and *Marconis* may thrill the world with astounding novelties (cf in the sg id. G 95 surely *some Edison* would make the true automaton) ‖ Gibbon M 69 the marvellous tales which are so boldly attested by the Basils and Chrysostoms, the Austins and Jeroms (here probably in imitation of French *les Basiles*, etc)

4.44. Fourth, a proper name may by metonymy stand for a work by N., as in *two Turners* = two pictures by Turner (sg *a Turner*) Thackeray seems to avoid this plural in the case of a name ending in *s*, as he writes (V 396) the magnificent *Vandykes*, the noble *Reynolds' pictures*.

4.45. Plurals of geographical names may be employed in various corresponding senses

McCarthy 2.414 no answer was made by either of the *Canadas* (= Upper Canada and Lower Canada, now no more used) | there are just *a few Manchesters* throughout the world | NP (NED) a Conference of *all the Englands* over sea | most big cities have their *Whitechapels* | many people who have had their *Austerlitzes*, dread their *Waterloos*.—*The Hebrides* and other geographical names mentioned 4.74 are not cases in point, as they are not plurals of proper names, but plural proper names

Plural of Approximation

4.51. *The sixties* (cf 4 12) has two meanings, first the years from 60 to 69 inclusive in any century, thus Seeley E 249 the seventies and the eighties of the eighteenth century | Stedman Oxford 152 in the "Seventies' [i e 1870, etc] | in the early forties = early in the forties Second it may mean the age of any individual person, when he is sixty, 61, etc, as in Wells U 316 responsible action is begun

in the early twenties . . . Men marry before the middle thirties | Children's Birthday Book 182 While I am in the ones, I can frolic all the day, but when I'm in the tens, I must get up with the lark . When I'm in the twenties, I'll be like sister Joe. When I'm in the thirties, I'll be just like Mama.

4.52. The most important instance of this plural is found in the pronouns of the first and second persons. *we* = *I* + one or more *not-I*s The pl *you (ye)* may mean *thou* + *thou* + *thou* (various individuals addressed at the same time), or else *thou* + one or more other people not addressed at the moment, for the expressions *you people*, *you boys*, *you all*, to supply the want of a separate pl form of *you* see 2.87.

A 'normal' plural of *I* is only thinkable, when *I* is taken as a quotation-word (cf 8.2) as in Kipl L 66 he told the tale, the *I*—*I*—*I*'s flashing through the record as telegraph-poles fly past the traveller, cf also the philosophical plural *egos* or *me's*, rarer *I's*, and the jocular verse Here am I, my name is Forbes, Me the Master quite absorbs, Me and many other *me's*, In his great Thucydides

4.53. It will be seen that the rule (given for instance in Latin grammars) that when two subjects are of different persons, the verb is in "the first person rather than the second, and in the second rather than the third" (si tu et Tullia valetis, ego et Cicero valemus, Allen and Greenough, Lat Gr. § 317) is really superfluous, as a self-evident consequence of the definition that "the first person plural is the first person singular plus some one else, etc" In English grammar the rule is even more superfluous, because no persons are distinguished in the plural of English verbs.

When a body of men, in response to "Who will join me?", answer "We all will", their collective answers may be said to be an ordinary plural (class 1) of *I* (= many *I*s), though each individual "we will" means really nothing more than "I will, and B and C will, too" in conformity with the above definition Similarly in a collective document: "We, the undersigned citizens of the city of "

4.54. The plural *we* is essentially vague and in no wise indicates whom the speaker wants to include besides himself. Not even the distinction made in a great many African and other languages between one *we* meaning 'I and my own people, but not you', and another *we* meaning 'I + you (sg or pl)' is made in our class of languages. But very often the resulting ambiguity is remedied by an appositive addition; the same speaker may according to circumstances say *we brothers, we doctors, we Yorkshiremen, we Europeans, we gentlemen*, etc Cf. also GE M 2.201 we people who have not been galloping

4.55. Other examples of the pl of approximation are *the Vincent Crummleses*, etc. 4.42. In other languages we have still other examples, as when Latin *patres* many mean *pater* + *mater*, Italian *zii* = *zio* + *zia*, Span *hermanos* = *hermano(s)* + *hermana(s)*, etc

The Differentiated Plural.

4.61. In many cases the plural has a meaning which is more or less different from that of 'the same word' in the singular. Very often the pl form, besides this specific signification, may also retain the exact meaning of the sg. To show how difficult it is sometimes to draw the line between this class and the normal plural, I shall here give first some instances which seem to me to be 'normal'.

When *teas* means 'different kinds or varieties of tea' (cf. the difference between *much wine* and *many wines*), we have really a special signification of the word *tea*, which is found also in the sg as in "This is a different tea from the one we usually buy' (Thus correspondingly with many mass-words, 5.2) Still another signification of the substantives is seen in the waiter's *two teas and three coffees* = two portions (cups) of tea', etc , here also we may have a singular *one tea*. Thus in Thack. H 17 two more tumblers, two more hot *waters*, and two more

goes of gin | Wells T 45 I'd had a bottle of champagne and perhaps two or three *whiskies* (cf. *whisky-and-sodas*, *brandies-and-soda* 2 57)

In Hope D 55 "Last night I met her at a *dance* I had five *dances* with her", we have not a special signification of the grammatical category "plural", but the first *dance* means something different from the second, viz. 'ball'

Thus also *course* in Thack N 604 during the whole *course*, or *courses* of the dinner

Memory has three different meanings (a) the faculty my father's memory was excellent = he had an excellent m | liars must have good memories | Wilde In 78 modern memoirs are generally written by people who have entirely lost their memories, — (b) what is remembered, repute my father's memory is respected by all who knew him, — (c) an act or instance of remembrance. Shelley 613 Twining memories of old time

4.62. But in the following instances we have a more specific differentiation of the plural (only rough definitions of the various significations are attempted)

advice 'counsel', *advices* 'information', or 'sources of information': BJo 3 37 I had my advices here | By 586 my advices bring sure tidings | Caine E 482 their advices from official sources leave no doubt | McCarthy 2 51 the advices which some English journals showered upon the Government (to 5 34?).

air 'of the atmosphere', *airs* 'haughty demeanour' give oneself airs

ash; *ashes* the usual form *Ash* occurs as far back as the 13th c ; it is now used in scientific language (also in compounds like *potash*, *bone-ash*, *volcanic ash*) and in poetry (as in Kipl J 2.61 flat black ash by the altarstone), but in colloquial language only in the meaning 'ash of a cigar' as in Stevenson D 132 | Hope D 54 | Merriman S 65 Paul flicked the ash off his cigar.

attention 'power or fact of attending', *attentions* *pay*

attentions to a lady, 'court her'. Hope D 38 Didn't you notice his attentions to anyone? In the latter signification, however, the sg may also be used

ban 'proclamation †, curse', *banns* (note the different spelling) 'notice of marriage': to forbid the banns

bearing various significations, esp. 'carriage, behaviour', *bearings* 'position of a ship, etc': take one's bearings.

bitter 'ale', *bitters* 'stomachic medicine'.

colour 'tint', *colours* 'flag'.

compass 'range', *compasses* 'instrument for describing circles'

confidence 'trust', *confidences* 'private communications'· Trollope D 1 24 then gradually there came confidences, —and at last absolute confidence.

custom; *customs* 'duties'.

damage 'injury'; *damages* 'compensation for injury'.

decency 'proper behaviour', *decencies* 'established acts of decorum'.

draught, *draughts* 'game'.

force 'strength', *forces* 'army'.

grace 'attractiveness', etc, *graces* 'favour, good opinion', as in Austen P 90 he was now high in her good graces

heaven generally means 'the region of God and the blessed', *heavens* is poetical and generally means the physical sky, a meaning which is rarer in the sg, cf. Wordsw P 3 161 to the broad ocean and the azure heavens | ib. 6.634 the unfettered cloud and region of the Heavens | Stevenson M 245 the arch of the blue heavens.

honour, *honours* at cards: honours easy, also take *honours* at a University (distinction at examination), and do the *honours* at an entertainment

light, pl *lights* 'understanding'. Henderson Sc. Lit. 60 Wyntoun was, according to his lights, a conscientious chronicler | Shaw C 209

letter, *letters* 'learning, literature'.

look 'act of seeing', *looks* 'aspect' (though *the look of him* = *his looks*): Di D 272 a second lady, with some

appearance of good looks | Stevenson JHF 60 when Utterson remarked on his ill looks | Herrick M 28 by the looks of it, mother was right | Le Gallienne Young Lives 69 Where in the world did you all get that grand look of yours from — I don't mean your good looks merely, but that look of distinction?

love, *loves* 'amours' Parker R 17 he had had acquaintances, but never friendships, and never loves or love | Browning 2 199 For lo, advancing Hymen and his pomp! Discedunt nunc amores, loves, farewell! Maneat amor let love, the sole, remain!

manner 'mode', *manners* 'behaviour' (Instead of *the different manners* of doing this, say 'different ways')

moral 'of a story', *morals* 'of an individual'

Seeley E 1 the history of England ought to end with something that might be called a moral | Di N 3 Ralph deduced from the tale the two great morals that .. and that | Hawth S 289 Among many morals which press upon us , we put only this into a sentence. — Be true! || Benson D 174 he'll corrupt my morals | Wells U 205 the private morals of an adult citizen are no concern for the State | Dickinson C 21 Your morals? Where shall we find them?

number, *numbers* 'metre, poetry'. Sh Hml II 2 120 I am ill at these numbers | Pope 274 I lisp'd in numbers, for the numbers came.

order, *orders* state of clergyman' Gissing B 369 Peak is about to take Orders — Orders? For what? — Not for wines. Peak is going to be ordained

(*organ*, in the sense 'musical instrument' (a pair of) *organs* was formerly in use, cf Ch B 4041 the mery orgon . that gon, now *an organ*)

pain; *pains* see 5 754

part 'portion', *parts* 'qualities', 'talent' as in Sh Alls I 2 21 thy fathers moral parts | Zangwill G 142 a man of parts, or 'countries' as in Ritchie M 127 we had reached foreign parts | Haggard S 46

physic 'medicine', *physics* 'physical science'

[*power*. Marriott Polit. Inst 69 the legal *powers* of the Crown have been enormously extended by the rapid increase in the functions of government . . But while the *powers* of the Crown have been increased, the *power* of the Crown has been rigorously curtailed | Wells T 8 an unreasonable disposition to imagine that when a man has *powers* he must necessarily have *Power*.]

premiss or *premise* ['premis] 'a statement from which an inference is drawn'. Walker L 736 the premiss was right, but the conclusion was wrong, *premises* 'house with its ground', orig in legal use 'the matters mentioned previously, the subject of a conveyance'

[*pretension*: Swinb L 253 His father had twice his pretensions and less than half his pretension — This may mean 'twice his solid claims and half his self-assertion.]

quarter 'fourth part', *quarters* 'lodgings', *headquarters*.

regard 'look, etc', *regards* 'greeting, in letter' kind regards to John

respect 'respectful feeling', *respects* 'message, salutation' Austen P 123 to pay my respects to him | Hope D 45.

return 'coming back', *returns* 'official report, statistics'.

salt, *salts* 'smelling salts'

sand, *sands* 'sandy tracts' Longfellow 3 Footprints on the sands of time *Quicksands* Stevenson M 123

scene; *scenes* 'stage', in the phrase *behind the scenes*

sense 'common sense; one of the five senses'; *senses* also 'sensuality' Defoe Pl 76 void of all sense, or at least government of her senses | Byron DJ 1 89 thus appeals To the good sense and senses of mankind | Crawford [q] It is a mistake to suppose that every one who has five senses has sense

silk; *silks* 'silk garments'

sky, *skies* esp in the phrase *praise (extol, exalt) to the skies*, where it may have had the old meaning 'clouds', cf. Dan *hæve til skyerne*, F *aux nues*. Dr D 94 we exalted Steerforth to the skies | ib 202 it lifted his mind . . and

bore it into the skies | Shaw J 292 she has gone right up into the skies

spectacle 'sight', *spectacles* 'eye-glasses'

spirit; *spirits* in two senses, as in Bell Essays and Postscr 158 the custom of keeping up spirits by pouring spirits down.

trouble, as in an American story: I will see that you are well rewarded for your trouble [= 'pains'] — yes, and your troubles [= 'difficulties, embarrassment'].

vapour 'steam', *vapours* 'fit of despondency'

water, *waters* 'springs'

wit, *wits* originally 'the five senses', later 'mind' or 'understanding' as a whole. Caxton R 95 I had almost lost my fyue wyttes | Wilde W 12 as a concession to my poor wits | Di D 113 a weight that brooded on my wits, and blunted them | ib 235 Mr Dick listening, with his poor wits calmly wandering God knows where

work, *works* in various senses 'works of a watch', cf. also *fireworks* See also Stevenson A 64 all literary work, and chiefly works of art. Cf. on *works* 'manufactory' as a sg 5 74.

writing 'handwriting', *writings* 'written works'. his writing is legible, and his writings are quite readable

Composite Objects, etc.

4.7. Names of composite objects very often have a plural form, while the sg is not, or not often, used, at any rate in that sense; many words might with equal right be placed here and in 4.6. Cf. also plural mass-words 5 28

4.71. Articles of dress, etc

trousers with subspecies *drawers breeches* (5.792). *knickerbockers* or *knickers tights*. *pantaloons*, and with more or less humorous synonyms. *inexpressibles unmentionables unwhisperables*. *indescribables*, etc. *Trouser* sg is rare (Stevenson D 3 I have scarcely a decent trouser in my wardrobe).

braces . suspenders
spatterdashes
*stays**. (*bodice* 5 712).
spectacles . (eye-glasses)
trappings.
academicals . regimentals . (widows') *weeds*

4.72. Instruments or tools

scissors (5 73) *shears snuffers pincers . tongs . tweezers forceps* see 2 67

bellows gallows (5 712)

arms (*arm* sg is late and rare, *weapon* is the ordinary word)

fetters (sg *fetter* rare) *manacles* (sg *manacle* rare)

compasses (4 62)

scales, the sg used of one of the dishes in which things are weighed but also of the instrument as a whole.

4.73. To denote a single one of those objects that are composed of two equal or similar halves, the word *pair* is used: *a pair of trousers, a pair of spectacles, a pair of scissors, a pair of tongs*, etc. This affords the means of denoting several such objects *two pairs of trousers, three pairs of scissors*, etc. But without this addition these words may stand for one or more objects *I wore blue trousers, all Danish soldiers wear blue trousers* In the latter sentence we may say that we have a plural (though undifferentiated) of the word as it appears in the former sentence.

4.74. Places, buildings, institutions, etc

archives, sg *archive* rare

barracks, (5 741)

hustings, (ib).

shambles, (ib).

environs . outskirts purlieus — all of them sometimes in the sg

straits (the Straits of Gibraltar, etc)

eaves, see 5 631.

stairs, generally pl, rare in the sg *stair*: Di N 729 he sat down upon a broken stair | Barrie MO 17 I would call up the stair | Stevenson M 162 up a stone stair.. and up more stairs again | ib. 170 a broad flight of marble stairs . several enclosed stairs led to the upper storeys | James S 102 She heard him on the stair | Chesterton F 213 a short winding stair; but ib. 241 down the empty stairs. In the sg also in the original sense 'step' as Di T 1 276 dozing on the topmost stair.

premises (4.62).

(head) quarters (4 62)

lodgings, generally in the pl, though the sg *lodging* is by no means rare: Congreve 264 in the stage direction: At Valentine's Lodging, but 265 in the play: at his own lodgings | Quincey 136 a decent lodging | Di D 143, 433, 579 lodging | Thack E 2 133 going to live in a lodging | Stevenson D 110 lodgings, but 114 another lodging, lodging also p. 116, 139, 140 | Caine M 340 in a lodging | Gissing B 49 the lodging he had occupied | ib. 51 His lodgings were in an ugly street | ib 54 it would have led him to seek other lodgings | ib 470 a cheap and obscure lodging — Always *board and lodging*. — *Lodgings* rare as a sg (5.741).

Here we may also mention such plural place-names as *the Hebrides* | *the West Indies* (pl of the obsolete *Indy*, *Indie*, now *India*) and *the East Indies* | *the Bermudas* | *the Netherlands* | *the Brazils* (now usually *Brazil* sg). — But most place-names with plural forms are now treated as singulars (5 742).

4.75. Parts of the body

bowels entrails . intestines . giblets . (posterior's genitals).

brains (5.752)

lights (the lungs) . *withers.*

gums (occasionally sg *gum*).

thews (orig meaning 'manners, morals', but from the EIE period 'sinews, muscular power')

whiskers, sg *whisker* rare (*moustache* see 4.15)

4.76. Doings, occupations (especially games):

nuptials (Sh often sg *nuptial*). *obsequies*. *(funerals* Sh in the sense of modern sg *funeral).*

billiards. *bowls dominoes draughts*. *ninepins*. *quoits*. *skittles* (For *chess* see 5.711)

auspices

matins (rarely sg as in Scott Poet. 310 No time for matin or for mass). *vespers*

antics

Here might be mentioned the words in *-ics* (5.775)

theatricals

annals (rare sg *annal* 'record for one year')

credentials. *tidings*

Some verbal nouns in *-ings* scarcely occur except in the pl: *doings*. *goings-on* (apart from the employment in 'abbreviated clauses' like *on account of his doing that*)

4.77. The word *teens* (= 13, 14 up to 19) only occurs in the pl, as in Gissing B 167 she had long been out of her teens.

Collectives.

4.811. A *collective noun* is defined in the NED as "a substantive which (in the singular) denotes a collection or number of individuals". We may accept this definition (though it does not always agree with the practice followed in that dictionary), and give as examples *a library* = 'collection of books', *a train* (railway-carriages), *a forest* (trees), *a nation* (men and women), *an army* (soldiers). All of these may be used with such words as *one* (*one library*, etc), or *that*, and we may use them in the plural: *libraries*, *trains*, etc

4.812. But other collectives cannot be thus used, e g *cattle* (= collection of oxen, etc) or *vermin* (= small destructive animals). These latter approach mass-words (about which see 5 2); they take the verb in the pl as a matter of course

Stevenson D 234 as the birds sing or *cattle bellow* | Kipl J 1 245 the *cattle do* not like it | Swift T 48 all other *vermin were* destroyed | Kipl J 2 220 when the *game are* moving so well.

Examples with *these, those* (cf. 4.87). Norris P 339 *those cattle* (also Haggard S 306) | Fielding T 1 303 *these vermin* (also Doyle NP, Bookman 1911 p. 191).

Some of these words, however, were formerly used as singular words throughout *a game* = a flock or herd, still sometimes in "a game of swans" (NED)

4.813. To return to the usual type of collectives. According as the idea of plurality is more or less prominent in the mind of the speaker, there is in all languages and at all times a tendency to forget the fact that collectives are grammatically singular, and we often find plural constructions, partial or total. It suffices here to remind the reader of the original collective (sg) character of the Arian (Greek and Latin) pl neuters in *-a* (Latin *opera*, etc), of the plural verb after F *plupart* (la plupart disent), and *beaucoup* (literally 'a fine stroke' beaucoup disent), etc Two OE examples will suffice to show the antiquity of the tendency in English: Chron. 894 *se dæl* (sg) þe þæi aweg *com* (sg) *wurdon* (pl) on fleame *generede* (pl) | Apoll 26 *seo* (sg) *burhuaru* þa *gelæhton* (pl) Strangulionem and his wif and *læddon* (pl) ut, etc In ModE the tendency is perhaps stronger than in most other languages, because so few verb forms and hardly any adjective forms show any distinction at all between the two numbers It should, however, be noticed that it is only with collectives denoting living beings that the pl construction is found: words like *library* or *train* never take the verb in the pl. And then also distance plays some part, the plural construction occurring more easily at some distance from the sg substantive (*they* in the next sentence, etc) than in immediate contact with it

4.814. In some cases the sg and pl conceptions are fairly distinct, with *family*, for instance, we may think

now of the group (of relatives) as one, opposed to other families (*mine is an old family*), and now less of the group than of the individuals composing it (*my family are early risers*).

Thus also *clergy* is either *a body* (of clergymen) or (a body of) *clergymen*, as in "whether it is better to have a clergy that marries than one that does not marry" on the one hand, and "the clergy were all opposed to the measure" on the other But in other instances no such distinction is easily observable

It is a matter of course that I give as examples of the two constructions only such as present some formal characteristic of either number This is not always observed, in the NED, for instance, under *clergy* 2 a 'construed as collective plural', out of 11 quotations only one shows a formal pl (*are*)

4.821. The sg construction is seen in

Sh Hml II 2.370 the *nation holds* it no sinne | Sh Oth I 1 84 *is* all your *familie* within? | Pope Man 4 213 thy *family is* young | Notice (in NED) the *public is* expected to protect what is intended for the public enjoyment | Macaulay H 2 204 the *government was* dissatisfied with Kirke | NP '11 the Unionist *party has* a large task before it if *it* is to offer effective opposition | Bennett B 155 the yellow drawing-room, where *Royalty receives its* friends.

4.822. Examples of the verb in the pl

Sh H6B IV 2 13 *The nobilitie thinke* scorne to goe in leather aprons | Mcb IV 3 141 There *are a crew* of wretched soules | Cor II 2 136 *the Senate*, Coriolanus, *are* well pleas'd to make thee Consull (examples of the pl are not very numerous in Sh) | Defoe G 26 the antient *nobility value themselves* above the created nobility | ib 61 the *clergy are* richer | Di D 279 *the family take* breakfast at half-past nine | Bronte P 29 *Are the police* after you? | Ru S 6 unless I feel that *my audience are* either with me or against me . I must know where *they* are | Wilde S 27 *The public are* to him non-existent | Scott A 2.1 he found that *his womankind were* not upon duty | Mac-

aulay H 2 172 In that village the Wiltshire *militia were* quartered | Roosevelt A 295 raw *militia are* utterly incompetent to make head against regular forces | Kipl J 2.14 below him *were the vanguard* of the deer | Ru S 1 249 the *clergy were* sincere | Caine C 373 the *clergy are* not your friends | Scott A 2 155 the Scottish *peasantry are* still infected with that rage for funeral ceremonial | Macaulay H 2 181 the *peasantry were* accustomed to serve in the militia | Kingsley H 260 the *soldiery are* scattered | Di T 1.51 other *company were* there

4.823. The plural idea may be shown in various other ways than that of the plural verb, e.g by *all* (cf. also *they* . . .) Mi A 40 the *Clergy themselvs* | Fielding 3 587 our *crew were all* dead drunk | Austen S 349 the *family were* again *all* restored to each other | Austen M 145 uninterrupted enjoyment to the *party themselves* | Caine M 80 the *family were all* at home | Mill L 8 *Mankind are* greater *gainers* by suffering each other to live as seems good to themselves | Bennett W 1.108 the *choir* knelt and covered *their* faces | ib. 2 161 the *police themselves* would not credit it | Zangwill G 184 the *committee* congratulated *themselves.*

4.83. A plural verb is common with words indicating number, part etc More U 248 the *mooste part* of them *doo* passe vs | Sh H4A IV 3.27 the *better part* of ours *are* full of rest | Goldsm 628a the young *couple.* it seems, *are* just setting out for Scotland | Johnson R 69 of my companions, the greater *part were* in the grave | Austen M 80 here *are* the greatest *number* of our plants | Ru S 1.23 spaces of waste ground, of which *part serve* for military exercises | Ellis M 284 What *proportion* of women *are* ordinarily healthy? | Sinclair IR 116 there *are any number* of studies by independent investigators

This usage is recognized with *plenty* = a large supply, a great number' . there *were plenty* of pictures | Bennett W 2 265 There *are plenty* of other places. (*A plenty* is obsolete or American).

The exactly corresponding use of *abundance*, which the NED considers 'less correct' (why?) and exemplifies from Barbour, T. Brown 1687 and Fielding, is found also in Defoe R 2 112 *abundance were* kill'd and wounded | Stuart Mill in Fox 2 274 there *are abundance* of subjects on which I should like a little communion with you

4.841. The verb in the plural number is also very frequent with words which do not in themselves denote a plurality of beings, but acquire that signification by metonymy *the parish* (or *Asia*) = the inhabitants of the parish (or Asia), *the Quarterly* = the writers in the Quarterly Review, etc:

MI T 95 *all Asia Lament* to see the folhe of their King | Lamb R 68 *all the village remember* the story | Scott A 2 224 what *say* the *rest of Fairport*? | GE M 2 222 all well drest *St. Oggs and its neighbourhood were* there | Hardy F 36 *all the parish notice* it | Pope Lock 1 91 when the *world imagine* women stray | Austen P 19 *All the world are* good | Stevenson M 249 *all the world imagine* they will be exceptional when they grow wealthy | By DJ 4 113 Her *cargo* . . *were* landed [viz slaves] | Benson D 224 Half the *hotel were* scandalised at her | Kipl J 1 22 all the *jungle fear* Bagheera | AV Prov 31 21 all her *houshold are* cloathed with scarlet | Di Do 250 even the *household were* sorry | Kipl S 29 my *house* never *dream* of doing these things | McCarthy 2 273 the *Gouvernement were* not able to resist this resolution | Goldsm 632b our *sex are* like poor tradesmen, that put all their best goods to be seen at the window | GE Mm 49 Your *sex are* not thinkers | Shelley 62 Since *kin were* cold | Ward M 202 *Aren't* the true *Church* the people who are justified by the event? | Caine C 367 to tell the *'quality' their* fortunes | McCarthy 2.518 the *court were* unanimous in finding England responsible | Doyle First 105 the Portsmouth *bench are* severe upon assaults | Shelley Pr 293 the *Quarterly are* going to review me | Kipl S 244 the *Sixth* [form] can't protect *emselves* | ib 252 the Sixth *were* too taken aback.

Similarly *each* in the following quotation has the vb in the pl, because it stands for *each class*: Ru C 28 the busy rich people.. the busy poor people But each look for the faults of the other [NB not *others*] This of course is different from the repetition of *each* by *they* in 5.56.

4.842. Often the plural construction is shown, not by the verb, but by some other word, for instance *they*:

Sh Hml III 4 173 *heauen* [= the heavenly powers] hath pleas'd it so That I must be *their* scourge and minister [other examples see Sh-lex. 528] | Sh H 5 III Prol 26 Behold the *ordenance* [= the guns] on *their* carriages | Scott A 2.25 when the *legislature* abolished the laws against witchcraft, *they* had no hope of destroying the superstitious feelings of humanity | Benson D 26 *London* did not come and seek her at her own house, but preferred asking her to *theirs* | Kipl L 49 no man is strong enough to take liberties with his *public*, even though *they* be all you say they are.

4.85. When a relative pronoun is wanted to refer to a collective denoting human beings, *which* is used if the singular idea is present to the mind, and *who* if the plural idea is present, though sometimes with some degree of inconsistency

Mi PL 4.733 a *race* To fill the Earth, *who* shall with us extol Thy goodness infinite | Swift J 80 desiring I would take some care of their poor *town*, *who*, he says, will lose *their* liberties . . the town had behaved themselves so ill to me, so little regarded the advice I gave them, and disagreed so much among themselves, that I was resolved never to have more to do with them | Johnson R 60 *a nation* at once pastoral and warlike, *who live* without any settled . . | Scott A 1.309 he joined the *party*, *who were* walking before them | ib. 1 315 you find me in *society who are* satisfied by the degree of information which I have thought it proper to communicate | ib. 1 318 he met me in *society which* of itself *was* a warrant to all the world | Scott Iv 288 that *scum of mankind who* are swarming |

Byron Ch H I. 16·a *nation, who lack,* yet loathe the hand that waves the sword | GE Mm 217 The Garth *family, which was* rather a large one, for Mary had four brothers and one sister, *were* very fond of their old house | Kipl L 52 he has caught the note that catches a *public who think* with their boots and read with their elbows | Lecky D 1 78 democratic equality among a *population who were* entirely unfit for it.

[Bacon A 19 12 Noah and his sonnes, *which was* the chiefe *family* of the earth]

4.86. Pretty frequently a word of this class is construed with respect to one word as a sg and with respect to another in the same sentence as a pl. (I count *whole* as an indication of the sg construction):

More U 140 *euery family maketh their* owne | Sh John V 3. 9 the great *supply* That *was* expected by the Dolphin heere, *Are* wrack'd | Coleridge P 96 nodding *their* heads before her *goes* the merry *minstrelsy* | Scott A 2 351 *an army* destroy *their* artillery | Fielding 3.597 the *whole parish are* alarmed with his bellowing | Scott A 2.73 the *whole family were* still on foot | GE Mm 217, above | GE A 233 there *was a* grand *band* hired from Rosseter, *who,* with *their* wonderful wind-instruments and puffed-out cheeks, *were themselves* a delightful show to the small boys | Norris O 647 our own dear *Railroad* openly *acknowledges* him as *their* candidate | Stevenson B 181 the *whole* of the *remainder* ran for *their* lives | McCarthy 2 329 the *public,* as *a whole, were* not enthusiastic | Hope R 203 All *that crowd* of people *know* that the King is here.

This shows that the distinction sometimes made between a collective (construed as a sg) and a noun of multitude (construed as a pl) cannot be kept up, as the same word may be both within the same sentence

4.87. Some collective nouns are often used with a plural adjective like *these,* thus even a word like *crew* (*these crew* = *this crew*), though *family* is never thus construed:

Scott L 579 *these gentry* never know | Lamb E 1.197 *these* small *gentry* (also Caine E 130 and Hewlett Q 34 | Carlyle R 1 83 *those* old Seceder *clergy* | Collingwood R 238 *these clergy* | Scott A 1 38 *these* cursed *womankind* always leave their tubs in the passage | Shelley 560 (185) one of *those* deluded *crew* | Kipl B 27 [vg] of all *them* black-faced *crew* | Hawth S 104 the hostile feelings with which the child regarded all *these offspring* of her own heart and mind

This explains the more unusual *those* (which some editors emend into *that* or *this*) in Sh Tw I 2 10 *those* poor *number* saued with you

4.88. The next step is that some collectives may be qualified by *many* or *few*

Kipling J 2 77 I had too *many cattle* | Macaulay E 4 48 innumerable waggons, *innumerable cattle*, remained | Finnemore, Famous Englishmen 2 197 the *few cattle* they possessed || Barrie M 268 *many gentry* | Kipl L 27 the *few* — the very few—English *cavalry* rode down the laggards

4.89. And finally we have even a numeral before them *twenty police* = a police force of twenty With *cattle* this is found as far back as 1535 (twenty small catell, NED), but with other words it is more recent Elphinstone (1765, I 226) says "*many people* Yet propriety can no more, however common be the practice, say *two or three people*, for *two or three persons*, than *two or three cattle*, for *two or three beasts*, etc Nor do we ever hear of *two or three company*, for *two or three guests*, though often of *many company* for *much company*" (For *people* see 4 91).

With *police* and *cattle* this use of a "numeral plural" is extremely frequent in modern speech and newspapers, with *harlotry* and some of the other words it is very rare

McCarthy 2.326 about 80,000 *cattle* had been attacked by the disease | Caine C 21 a staff of *six clergy* | ib 266 there were *eighty clergy* | Collier Engl 111 the church with its *twenty-eight thousand clergy* | Wister R 14 the *two* In

dian *police* | NP 06 a fly which gives birth to a *million offspring* is doing nothing unusual | By 564 he loved his Queen—And thrice a *thousand harlotry* besides | Taine Notes on England 263 The *two counsel* turn their man inside out | Macaulay E 4 38 nine *hundred* English *infantry* | ib. 4 47 forty *thousand infantry* | Doyle NP '95 with *five hundred infantry*

Farrow means 'litter of pigs', but is sometimes used with a numeral: Sh Meb IV 1 65 [sow] that hath eaten Her *nine farrow*, quoted in Byron DJ I. 2.

According to Sweet (NEGr § 1973), in *twenty clergy walking in procession* "the collective is preferred because it implies that it was not a fortuitous assemblage of *clergymen*, but that they walked in procession through being members of one organization" Sweet says (§ 1972) that such groups as *twenty people, these vermin, many cattle*, etc, are 'ungrammatical', and (§ 116) that we have an 'antigrammatical' construction in *the party were assembled*, but this is really taking too narrow a view of what is "grammatical". Grammar, as well as logic, must count with the fact that some words may in one respect, or originally, be singular and yet express a plural idea and therefore be treated as plurals

Collectives. Special Cases.

4.911. *People* first like F *peuple* means 'nation' and as such is still used as a sb in the **sg.** The pl *peoples* (= 'nations') seems to have gone out of common use in the 16th c, it is found twice in AV, but neither in Sh, Milton nor Pope, in 1830 it seems to have been strange and to require justification (see NED 1 c), but Carlyle uses it often, and it is pretty frequent in recent books:

Morley (in NED) All our English-speaking peoples | Haggard S 62 the Persians and other peoples | Macdonald F 296 civilised peoples | Roosevelt A 290 the white peoples

In this sense *people*, like *family* and other similar collectives, may take the vb in the pl, even if it is preceded by *a*

Macaulay E 4 306 *a people who have* much in common with children | McCarthy 2 232 *a people who*, say

what *they* may, *hate* us as a nation. Cf. also Defoe G 64 the example of *that* stupid people, *who*, fond of *their* old follys, would . .

A second signification, which is now the prevailing one, is 'men (human beings) in general' (F *gens*) In Ch it takes the vb in the sg in F 221 *As lewed peple demeth*, but in the pl ib. 252 *Thus seyn the peple.* Cf. AV 2 Sam 17.29 the people that *were* with him . . . the people *is* hungrie Now it is always felt to be plural, as in Scott L 578 literary people, *who walk* with their noses in the air It may really be described now as an irregular (substitutive 2 21) pl of *person* (the form *persons* is not very frequently used), see for instance Wilde S 77 it is equally true of what are called *educated people* For *an educated person's* ideas of Art are drawn naturally from what Art has been.

In this sense it now also takes an adjective in the plural, instead of Malory's *much people* (121 moche peple | 123 how moche people ther was slayne, cf. ib. 130 soo was al the peple sory for hym; but also 122 a fewe peple) we have now *many people*, and the word is very frequently preceded by a numeral I do not know how old this usage is (the NED is silent about it); examples:

Defoe P 31 two people dying | ib 98 a thousand people | Beaconsf L 159 three thousand people | Di D 158 twenty thousand people. Cf. 4.89

Thus even with *one or two*, although of course it is not possible to say *one people* in the sense of 'one person'. Di Do 123 *one or two people* might drop in | Hope R 35 There were *one or two people* in the hall | Wells L 44 *one or two people* had gone down the lane.

4.912. *Folk* is quite obsolete in the sense 'a nation'; it is now used exclusively in the sense 'men, people'. construed as a pl. The new pl *folks* is used in the same sense; the oldest example in NED is from 1413, but it is found in Ch B 2498 (Harleian MS) alle straunge folkes (other MSS *folk* or *folke*); cf. also below. According to

NED *folks* "since 17th c. is the ordinary form, the sg [that is, the form *folk*, which I should not call a real singular] being arch. or dial." I have quotations for *folks* from Udall (Roister 49), Marlowe (F 410), Sh, Swift, Defoe (R 2.23 his country-folks), Fielding, Austen, Lamb, Thackeray (very frequent), Kingsley, Whittier, Hawthorne, Merriman, Gosse Hope, Jackson, Herrick (the American), and for *folk* from Hardy, Hope, Collingwood, Edward Carpenter, Pett Ridge, O. W. Holmes. Fielding 8.419 and 430 has *gentlefolks* In Mrs Ward F 192 Lord Findon says *gentlefolk*, and his daughter *a good many gentlefolks*. An American friend told me that *folk* was quite common, and *folks* "awfully bookish", but it would seem that quite recently *folk* has been gaining ground in England NED has *gentlefolks* from Shakespeare onwards, but *gentlefolk* only in the 19th c.

The use of a numeral with *folk(s)*, though more than 500 years old, is not very frequent, much rarer than with *people*; NED has examples only from 1450 and 1641, see also.

Ch Parl 278 two yonge folkes cryde (some MSS folk ther) | Thack N 27 two young folks of eighteen | Doyle R 105 three folk

Cp with this development of *people* and *folk* the corresponding Danish: *meget folk* has been supplanted by *mange folk* 'many people', *de godtfolk* 'those (pl) good (-g) people'

4.92. As *troop* means 'a body of soldiers', the pl with a numeral has the same signification (thus in the first quotation); but besides it is often used with a higher numeral to indicate the number of soldiers, not of 'troops'

Macaulay H 2 166 he scattered *two troops* of rebel horse | ib. 2.171 the King's forces consisted of about *two thousand five hundred* regular *troops* | NP '03 the authorities having only 600 *troops* at their disposal

4.93. In the case of such a word as *fry* we may distinguish between four different usages; for the first three I take quotations from the NED, where the fourth

is not exemplified: (a) individual singular: an innumerable yonge frie of these flying fishes (Sparke), (b) collective singular so numerous was their fry (Cowper), (c) collective plural: The fry of the aquatic races are almost as different from their parents as the caterpillar from the butterfly (Woodward), (d) real or "numeral plural": Five hundred fry, there playing, were turned into the river (quoted ESt 12.374)

4.94. A similarly complicated case is afforded by the word *youth*, which may mean: (a) the state of being young, (b) young people collectively, with plural or singular construction, (c) a young man, with the pl *youths*. The sense-development is similar to that of *blackguard*, G *frauenzimmer*, F *camarade* etc., which come to mean individuals; cf. also Norwegian *ungdom* (Bjornson, På Guds veje 247 Karl eller en anden ungdom fra skole). All these significations are found in Sh., more recent examples are:

Fielding T 2 314 for what other purpose are our youth instructed (b) | Wordsw P 6 3 one among the youth, who . reunite (b) | ib 6.19 such privilege has youth, that cannot take long leave of pleasant thoughts (b) | ib 6.95 the vague reading of a truant youth (c) | ib. 6.108 by common inexperience of youth (b, or a?) | ib 6 141 these thoughts that were a frequent comfort to my youth (a, = to me in my young age) | Thack N 26 among the British youth his contemporaries (b) | Ru S 2 different classes of youth (b) | Ru C 160 you soldier youths (c) | ib 161 soldier youth are especially tempted (b) | ib 164 courage is a mere matter of course among any ordinarily well-born youths (c).—*Many youth* and *twenty youth* are not found instead of *youths*.

4.95. *Acquaintance* similarly signifies (a) knowledge, or the state of being acquainted, (b) collectively, those with whom one is acquainted, with verb in sg or pl, (c) individually, one among a person's "acquaintance b." Nowadays (b) is rare; in some instances of (b) one is tempted to believe that the sound [s] represents [sɪz] by

haplology, see 1 7.83, or [ts], the pl of the old *acquaintant* (NED from 1611 to 1704 Swift) The pl *acquaintances* was recognized by Johnson in his dictionary, though never found in his own writings (see note R 194) I give here only examples of (b) and (c)

Congreve 268 I have very *few acquaintance* | Swift J 60 and 3 264 *many acquaintance* | ib. 140 *we* are grown common *acquaintance* | Fielding T 3 68 they had formerly been intimate *acquaintance and friends* | Gibbon M 169 the *many new acquaintance* which I had contracted [NB]; cf ib 154,170 | Goldsm 647 his *acquaintance give* him a very different character | Johnson R 78 his politeness attracted *many acquaintance* | Austen E 7 she had *many acquaintances* in the place | Austen P 180 they had *many acquaintance* in common (this is very frequent in Miss Austen) | Quincey 163 She had *few acquaintance* | Lamb E 1 23 those *few acquaintances* of theirs | Kingsley H 70 a whole regiment of *women acquaintances* | Thack S 142 a genteel congregation of curious *acquaintance* in the pews | ib 142 all the carriages of *all our acquaintance* | Thack N 120 falling in love with her *new acquaintances* | Hawth S 211 inquiries such as any *two acquaintance* might have made | Ward M 71 any other of her new *acquaintances* | Zangwill G 218 one of my *friends or acquaintances* —A good paradoxical illustration of (a) and (c) together is Gissing R 107 Never again shall I go to see *acquaintances* with whom I have no *acquaintance*

The signification (c), and perhaps already (b), leads in the 19th c to the new formation *acquaintanceship* for (a); NED from 803 Barrie T 170 Those acquaintanceships had seldom ripened | Wells U 224 we pass into acquaintanceships

Kindred (OE *cynrǽden*, ME *kinreden* sb sg 'kinship') in Shakespeare according to Al Schmidt has the verb three times in the singular and three times in the plural.

4.96. Though *an enemy* (and *that enemy*) refers always to a single hostile being, *the enemy* is very often

used with a plural verb in the sense 'the hostile forces, the enemies':

Sh Cæs IV. 3 199 'Tis better that *the Eneme seeke* vs [? subjunctive] | Defoe R 2.64 the *enemy uere* too many . . *they* did not keep together | Thack N 354 *the enemy were* upon him | Kipl L 27 *the enemy were* flying . . . the *remnant of the enemy were* retiring. (Never for instance. *too many enemy* or *some of his enemy*) —Both sg and pl· Swift G 78 the enemy *was* so frighted when *they* saw me

Thus also *the military*. NP '03 *The military have* been withdrawn from the public squares (11.4).

4.971. Difficulties of a different order arise in connexion with the words *many* and *few*, which are adjectives as well as collective substantives *Many*, preceded by *a* (which would seem to show it to a be a substantive) does not, if the NED is right (?), go back to the OE subst *menigeo* 'multitudo', but is due to the analogy of *a few* (see 4.972); confusion with *meine* (< OF *meine*, *mesnie* < Lat **mansionata*) is not excluded

Examples. Sh Merch III. 5 73 I doe know *A many fooles* that stand in better place | Wiv III 3.77 like *a-manie of* these lisping-hauthorne buds | BJo 3.108 *A many of* these fears would put me into some villainous disease Defoe R 244 making *a many antick gestures* | Tennyson 39 a They have not shed *a many tears* | Thack H 118 such *a many things* —*A many* is now vulgar, as in GE M 1.172 *a many things* | Di Do 136 *a many fares* | Caine C 133 *a many chawnces* | ib 170 | Wells T 35 there's *a-many* have tried to dig

The substantival character is still more evident in the combination *a great* (or *good*) *many*; this does not seem to occur in Sh, the oldest examples (without *of*) in NED are from 1690 and 1776, in the 19th c. examples abound.

Examples of *that many*:

Hardy F 201 you can only marry one of *that many* | Mead, Word-Coinage 1 there are three thousand English words not to be found in any dictionary . . . there are at

least thrice *that many* . . . In the latter quotation *that* is verging on the adverbial *that* treated in chapter XVI; but in the former we have rather a parallel to the unified plural treated in 5 1, cf *that few* 4.972 and *that all* in By 574 All are gone forth, and of *that all* how few Perhaps return.

4.972. *A few* goes back to the 13th c. (Orrm 2 335 *ane fæwe*; NED only from 1297); it must be compared with the obsolete use of *a* before a cardinal numeral (*a forty* = 'about forty'). The difference between *few* and *a few* is the same as between *little* and *a little*, a corresponding distinction does not exist with *many*.

Examples: Sh Merch III. 2 254 Heere are *a few of* the vnpleasant'st words That euer blotted paper | H5 II 2.89 *a few light crownes* | Shelley 350 *a few sad years*.

In many cases an adjective is added to *few*, which is thus shown to be taken by the popular instinct to be a substantive on account of *a*:

Carlyle R 1.122 for *a good few years* to come | Morris N 75 about these docks are *a good few houses* | Phillpotts M 78 He's said *a good few very rude things* | Hardy L 208 the boats . *A good few of* 'em were so made || Lloyd Phon St III. 277 a *very slender few* | ib. IV. 204 *a feeble few* || Harraden Sh 76 these were the philosophers of the colony *a select and dainty few* in any colony | McCarthy 2.636 the exclusive property of *a very select few* | Thack S 90 what can *a single poor few* do? . . . even these few are too many | Wordsw P 3.498 among *an eager few* || Very frequently as in Bennett W 2.242 in *another few* years.

But the (original) adjectival character of *few* is still occasionally shown by an adverb, as in Trollope D 1.53 restraining her choice among *comparatively a few* | Prof. Newton in Nature, Sept 15.'87.464 It was only a few — *an extremely few* — among them who ever gave the question any consideration at all, and these few . .

The occasional *that few* is similar to *that many* and to *that two weeks*, etc (5.16)

Tenn 234a *that honest few*, Who give the Fiend himself his due | McCarthy 2 283 These things lived only in the minds of a few, and even of *that few* not many were anxious to dwell upon them

In slang *a few* is used = 'a little'.

So few a with a sg substantive does not seem to be found later than the 15th c · Malory 50 there was *so feue a felaushyp*

Chapter V.

Meaning of Number. Continued.

Unification of Plurals.

5.11. The same double function (that of adjectives and that of collective substantives) which is thus found in *many* and *few*, is also found in numerals. The words *hundred*, *thousand*, *million*, *dozen*, were originally substantives and are still genuine substantives in combinations like *hundreds* (*thousands*, *millions*, *dozens*) *of people*, but they are generally looked upon as adjectives in *two hundred* (*two thousand*, *three million*) *people*, *six dozen collars* In *a hundred people* (*one hundred people*) as in *a many bottles* and *a few bottles* grammarians disagree as to the 'part of speech', for us the question is of little importance, so long as we recognize *a hundred*, etc , as a group adjunct (cf 1 83)

5.12. This double function is then extended to other numerals, which were originally pure adjectives Thus we get *a twain* with the meaning 'a pair, a couple': Sh Ant I 1.38 such *a twaine* | Tp IV 1.103 to blesse *this twaine*, that they may prosperous be | Shelley 249 (= Prom. II. 2 1) The path through which *that lovely twain* Have passed.

Other numerals· Hardy F 200 breaking the third of *that Terrible Ten* [= ten Commandments] | NP '92 the whole four of us | Tenn 327 b a fourth and of *that four*

the mightiest | Trollope O 60 they, *that happy two*, would . | *a second college eight* [= crew of a rowing boat]

Cp also *a deuce* (at dice) from the F numeral *deux*.

Thus with *any* and *every* (rarely *each*): Kipl J 2 9 he knew as much as *any five* of the Jungle people put together | Sh Ant V 2 278 in *euery tenne* [women] that they make, the diuels marre fiue | *each two* had a servant behind their chairs.

5.131. A plural may be formed from these numerals used as singulars (the result being a "plural raised to the second power"), cf *hundreds*, etc , e g

Mered H 148 the sons of first-rate families are in the *two elevens* [= cricket teams] | Hope C 97 the *twos* [= two couples] could neither be separated from one another nor united with anybody else | Kipl First 97 there was no trade discount, no reckoning *twelves* as *thirteens* | Poe S 307 *sixes* having been thrown twice in succession by a player at dice | Barrie MO 77 *Two tens* [= ten pound notes], and the rest in gold | Carlyle R 2 199 what had been set forth by me *tens* of times before | Haggard S 291 for many *tens* of thousands of years | Tylor A 18 why we reckon by *tens* instead of the more convenient *twelves*

5.132. The last example leads up to the extremely frequent use of plurals of numerals in distributive phrases, especially after *by*

Sh Cor II 3 16 we are to come *by ones*, *by twoes* and *by threes* | Mi PL XI 735 Of every beast, and bird, and insect small Came *sevens*, and pairs | Tenn 173 b the Muses and the Graces grouped in *threes* | Thack E 2 290 our friends having come by parties of *twos* and *threes* | Kingsley H 72 they melted off, by *twos* and *threes* | Hughes T 2 121 they broke up into *twos* and *threes* and parted | Caine S 1 6 he could count the sheep, not by *ones* and *twos*, but by *fours* and *sixes* | Jerome T 127 they came in *ones*, they came in little parties | Tylor A 302 they wrought statues by *tens* of thousands

5.14. We have a special application of the unification of numerals in arithmetical expressions: *three nines* = three times (the amount of) nine, as in Sh LL V. 2.495 I alwaies tooke *three threes* for nine | Wint IV. 4.345 these *foure-threes* of heardsmen Cf. also Mered H 148 a renowned out-hitter, good to finish a score brilliantly with a pair of *threes* (three runs at cricket)

It is easily seen that this plural of a cardinal numeral is entirely different from the use of *eights* = figures of 8 (three 3's in a row | her *threes* and *fives* are too much alike, cp three A's).—Still other plurals of numerals are seen in Swift J 113 candles . . They are good *sixes* in the pound || Zangwill G 314 my boots are only *sevens* after all [of the size 7] | Bennett W 1 99 gloves . . you'll want more of *seven-and-three-quarters* and *eights* than anything || ib. 1.186 she would be twenty-seven next birthday But it would not be a real twenty-seven; nor would Sam's forty be a real forty, like other people's *twenty-sevens* and *forties*.

5.15. A meaningless pl is found in the phrase *on all fours*, formerly *on all four*, also used figuratively 'evenly, squarely'; there is also a game at cards called *all-fours*.

Sterne 17 the comparison between them runs *upon all-four* || Defoe R 211 to creep *upon all fours* | Wells A 158 . . . is really *on all fours* with the wonderful Rodin | ib 304 then the question of sexual relationships would be entirely *on all fours* with, and probably very analogous to, the question of golf. [It is not impossible that at one time the phrase was, "one man on all four", but "several men on all fours" Or is the *s* simply the adverbial *s*, as in *towards*, vg *somewheres*, etc ?]

Similarly the old phrase *at six and seven* is now made into a plural *at sixes and sevens*:

Sh R2 II 2.121 All is vneuen, and euery thing is left *at six and seuen* (thus also Bacon, see notes to R2) | Goldsm 611b when I see things going *at sixes and sevens* | Scott A 2 1 all goes *to sixes and sevens*.

5.16. In all these cases the numeral which was 'unified' was itself a principal But the unification also to a great extent takes place when the numeral is an

adjunct, the whole plural word-group being treated as a singular, as shown by the form of the verb or by a singular adjective, or by both in the same sentence. This power of showing grammatically that a plurality is to be considered as a unity of a higher order, is unparalleled in any cognate language One of the reasons why it has thus gained ground in English, is probably to be sought in the fact that adjectives have no numerical inflexion; a combination like *a delightful three weeks* would be felt to be too incongruous in a language in which *delightful* would either have a distinctive sg or a distinctive pl ending

Some grammarians would restrict our phenomenon to combinations with *this* and explain it as being due to the old plural form *this* instead of *these*, cf Ch MP 3 37 a siknesse That I have suffred *this eight yere* | Malory 119 withm *this* XX *yere* But this does not cover the whole phenomenon, and we find comparatively early examples with other words than *this* showing the syntactical tendency which is so fully developed in Modern English, e g (Ch) Ros 990 These arowes fyve Contrarie to *that other fyve* (the original has contraire as autres cinq floiches)

5.161. The verb-form alone shows the unification Sh VA 522 *Is twenty hundred kisses* such a trouble? | R2 I. 3 260 what *is sixe winters*, they are quickly gone? | LLL I 1 181 *three years is* but short | Defoe R 341 the 872 *moidores*, which *was* indisposed of | Sheridan Dram W 83 *forty yards is* a good distance | Di N 187 *Fifteen shillings* a week *is* not much | Di Do 25 *seven-eighths* of my stock *is* old-fashioned | Macaulay E 71 about *one hundred and forty thousand pounds* sterling *was* distributed | *two is* company, *three is* none | Ward E 248 *Three is* no company | Kipl L 107 *Is your three hundred* a year safe? It's in consols | Mered H 112 from Bodley *is ten miles* to Beckley

5.162. The plural combination is preceded by *one* Sh H5 IV 3 16 But *one ten thousand* of those men | Coi IV 1 55 *one seuen yeares* | Thack P 3 343 I don't care

one twopence 'a'p'ny whether your word's true or not | Soames Reader 18 for *one short seven days.*

The plural combination is preceded by *a(n)*:

BJo 3 182 was there ever such *a two yards* of knighthood | Shelley Pr 301 we have spent *a* miserable *five months* | Darwin L 1 238 I do not think I ever spent *a* more delightful *three weeks* | Quiller M 153 *a* good *three-quarters* of a mile away | Kipl J 2 188 now it was *a* bare *six inches* | Vachell H 176 after making *an* honest *fifteen runs* | Doyle M 44 for six months I have had to wait, *a* weary *six months* they have been | Hope R 220 after such *a two days* of work

It will be seen that the indefinite article is often a means for placing an adjective, which would otherwise be differently interpreted *an honest fifteen runs* is not the same as *fifteen honest runs.*

5.163. Examples with *another* or *a (the) second*·

'Kipl J 2 97 at the end of *another ten days* | Haggard S 52 had the rush lasted *another two seconds* | NP 30 sledge dogs . . near the Lena *another 26 dogs* will be waiting for Nansen | Zangwill G 76 The *second six months* seemed to him much longer than the first | ib. 233 The whole of *the second five minutes* Lancelot paced his room feverishly | Spencer A 2 56 I could not count upon my forces from *one twenty-four hours* to *another*

5.164. Examples with *a whole*

Austen M 114 perhaps it might cost *a whole twenty pounds* | Carlyle R 1.64 with him *a whole threescore and ten years* of the past has doubly died for me.

5.165. Examples with *this*

Sh H4A II 2.18 any time *this two and twenty yeare* (very frequent in Sh) | Ml F 1204 *this eight nights* | ib 1205 *this eight weekes* | Defoe R 317 *this two hours* | GE M 1.52 *this six months* | Ward M 195 *this six weeks* | Vachell H 188 we'll have such good times *this* last *three weeks* | Hewlett Q 438 *this* insane *ten days*

Examples with *that* (I have no quotations from Shakespeare):

Swift J 197 lose *that four and elevenpence* | Goldsm 611 b there is *that ten guineas* you were sending to the poor gentleman | Di N 401 in the course of *that three minutes* | Barrie T 385 not a moment in *that eighteen months.*

5.166. Very frequently a unified plural is found after *any*, *no*, and especially *every*, as in

England's navy is stronger than that of *any two powers* put together | Di Do 397 it would be strange if *any two persons* could be together for many years without having something to complain of | Di Do 7 if *any two people* can be equally matched | Lowell St 263 *no two* natures were ever more unlike than those of Dryden and Pope | More U 121 *euery* XXX *fermes* or families haue one head ruler (also 130, 135) | Sterne 17 for *every ten jokes* thou hast got a hundred enemies | ib 15 *every nine or ten months* | McCarthy 2 156 nine out of *every ten enthusiasts* | Lecky D 1.76 one out of *every thirteen persons* was Irish

5.167. We have in reality a plural of the unified plural combination "a lively ten minutes" in the following sentence (a plural to the second power though the second plural is not formally expressed) Doyle M 137 then ensued one of the most lively ten minutes that I can remember.

5.171. A specially important case of unification is found in numerals + *pence* to indicate a coin of that value (or the value itself without regard to any existing coin) Thus Fielding T 1.213 many *a sixpence* A new pl in *-pences* is also formed, thus as early as Sh H4B IV 3 55 *twopences* | Wiv I 1 158 *sixpences* | Thack V 279 the amount of *eight-pences* | Jerrold C 11 what 52 *eighteen-pences* come to in a year | silver *three-halfpences* were formerly coined.

5.172. *Twelve month* (on the pl form without *s* see 3.61) is unified into *a twelvemonth* (already Malory 66 this XII moneth . . another XII moneth, frequent in the

17th and 18th c.); thus also *a seven night* (see 3.61) as in Sh Ado II 1 375 a iust seuen night, > *a se'nnight* (on the pronunciation see vol I), frequent till the beginning of the 19th c, and *a fourteen night* > *a fortnight*, in the two latter the numeral is no more felt as such.

I have no examples of a plural of *twelvemonth* or *fortnight*, and only one of *sennights* Sh Macb I. 3 22 Wearie seu'nights, nine times nine, Shall he dwindle, peake, and pine

5.18. Apart from combinations with numerals the unification of plurals is not frequent, though the phenomena dealt with in 5.6—7 (Metanalysis) may be reckoned as cases in point

The United States is often taken as a singular (also with *the* omitted after *a*):

Archer A 148 *the United States* is not, to him, a foreign country | Seeley E 16 what *the United States does* | ib. 159 *another United States* | ib. 159 we shall see that here too *is a United States* | Froude Oc 16 continents large as *a second United States* | Lee Bates, Amer Lit 124 *The United States* of to-day *is* nine times as large as the United States of 1800

It is rarer to find *the Indies* treated in the same way: NP'11 Raleigh gave to the English race *a better Indies* than the King of Spain's

Mass-Words.

5.211. The categories of singular and plural naturally apply to all such things (this word taken in the widest sense possible) as can be counted; such 'countables' are either material things like *houses*, *horses*, *portraits*, *flowers*, etc., or immaterial things of various orders, like *days*, *miles*; *sounds*, *words*, *sonatas*, *sermons*; *events*, *crimes*, *errors*, *mistakes*, *ideas*, *plans*, *tasks*, etc But beside these we have a great many words which represent 'uncountables', that is, which do not call up the idea of any definite thing, having a certain shape or precise limits. These words

are here called mass-words; they may be either material, in which case they denote some stuff or substance in itself independent of form, such as *silver*, *quicksilver*, *water*, *butter*, *milk*, *tea* (both the leaves and the fluid), *powder*, *gas*, *air*, etc.; or else immaterial, such as *leisure*; *music*; *traffic*, *progress*, *success*, *ill-luck*, *tact*, *commonsense*, *knowledge*, and especially many 'verbal substantives' from verbs, like *admiration*, *satisfaction*, *refinement*, and from adjectives, like *restlessness* (= 'the being restless'), *clearness*, *safety*, *constancy* (Cf especially 5 33 and 34)

5.212. While it is possible to qualify ('quantify') the first class of words (countables) with such adjectives as *one*, *two*, *many*, *few (a few)*, mass-words can be qualified by *much* and *little (a little)*. Note however that *a little* can also be applied to countables, though in a different sense, compare *a little bird* (= a small bird) and *a little water* (= a small quantity of water). Similarly *some* may apply to both classes *some bird*, *some birds*; *some water*. On the distinction formerly made between *more*, *enough* with mass-words and *mo*, *enow* with plurals see 2.74 f

A great deal (a good deal) of is now only found before singular mass-words (= 'much') *a great deal of money*, *a good deal of soap*, etc , while *a great many* is used before plurals· *a great many stones (people)*, etc. But formerly this rule was not observed Defoe R 99 a great deal of pieces of timber —*Plenty of* and *abundance of* are found with both classes, see for the use with plurals 4.83, with a sg word plenty of money | Di T 2.3 abundance of time.

The use of *certain* is peculiar in NP '13 So highly inflammable is certain dust, that .

5.213. Another difference in the adjuncts of mass-words and thing-words: the former have *what*, the latter *what a* in exclamatory quasi-questions *What nonsense* you are talking! | Stevenson VP 169 And, after all, *what* sorry and pitiful *quibbling* all this is | Norris P 107 *what* beautiful *hair* that girl has!—contrasted with *What a* lovely *sight!* | Stevenson VP 159 *What a* chequered *picnic* we

have of it, even while it lasts —In the chapter about *one*, below, we shall also see that this word is only used as a substitute for a thing-word, not for a mass-word — *Something great* refers to a 'mass' and has no plural, *some great thing* has the plural *some great things*, referring to 'countables'

5.221. It is, however, possible to use mass-names with counting adjectives when the name is taken in the sense 'a kind of', as in *this wine* is different from *the one* we had yesterday | *many* different *wines* grow in France | various *sauces* (*jams*), etc , see 4.61. In some cases a mass-name may have a plural in a slightly different sense, see 4.62 *salt, sand, silk, spirit—advice, attention, confidence, decency, love* Cf also Ru P 2 146 the *snows* round the Aiguilles are the least trodden

5.222. A case closely resembling that of these differentiated plurals is that of many words which may be used both as mass-names and as thing-names This may be either because a word denoting a thing is transferred to the material, as when we say *a pudding* (*many puddings*) and *much pudding*, or inversely, as when from *cloth* we get *a cloth* (*table-cloth, horsecloth*) with pl *cloths* (cf *clothes*, see Morphology), or when *an iron* is used = 'implement for smoothing cloth'. Sometimes the thing-word must be considered as a detached first-word of a compound, e.g *a copper* = *a copper-kettle* or *copper coin*

Further examples of such double significations

a *tin* of sardines	an alloy of copper and *tin*
two big *cheeses*	a little more *cheese*
many small *crumbs*	crust or *crumb?*
a tall *oak*	a table made of *oak*
Have you had an *ice?* (Hope D 43)	there is no *ice* on the pond
the *earth* is round	some *earth* stuck to his shoes
various *matters* were discussed	the relation of *matter* and space
state-*papers*.	a parcel in brown *paper*.

Similar examples with immaterial mass-words:

various *noises*	a good deal of *noise*
confidential *talks*	much *talk*
some *sorrows* (*joys*, *pleasures*)	some *sorrow* (*joy*, *pleasure*)
all these *dangers* are past	there is little or no *danger*
different *feelings*	he showed much *feeling*
few *talents*	little *talent*
many *experiences*	much *experience*
a delightful *time*	I have no *time* now

(*Time* has another 'countible' signification when it is — G *mal*, F *fois* I have been there twenty times)

Debt is a thing-word in GE A 1 220 I have paid off *a debt or two*, but a mass-name in the phrase *to be in debt*

5.223. But in other instances the mass-words cannot be thus used for 'things' (*gunpowder*, *clay*, *linen*, etc.) Corresponding to G *ein brot* English has *a loaf*, not *a bread* While *lamb* may be used for the animal (*two young lambs*) and for the meat (*lamb or pork*, *sir*'), and the same is the case with *fowl* (as a mass-word for instance in Bennett W 2 276 bits of fowl) and *fish*, in some other well-known instances we have two different words *calf* — *veal*, *ox* — *beef* (archaic *beeves* about the animals), *sheep* — *mutton*, *deer* — *venison*, *swine* — *pork* Similarly we have *tree* — *wood* (as a mass-name; it is also used as a collective in the sense 'collection of trees' and then of course like *copse* and *forest* has a pl) On the other hand some thing-words may develop into mass-words with two different significations, cf *an oak* (one *tree*) — *oak* 1 wood from oaks, 2 trees looked upon as a mass, see below 5 25

On the individualization by means of *piece*, etc., see 5 3

5.224. While in some instances it is impossible to distinguish by means of our senses the component parts of the substance (*iron*, *water*, *air*), in other instances this is possible, (*sand*, *barley*) Note that the sg words *bran* and *chaff* are defined by means of the pl *husks*.

Thus we understand that some mass-words are in themselves plurals (*dregs*, *lees*, 5.28) and that in many instances we have transitions from one number to the other, see below 5.6 Metanalysis

In Sc and some other dialects *porridge*, *broth*, *soup* and a few other names of dishes, though sg in form, take a vb in the pl, are referred to as *they*, and may be preceded by *few* and *many*, thus also in Ireland *porridge*, *stirabout*, Joyce 81.

5.225. Some words, which are now used only as mass-words, were formerly also used as thing-words; thus *a good armour* (Sh Ado II. 3.17) = 'a good suit of armour'; *a dust* (Sh R2 II 3.91, John IV 1 93) = 'a particle of dust'.

5.226. The division here made seems to me logically more consistent and at the same time better suited to account for the grammatical facts than the one found in Sweet's NEGr § 150 ff According to him the chief division is into substance-nouns or concrete nouns and abstract nouns (that is, words like *redness*, *stupidity*, *conversation*). Concrete nouns are divided into

common nouns { class nouns { individual (*man*) / collective (*crowd*) ; material nouns (*iron*) }

proper names (*Plato*).

Sweet does not see the essential similarity between his 'material nouns' and 'abstract nouns', nor is his name 'material nouns' a fortunate one, because many names of immaterial phenomena present the same characteristics as *iron*, *glass*, etc I do not see that 'material words make us think more of the attributes they suggest than of the thing itself' (§ 155)· such a word as *hammer* makes us think of the attributes belonging to a hammer just as much as *iron* does. Neither can I see that the distinction Sweet makes in § 152 between singular class-nouns (like *sun* in popular as contrasted with scientific language) and plural nouns (like *tree*) is at all valuable: both represent 'countables', even if there is more occasion in one case than in the other to use the word in the plural.

5.23. We shall now consider some special cases of mass-words and their relation to thing-words.

The difference between the singular of mass *hair* (which may be partly due to the OE neuter pl *hær*) and the modern plural *hairs* is that in the first instance we

think of the mass without separating it into the several small units that go to make up the mass, while *hairs* individualizes them:

Sh Gent III. 1 362 shee hath *more hair* then wit, and more faults then *hairs* (but in other places Sh has *hairs* where now the sg of mass would be used) | AV Matth 10 30 the very *haires* of your head are all numbred | Mi SA 1135 [strength] giv'n thee in thy *hair*, Where strength can least abide, though *all thy hairs* Were bristles | Di D 205 a gentleman with grey *hair* and black eyebrows | Merriman S 69 schoolgirls who have too *much hair* | his *hair is* sprinkled with grey = he has *some grey hairs* | when you have had your *hair* cut, you have not *so much hair*, but nearly *as many hairs* as before —To express the amount of hair proper to one individual, the phrase *head of hair*, or colloquially *shock of hair* is used: Di DC 346 with a comic head of hair | ib 22 a very nice man, with a very large head of red hair | Doyle S 1 244 a shock of orange hair —The use of *whisker* as a mass-word is rare: Di Do 11 with a good deal of hair and whisker.

Coal The plural form is used (as a survival) in the phrases *carry coals to Newcastle* and *heap coals of fire upon one's head* (from Prov. 25.22); also in *live coals* = burning or glowing pieces of coal | *a few coals* are still glowing | Kipl J 1 179 his little eyes like *hot coals*. But otherwise *coals* is now much rarer than the mass-word *coal*: *coal is* getting cheaper now | put *some more coal* (now rarely *coals*) on the fire | the ship had *too little coal* on board (never *too few coals*) || Di D 155 *too many coals* (obsolete) | Ritchie M 191 the machine had the advantage of only eating *coal*, and coke.—*Coke* and *charcoal* are now always used in the sg: Ru S 126 heaps of coke | Bennett W 2 127 much wood and charcoal

Fruit: *much fruit* (mass), *many fruits* (individually). In the Customs list, all *fruit is* divided into three parts—*dried fruits*, *green fruits*, and nuts.—But it is impossible to use, say, *apple* or *pear* or *cherry* thus as a mass-name

Compare also *much cake* and *many cakes*, but *biscuit* is not often used as in Defoe R 56 I fill'd my pockets with *bisket*, and eat *it*. In Alabama they say I can eat *ten biscuit* any day, see Payne Word-List from East Al., 1909

Coin = 'coined money': pay him (back) in his own coin; *coin* in the sense 'piece of money' has the regular pl *coins* *a few* Japanese *coins*.

5.24. In military language *shell, grape* and *shot* are used as singulars of mass. Note the difference between this meaning of *shot* (= missiles, ammunition) and the other (discharge of a firearm), which of course has the regular plural: *many shots*. *Ball* also may be found in this way Macaulay H 2 178 their *powder and ball* were spent — *Ballet* is no longer used as a mass-word.

Lace in the sense of G *spitzen*, F *dentelles*, is generally a sg of mass, but pl in Thack S 142 a trousseau of *laces*, satins, jewel-boxes, and tomfoolery In *boot-lace*, etc., the pl is of course frequent, as this is a thing-word

Compounds of *ware* (*earthenware*, *hardware*) are generally used as mass-words; the pl *earthenwares* denotes different kinds of *earthenware*, occasionally the sg may be found referred to by a pl pronoun: Defoe R 170 my *earthen ware* I contrived to make *them* with a wheel it was burnt red like other earthen ware

A house built of *stone* or *brick*. note the parallelism with *wood*, and on the other hand the difference *many stones* (*bricks*) go to the building of that house, but *much wood* (*many pieces of wood*) More U 133 the owte sydes of the walles be made of brycke || GE A 178 A pretty building I'm making, without either bricks or timber | Shaw 2 81 bricks and mortar

Cf also: the book was printed in *black-letter* | his manuscript was set up in *type* before his death

Apparatus as in Gissing B 358 purchasing books or scientific *apparatus*, may be either the Latin pl (fourth declension) or a mass-word, the Latin pl *stamina* is often used as an Engl sg of mass (2 65)

5.25. As already mentioned (5 223), the names of many kinds of trees are used in the sg to indicate the corresponding kind of wood as material: Sh Oth II 1 8 ribbes of *oake* | Bennett W 1 30 that cupboard, of *oak* inlaid with *maple* and *ebony* | Chesterton F 185 a bungalow built of *bamboo*

But such names, as well as other names of plants, may also be used as mass-words to denote live plants (cf. *wheat*, *barley*, *corn*, etc):

Ru P 1 62 a group of dark Italian *pine* and *evergreen oak* | Stevenson B 57 *oak* and *beech* began to take the place of *willow* and *elm* | ib 60 a thick wood of flowering *hauthorn* | Caine E 147 a scraggy clump of *eucalyptus* | Wilde HP 32 a thicket of wild *hemlock* | Gissing R 92 waste-land, overflowered with poppies and *charlock* | Parker R 268 among the ferns and *bracken* | Zangwill G 47 She strode ahead of him, through the wet *bracken* | NED Southern writers often make *bracken* collective [From whence it may be inferred that this usage is not found in the North of England or Scotland] Instances from Tennyson in Dyboski, p. 89.

5.26. Again, names of countable immaterial objects may be thus used as mass-names, thus especially *verse* (as a contrast to *prose*): a volume of German verse, while *verses* individualizes: some of his verses are not harmonious. In the case of *verse* one might think of the French pl *vers* or of *-s* being haplological for *-ses* (cf. Ch B 4503), but this does not apply to the rest of the examples:

Wordsw P 5 179 to tell again In slender accents of sweet *verse*, some tale | Holmes A 46 whole volumes of unpublished *verse* | Walker, Lit Vict Era 289 Charles Tennyson confined himself to the shorter kinds of *verse* | Collingwood R 53 he wrote *verses* to her || Raleigh Sh 74 The Essays of Elia are a tissue of Biblical *phrase* | ib 96 its speeches are full of classical *allusion* | ib 112 a wonderful fertility in the invention of comic *situation* || Wilde In 115 Ruskin's prose . . so sure and certain in subtle choice of

word and *epithet* | Spencer A 1.377 Lewes was full of various *anecdote* | Benson W 77 he poured forth a continuous flow of *jest* and *anecdote* | Phillpotts K 98 the stories were usually wanting in *detail* | Doyle S 6.216 the lady's story was complete, the *detail* was fairly exact.

5.27. Finally I shall give a few instances of other words used in the sg as mass-words:

Ml H 1 375 her teares to *pearle* he turned | ib 2.161 | Sh R2 IV 1 322 The liquid drops of teares that you haue shed, Shall come againe, transform'd to Orient *Pearle* (other Eliz examples ESt 14.141) | Ward F 407 the big sycamore was nearly in full *leaf* (cf. *in blossom*, *in bloom*) | McCarthy 2.625 The loss of English *life* had been terrible, and worse than the mere loss of *life* was the fact that lives [NB] had been thrown away to no purpose

It must be specially noticed that these words do not take a verb in the plural as those dealt with in 4.S, though Shakespeare in one place construes *coral* in that way: Tp I 2.397 Of his bones are corrall made, cf on the other hand, agreeing with present-day usage, Sonn 130 Currall is farre more red.

5.28. Plural mass-words

In many cases the corresponding singular form is used, more or less rarely, in the same signification The following list makes no pretention to completeness

5.281. First we take material masses.

chattel(s) . *effects* . *stocks.*—Note that *raw material* and *raw materials* are generally used indiscriminately.

victuals. sg now practically extinct Sh has once *victual*, three times *-s* | Bacon A 2 33 *victual*, but 1 3 and 1 11 *victuals* | Swift J 159 we had such very fine *victuals* that I could not eat *it* | By DJ 2.145 the best feelings must have victual little | GE A 411 (vg) good victual enough According to F. N. Scott (Verbal Taboos, in The School Review, June '12) many people have an aversion to *victuals*, which would tend to mean 'uninviting food in unattractive surroundings', while the sg *victual*, which occurs

four times in Tennysons 'Geraint and Enid', is not only inoffensive but even poetically congenial

cates . vivers (Sc) *sweetmeats*

molasses: "In the West [of U S.] the word is used in the plural, e g those molasses" (Farmer, Am.). In England the word is little used, but seems to be sg: Masefield C 220 the molasses that was left —Funk-Wagnalls. Dict : a low-grade concentrated molasses.

oat is very rare instead of the usual *oats*· Tennyson 261 had the wild oat not been sown In an article in World's Work 1907 p 541 *oat* seems to be used of the plant, *oats* of the grains: the old cultivated oat a new breed of oats . from the Garton oat it is possible to have an oatmeal which is meal of oats and not the meal of oats and oat husks, etc. (Cf NED *oat* 2b) *Oats* construed as pl: Thack N 594 his lordship sowed tame oats now after his wild *ones* As a sg it is found at any rate in *much oats*; cf also Swift 3.358 their oats, which there *groweth* naturally In compounds *oat*· *oatmeal*, *oatcake*

hop(s) . weeds (in garden).

When *brains* is used in speaking of what is contained in one person's skull, the idea is not, as sometimes supposed, the more scientific one of the two cerebral hemispheres, nor that of the cerebrum and cerebellum, but the more popular one of the brain as an indistinguishable mass, and the pl is comparable to that in *bowels*, etc. Therefore it is necessary to use the pl form in the phrases *to blow out* (*knock out*) *somebody's brains*, cf also NED "In 16th c. it became usual to employ the pl instead of the sg when mere cerebral substance, and not a definite organic structure, was meant, this usage still continues we say *a dish of brains, a disease of the brain*" The pl is also used frequently in the signification 'intellectual power'. On the sg construction of the pl form (which is not mentioned in NED), see below 5.752.

cinder(s) . curd(s) . embers (sg rare, Poe 25 each separate dying ember) . *grounds . dregs hards . lees* (Swinb T 162 the

lee of sorrow; the NED has examples of this sg from 1390 to 1813, *lees* construed as sg only in Sh Mcb II. 3.77 the meere lees Is left this vault to brag of). *suds proceeds. remain(s) vails* 'money given to servants by a visitor'.

contents in the 17th c construed as sg, now pl as in Di T 2 70 These were its contents | Ru C 1 most of the contents are stated more fully in my other volumes; the sg *content* is used in the sense 'containing-power, capacity', of a vessel, etc cubic content

Here must be mentioned also some verbal substantives in *-ings*, denoting material masses *belongings (paper-) hangings leavings sharings sweepings winnings*, the sg of which is rare in that sense (generally passive)

On *ashes* see 4 62, cf. *sweets, greens, valuables* 9 7; *assets* 5 631; *goods* 5 782; *wages* 5 753.

5.282. As plural immaterial mass-words we must reckon the names of various diseases.

measles . mumps . hysterics . shingles shivers . rickets . (chills) throes rues

pox, smallpox see 5 76.

Thus also in names of moods, more or less approaching states of illness: *blues . creeps* (Chesterton F 160). *dumps jumps* (Galsworthy P 1 54) *sulks sullens* Most of these are colloquial or slang

5.283. With regard to plural mass names there is some difficulty in expressing quantity, as *many* cannot well be used because it implies countability, and *much* presupposes the sg number, thus *a great quantity* or similar expressions must be resorted to There is, however, some tendency to use *much* as an adjunct with plurals, which are then considered as masses, cf the following quotations, in some of which *much* may also be taken as an adverb

Roister 69 *much things* ye spake | Swift J 141 Here has been such a hurry with the Queen's Birthday, so *much fine clothes* | Darwin L 2 113 my object here is

to think about nothing, bathe much, walk much, eat much, and read *much novels* [*much* evidently due to the preceding *much's*] | Schreiner T 54 There's not too *much cakes and ale* up here | Jerome T 31 (vg) 'E 'adn't got too *much clothes* on | Fielding 3.427 the money would be so *much gains* in her pocket | id. T 4.227 so *much spirits* must be required

Thus also rarely *little* Defoe R 2 202 she was able to give very *little signs* of life.

Individualization and Concretion.

5.31. In those cases in which there is no special word to denote one of the single elements that together make up a mass, recourse must be had to some such word as *piece, bit, article* (+ *of*) To this a numeral may be attached, and very often also another adjective

5.32. Thus with *furniture*, which is obsolete in the signification 'the action of furnishing', and which now denotes the whole of the movable articles in a room, etc. (G 'hausgerat' sg, 'mobiliar' sg, 'mobel' pl): all the furniture of the house was very old-fashioned | to hire out furniture ('mobel vermieten') | a useful piece of furniture ('ein nutzliches mobel') | there was not a single piece of furniture in the room | Scott Iv 186 one or two clumsy articles of furniture | Barrie MO 147 every article of furniture from the chairs to the mantel-border || Gissing B 82 silk hat . he pointed to the piece of *head-gear*.

food various articles of food (also, however, *various foods*, as with *drinks*).

money much money | a piece (bit) of money. But *moneys* (monies) is by no means rare in the sense 'sums of money', in Sh four times in the mouth of Shylock, once used by Evans, and once in Tim | Sheridan 209 then, you know, you haven't the moneys yourself, but are forced to borrow them for him of a friend — Oh, I borrow it of a friend, do I? | Scott Iv 131, 133, 304 (always Jews speaking) monies | Carlyle S 77 What moneys are realised

. . of said moneys | id. Rem 2 217 he had made immense moneys | Di T 1.283 she counted the small moneys that had been taken during her absence | Thack P 2 236 | Trollope D 2.198 | Tennyson Foresters often, as a pseudo-archaism | Mered H 343.

5.33. As already mentioned (5 211), words denoting qualities, etc., really belong to the class of immaterial mass-words. This becomes especially evident when we see that to individualize, that is here to denote a concrete outcome or visible manifestation of the quality, recourse is had to similar expedients as with *furniture*, etc., namely to use *piece*, *bit* (colloquial), *act*, *stroke*, or *point*. Examples abound:

Sh Wint IV. 4 695 it were a peece of *honestie* to acquaint the King withall || BJo 1 50 a true piece of *civility* | Austen P 214 this piece of civility | ib 312 a stroke of civility || More U 191 a poynte of *humanitie* || Defoe G 148 a peice of *justice* due to him | ib. R 2 153 an unsufferable piece of *injustice* || ib R 203 a bloody and unnatural piece of *cruelty* || Defoe G 68 the grossest peice of *brutallity* | Fielding T 4.32 certain pieces of brutality, commonly called justice || Mered H 417 some wonderful piece of *generosity* to his rival || Black F 1 186 I'm going to step in and prevent this piece of *folly* || Mered E 234 so cruel a piece of *selfishness* || Black F 1.179 may I ask you if what you said was only a bit of *modesty* || Di Do 172 your ambition is a piece of monstrous *impudence* || Defoe G 70 this shametull peice of *negligence* | Bennett W 1 97 he died through a piece of *neglect* || Sh Ado III 3.180 the most dangerous peece of *lechery* || Ward M 145 it was a piece of bad *taste* || BJo 1 46 what strange piece of *silence* is this? || Lewes H 616 a bit of logical *audacity* || Gissing B 393 such a piece of *recklessness* || Carlyle H 185 a theory that the French Revolution was a general act of *insanity* || Swift T 7 a wise piece of *presumption* to inscribe these papers to your lordship || Scott A 1.319 many will consider it a piece of *Quixotry* to give you a meeting || Di

D 381 I felt as though it would have been an act of *perfidy* towards Dora to have a natural relish for my dinner || Di M 140 the shopman was delighted with this piece of *humour* | Meied E 2 humonists are difficult it is a piece of their humour to puzzle our wits || Gissing B 368 a tremendous bit of *satire* | ib 424 many strokes of satire || Raleigh Johnson 174 a strange piece of *irony* || Stevenson C 15 it would be a piece of *little wisdom*

5.34. *information*, etc . much valuable information | a piece of information | Ridge G 84 the most interesting item of information || Fielding T 1 266 an unwelcome piece of *news* | Swift J 49 A comfortable piece of news! | two pieces of bad news | Austen E 161 You like news — and I heard an article in my way hither | Austen P 407 an article of news which then began to be in circulation | Poe S 270 an item of news like this | McCarthy 2 13 this news from China || Fielding T 1 78 women are more inclined to communicate all pieces of *intelligence* to their own sex than to ours | Goldsm 639 I have followed you here with a trifling piece of intelligence | Doyle St 125 Are you sure of this piece of intelligence? || GE Mm 236 She communicated this piece of *knowledge* to Mr F | London F 87 a matter of common knowledge || Stevenson V 114 a fact is not called a fact, but a piece of *gossip* || Hardy L 160 this account, though only a piece of *hearsay* || Henley Burns 316 another piece of *scandal* || Dickens Do 382 a piece of *truth* || Meredith EH 425 a piece of *nonsense* || Ridge G 200 it was all a piece of agreeable *imagination* || Di Do 134 this concluding piece of *praise* || a terrible deal of *abuse* | two words of vulgar abuse.

Knowledge is rare in the pl· Ru Sel 1 200 serviceable knowledges, see also 5 39

advice, etc.. Fielding T 2 129 a piece of advice | ib 3 129 a short hint, of advice | Di D 163 my other piece of advice you know | ib 431 take a word of advice | Kipl J 1.18 a young wolf would have remembered that advice every hour || Caine S 2.166 He had reminded himself of

a common piece of his mother's *counsel* | Gissing B 238 A last piece of counsel

Advices in this sense is rare (an exemple from Gibbon in NED): Burns 1 280 how monie counsels sweet, how monie lengthen'd, sage advices, the husband frae the wife despises! For another signification of *advices* see 4 62.

consolation, etc. one bit of consolation is that the amount was so small | Di Do 77 that unanswerable piece of consolation || Di D 192 my aunt had recounted these particulars as a piece of *confidence* in me

5.35. *luck*, etc Black F 2.220 an extraordinary stroke of good luck | Wilde D 150 What an extraordinary piece of luck || Sheridan 248 his coming at this time is the cruellest piece of ill *fortune* | GE Mm 216 under this stroke of ill-fortune | Black F 2.200 a stroke of good fortune | Poe S 15 two of those almost inconceivable pieces of good fortune which are attributed to . Providence || Di Do 137 at this unexpected stroke of *success*

5.36. *policy*, etc GE M 2 259 a great stroke of policy | Stevenson V 94 an artful stroke of policy || Black F 1 200 he had overlooked this little bit of stealthy *advance* || Mered E 43 as a piece of *tactics* || Carlyle R 2 205 a finished piece of *social art* || Mered E 228 a piece of *conduct* || Mered H 79 a noble piece of *habit* || Austen M 162 such a piece of true *acting* || Mered E 245 a sheer piece of *impromptu* || Carlyle R 2 318 our second and last piece of *intercourse* | Stevenson MB 187 It was a piece of *religion* to defend the Mikado, it was a plain piece of political *righteousness* to oppose a tyrannical and bloody usurpation || Stevenson MP 17 a piece of *privilege*

service, etc. BJo 1 43 this small piece of service (also 47) | Henley Burns 234 he did for the people a piece of service equal to that | Mered E 231 doing her a piece of service || Black F 2.103 I had done this little scrap of *good* || Sh Mcb II 3 134 this most bloody piece of *worke* | Fielding T 250 you have done a fine piece of

work | I hope to get two or three bits of work done before sunset || Di Do 143 a piece of extraordinary *preferment* || Austen P 275 a good piece of *fun*.

5.371. *Kindness* means 'the quality of being kind', the single act that shows this quality or feeling, therefore must be called *an act of kindness*, as in Wordsworth 93 that best portion of a good man's life, His little, nameless, unremembered acts Of kindness and of love | Shelley Pr 215 I take this as rather an unkind piece of kindness in you. Cf also Mered H 58 the rejection of a piece of *friendliness*

But the word has also acquired the concrete signification of 'kind act', and as such has a plural (cf *acquaintance* 4 95, *youth* 4 94)

AV Ps 89.49 Lord, where are thy former louing kindnesses | Sh Err IV 3 5 thankes for kindnesses | Di D 469 I thanked her for this mark of her affection, and for all her other kindnesses towards me | Wilde P 123 I shall remember great kindnesses that I have received

5.372. Examples of concrete plurals of other similar words, chiefly in *-ness*

Sh R 2 III. 2 216 *flatteries* | GE M 2 135 small *benevolences* | Haggard S 118 disappointments and secret *bitternesses* | Ru S 461 *childishnesses* | Austen P 316 his *civilities* | Wordsworth P 3 156 *consciousnesses* | GE M 2.135 her small *egoisms* | Ru S 1.480 *happinesses* | Kipl L 203 the *meannesses* of Dick | Ru S 1 444 these *perfectnesses* | ib 282 *uglinesses* | Sterne 22 *uneasinesses* | Ru S 461 *waywardnesses* . none of their *weaknesses* — Cf. also Harraden S 61 the real importances of life are the *nothingnesses* of every-day life

A somewhat different use is found in Shaw D 49 a few *thicknesses* of brown paper across the chest are better than any fur coat, and in *likenesses* = 'portraits'

5.381. *Business*, which in the sense 'being busy' has now developed another form *busyness* [biznis] see I 9 91, is now pronounced [biznis] and means 'serious

occupation, work, trade, affairs' collectively, and then is used generally in the sg (he does little business, or he does a good business with them); the single affair is called *a piece*, or *a stroke of business* (Congreve 231 a great piece of business to go to Covent Garden | Burton, NED: people who wanted to do a stroke of business with some old volume)

But in the concrete sense of 'a particular occupation' or 'place of business, shop' the pl *businesses* may be used:

Sh Alls IV 3 98 I haue to night dispatch'd sixteene businesses | Lr II 1 129 | Ml J 126 | Swift J 138 that was two of my businesses with the Secretary | Ward D 1.223 the happy ideas I throw into one day of this place would stock twenty ordinary businesses | Ellis Plea f Phon Spelling 99 in the multifarious businesses of common life | Lang E 197 prattle in print about men's private lives, their boots, their businesses, their incomes | Stevenson D 301 there is more in that business than meets the eye, there is more, in fact, in all businesses

5.382. *Luxury* similarly, besides meaning the psychological quality of lasciviousness (†) as in Sh R 3 III. 5 80 his hatefull luxurie, And beastial appetite, or of indulging in costly things, as in Burns 1.114 may Heaven their simple lives prevent From Luxury's contagion, — comes to signify the concrete means of such indulgence, first as a mass word (tables covered with luxury, Johnson in NED | an article of luxury) and then as a thing-word (a new luxury | a few luxuries | Shelley 410 jellies and mince-pies, And other such lady-like luxuries)

5.39. Plurals of abstracts are often used, especially in literary language, in a loose way, so that there is little or no difference between the sg and the pl·

Sh Oth II. 1.55 My *hopes* do shape him for the Gouernor | Gissing B 485 she wrote coldly, with the intention of discouraging his *hopes* What *hope* was he so foolish as to entertain? | Mi S 805 while I at home sate full of *cares* and *fears* | Pope Aut 70 So dies her love,

and so my hopes decay | NP (NED) The fears of a general crisis are passing away | Di M 385 a crowd of *welcomes* shining out of every smile | Ru C 187 No nation ever made its bread either by its great arts, or its great *wisdoms* By its minor arts or manufactures, by its practical *knowledges*, yes | Gissing B 358 a general revival of his *energies* | Bennett W 2 270 leave Fossette to her tender *mercies* (from Prov. 12 10)

Cf also the familiar phrase *it is a thousand pities* (e. g. Darwin L 2.375) = *a great pity*.

The Generic Singular and Plural.

5.4. An assertion about a whole species or class—equally applicable to each member of the class—may be made in various ways:

(1) the sg without any article: *man is mortal*,

(2) the sg with the indefinite article *a cat is not as vigilant as a dog*,

(3) the sg with the definite article. *the dog is vigilant*;

(4) the pl without any article: *dogs are vigilant*,

(5) the pl with the definite article. *the English are a nation of shopkeepers*

It is, of course, always possible to emphasize the generic character of an assertion by adding *every (every man, every cat)* or any *(any man, any cat)*, or by using *all* with the plural *(all men, all cats)* This last expression also has the meaning 'all put together', Erdmann distinguishes this meaning of the plural as 'collective plural' from the distributive plural', where *all* = 'each'. The difference will be clear from such examples as all the angles of a triangle are 180° [= together] | all the angles of a triangle are less than 180° [better: each of . is] | all the boys of this form are stronger than their teacher [if working together] | all the boys of this form are able to run faster than their teacher —It is only with the latter kind that we are here concerned

5.411. The sg without an article in this generic sense—probably a remnant from the time when the articles were not in general use—is found with *man* and *woman*, but not with any other names of living beings The generic *man* may refer to both sexes or to 'males' only· Mi A 55 God sees not as man sees, chooses not as man choses | Pope Ess on M 2.2. The proper study of mankind is Man | Cowper 197 God made the country, and man made the town | Hawth Sn 82 I should arrive within the limits of man's memory | London F 103 his arms were long, like prehistoric man's | Wilde S 148 The true perfection of man lies, not in what man has, but in what man is | Kipl J 2 84 who is Man that we should care for him || Ch E 1324 womman is for mannes help ywroght | Sh Hml II. 2.321 Man delights not me; no, nor woman neither | Scott Iv 255 God made women weak, and trusted their defence to man's generosity | Thack [where?] Man is destined to be a prey to woman | Barrie T 290 was it helplessness that man loves in woman then? | Gissing B 257 There's no longer such a thing as woman in the abstract: We are individuals | Caine C 352 Man's the head, but woman turns it | Woman is best when she is at rest.

Cf ME *man* (also *men, me*) = F *on* (< *homo*), as G and Dan *man* —ME also *wyf* Ch E 1331 wyf is meannes help

Sometimes *man* (= all men) is found opposed to *men* (= some men)

Dekker W 2 IV 1.361 she [woman] was not made for *men*, but *man* | Kidd Soc Evol 14 Christianity was intended to save not only *men* but *man* | Swinb Hymn of Man. *Men* perish, but *man* shall endure, lives die, but the life is not dead

Thus also Wells V 82 it wasn't so much *women* as *Woman* that engaged his mind | NP '12 Sterne was a lover of *woman* rather than of *women*

5.412. Mass-words (5 2 f.) — material and immaterial — are similarly used in the sg without any article

Bacon E 60 *Money* [i. e all money, the whole species] is like *muck*, not good except it be spread | *lead* is heavier than *iron* | Shelley 457 *True Love* in this differs from *gold* and *clay* That to divide is not to take away | *Time* and *tide* wait for no man | *life* is short [= 'the lives of all men'].

5.413. It may be an application of this rule that after a superlative with the partitive *of* we find in some cases the sg, where perhaps the pl would be expected. *in the best of prose* may be looked upon as a kind of contamination of *in the best prose* and *in the best of proses*, and if the sg is preferred, it is because of the general unnaturalness of a plural of *prose*. Thus also *blood* in Bentley T 42 you talk about the thing in the coldest of blood. Cf however Poe 666 the most delicious, because the most intolerable of sorrow—though the pl *sorrows* is of course very frequent. This idiom has points of contact with the following sentences, in which *any one, anybody* stands for the plural *all*· Stevenson MB XVIII He, first of any one, will understand | GE A 349 (vg) the gentleman I look up to most of anybody. Cf. also Ch C 86 best of every man

5.42. A generic sg is used with the indefinite article: *an oak is harder than a beech*, *an* is a kind of weaker *any*

5.43. A generic sg with the definite article is very frequent, though in itself ambiguous· *the origin of the ballad* may refer both to the individual ballad we are just discussing, and to ballads in general as a literary species; in the latter case *the ballad* stands as a (typical) representative of the whole class

Fielding 3 603 cursed by *the widow*, *the orphan*, the poor, and the oppressed [cf below 5.45] | Gissing B 150 *the woman*, qua woman hates abstract thought | Wordsworth 79 *The Child* is father of *the Man*

A somewhat similar use is found in such combi-

nations as Defoe G 65 their business is to hunt *the stag* and *the fox*

Here belongs also the neuter adjective *the beautiful* = 'everything that is beautiful' in philosophic parlance (11 31)

5.441. A generalizing plural is very often used without any article: *owls cannot see well in the daytime*.

Note that *men* is rarely used thus in speaking of all mankind without regard to sex, as in Milton PL 1.26 justifie the wayes of God to men Generally it means only the male part of mankind

Sh Ado II. 3 65 Men were deceiuers euer | Zangwill G 70 Oh, how fickle men are! | Barrie T 289 What was it in women that made men love them | Haggard S 81 women among the Amahagger live upon conditions of perfect equality with men | Gissing B 259 I am studying men, she had said. In our day this is the proper study of womankind

5.442. The names of the days of the week may be used both in the sg and in the pl in speaking of what generally happens on such and such a day of every week

Ru P 1 158 we never travelled *on Sunday* [also *on a Sunday, of a Sunday*] | Vachell H 175 Generally they walked together *on Sunday*, but not always || Di T 1.158 *On Sundays*, Miss Pross dined at the Doctor's table | Bennett W 1 122 once a week. — *Saturdays*, I suppose? — No, *Wednesdays* | ib. 123 I thought you always went *on Thursdays* | ib. 2 230

The latter phrase is now generally preferred, because *on Thursday* may also mean on the Thursday (past or future) nearest to to-day When did he arrive? On Thursday | When will he be here? On Thursday.

Cf. also without the preposition *on*: *Sunday is* for church | *Tuesday is* their day for seeing people.

5.443. Here we may perhaps place the vague use of *things* and *matters* meaning nearly 'everything' (the whole situation, 'it') as in

Sh Wiv III. 4.69 they can tell you how things go | Austen M 25 I hope things are not so very bad | Di N 52 the appearance of things was not long in mending | Mill in Fox 2 274 things have certainly come to a strange pass || Mi SA 1348 Matters now are strain'd | Swift T 65 finding how matters were like to go | Scott A 2 322 you will only make matters worse | Di D 207 to facilitate matters.

5.45. A substantive in the pl with the definite article cannot any longer be used in a generic sense, though it is found in Bacon, who says *the philosophers* and *the physicians*, where now we should say *philosophers* and *physicians* (Bogholm, p. 131)

But with adjectives without a substantive this is the ordinary way of expressing a whole class: *the old are* [= old people are] *apt to catch cold*, cf *the English* [= the whole nation] as contrasted to *the Englishmen* [= those of whom we are speaking], see 11 4 and 5. Cf also *the ancients and the moderns* etc 9.3

5.46. In consequence of either number being used to denote the whole class generally, we sometimes find both constructions combined in the same sentences, Elizabethan examples are quoted by Knecht K p. 21, among others how to drive *the wolfe* away, That *seeke* to make the little lambes *their* pray | Who *unites* of vertue best, *are slaues* to vize (vice?)

This, I think, partly explains the construction in Mi PL 4.600, where we have the sg *beast* and *bird* in a pl sense (also referred to as *they, these*), though it may be also explained from the tendency to use uninflected forms in words going in pairs which will be dealt with in another place *beast* and *bird, They* to thir grassie couch, *these* to thir nests, Were slunk.—Both explanations may be also applied to Mi SA 75 Inferior to the *vilest* . *Of man or worm*, which thus cannot be directly compared with *the best of prose* (5 28). Cf. also Bacon A 18 27 it destroyed *man and beast* generally.

Common Number.

5.51. Instead of 'common number' a better term would perhaps be 'neutral number', if it were not for the unfortunate circumstance that the word 'neutral' in grammar calls up too readily the idea of 'neutral (neuter) gender'. What is meant here is a form of number which is neither definitely singular nor plural, which therefore leaves the category of number open or undetermined. If we were to imagine a language with one definite ending for the singular, and another for the plural, and with a third ending (or no ending) for the common number, it is clear that this third form would be used, first, in the generic sense to denote the whole class, where existing languages hesitate between the two numbers (5 4), second, in mass-words (5 2), and third, in those cases which we are now going to examine, those in which an alternative is implied.

It is evident that this is different from the phenomenon dealt with in chapter III (Unchanged Plural). If we have *one trout* and *six trout*, we have in neither case an instance of common number, though the *form* of the substantive is the same, the former is a definite singular and the latter a definite plural. On the other hand, *alms* in *he gave alms*, etc., may be called 'common number', see 5 6 f. for other phenomena of the same order.

5.52. Where we hesitate between *one* and *two*, two forms are available, one with the sb in the sg: *a star or two*, and another with it in the pl: *one or two stars*, the number of the sb being determined by the nearest adjunct. Thus also GE M 1.57 her last morsel or two (where it would be too clumsy to say 'her last one or two morsels').

A formally similar case is found in *more writers than one* = *more than one writer*, where, however, the idea is clearly plural.

5.53. The want of common number is often remedied by the clumsy device of joining two forms of the same substantive by means of *or*:

Defoe R [p. ?] the belief that *some man or men* had been on shore | Fielding T 3 65 *Some particular chapter, or perhaps chapters*, may be obnoxious | Spencer F 15 the *part or parts* called on to perform extra duty | Doyle S 5.9 a verdict of wilful murder against *some person or persons* unknown | Ridge L 7 Left by its *parent or parents* without visible means of subsistence

This is particularly frequent in legal language, where it may even lead to such a phrase as this

Bentham (in NED every) To *all and every the children and child* of the said intended marriage

5.54. Some pronouns have no separate forms for the two numbers, in such sentences as *Who came?* | *None came* | *Which do you choose?* we therefore have instances of common number So also from a formal point of view *you came*, though here the speaker will always have in his mind the idea either of one or of more than one With *which* it is possible to add *one*, if the singular, and *ones*, if the plural is meant, so that we have here really the ideal triple form. With *who* (*what*) and *none* the advantage of having a common number disappears in all those cases in which they are subjects and no common-number form of the verb is available, as then the speaker has to choose between *Who comes* and *Who come*, etc, see 6 4

5.55. On the advantage of having a common-number form in adjuncts see 6 13

5.56. On the other hand, the lack of a common-number (and common-sex) form in the third-personal pronoun leads to the frequent use of *they* and *their* in referring to an indefinite pronoun (or similar expression) in the singular "If you try to put the phrase, *Does anybody prevent you?* in another way, beginning with *Nobody prevents you*, and then adding the interrogatory formula, you will perceive that *does he?* is too definite, and *does he or she?* too clumsy, and you will therefore

say (as Thack does, P 2.260), *Nobody prevents you, do they?* . . In the same manner Shakespeare writes (Lucr 125) *euerie one to rest themselues betake* The substitution of the pl for the sg is not wholly illogical, for *everybody* is much the same thing as *all men*, and *nobody* is the negative of *all men*, but the phenomenon is extended to cases where this explanation will not hold good" (Progr in L 28) (Note that the verb is very often in the sg in the same sentence in which *their*, etc, occurs) Examples (besides those given in *Progr* 1 c)

every. Malory 196 *euery man* losed other of *their* boundes (with another example quoted Baldwin § 77) | Sh Ado III 4 60 God send *euery one their* harts desire | Spect 171 when *every body else* is upon *their* knees | Swift P 56 *every one* as *they* like; as the good woman said, when she kissed her cow | ib 123 *every fool* can do as *they're* bid | Defoe R 309 *euery man* of them that comes a-shore *are* our own, and shall die, or live, as *they* behave to us | Shelley Pr 297 entreating *everybody* to drown *themselves* | Scott A 1 175 *every body* has played the fool in *their* turn | Austen E 11 *everybody* [was] in *their* best looks | Austen S 264 *Everybody* has a way of *their* own [thus innumerable times in Miss Austen] | Kingsley H 193 why should not *every one* be as happy as *they* could? | Di N 504 Let us give *everybody their* due | GE V 224 *everybody* might have been born *idiots*, instead of having *their* right senses | Ru P 1 157 *everybody* took *their* hats off [also F 34, T 191, S 200] | Ward M 137 we must allow *everybody their* own ways of doing things | Wilde S 12 Experience is the name *everyone* gives to *their* mistakes | Kipl J 1 228 *everybody* can be forgiven for being scared in the night if *they* see things they do not understand | Ridge G 49 It makes *everyone* look *their* age

each. Austen M 37 *each* had *their* favorite | P 409 *each* felt for the other, and of course for *themselves* [also S 31, 338, 349] | By DJ 1 2 *Each* in *their* turn like Banquo's monarchs *stalk*

any: Congreve 231 How can *anybody* be happy, while *they*'re in perpetual fear? | Defoe P 107 nor could *anybody* help *one another* | Shelley Pr 76 if *any one* desires to know *they* need only impartially reflect | Austen M 196 as *anybody* in *their* senses would have done | Scott A 2 343 *anybody* may think as *they* please | Kingsley H 306 Who ever heard of *any one* doing of *their* own will what *they* did not like? | GE A 336 a week was surely enough for *any one* to go out for *their* health | Ru P 1 307 *anybody* who cared to share *their* own commons with me [also F 90, T 193] | Stevenson A 79 it would startle *any one* if *they* could make a certain effort of imagination | Zangwill G 322 Nobody is pleased or vexed with *anybody* for the colour of *their* hair | Holmes A 124 I wonder it *anybody* ever finds fault with anything I say I hope *they* do

some. Hope D 56 We might see *somebody else* we know —Oh, somebody else be hanged! Who wants to see *'em*? | Ward D 1 325 *Somebody* will see us and tell father —Not *they*, I'll keep a look-out

no: Austen S 267 *nobody* in *their* senses would expect it | Di N 673 *Nobody* will pay you between this and twelve o'clock, will *they*? | Ru C 51 Now, *nobody* does anything well that *they* cannot help doing | Ru P 2 118 *no one* to pass it but against *their* wills | Shaw 1 213 *no lady or gentleman* would so far forget *themselves* | Shaw P 138 *No man* goes to battle to be killed —But *they* do get killed | Benson D 167 *no one* means what *they* say when *they* pay compliments | Ward M 468 *Nobody* thinks of the book now, do *they*?

Examples with other words Ch C 385 And *whoso* fyndeth hym out of swich blame, *They* wol come up And I assoille *hem* | Austen E 56 *Who* makes you *their* confidant? | Austen P 348 *who* is there, whatever might be *their* former conduct, that she would believe capable of such an attempt, till it were proved against *them*? | Spencer A 1.110 unless *a person* takes a deal of ex-

ercise *they* may soon eat more than does them good | Ward F 417 When *a person* is so weak, *they* shrink, —don't *they*?—even from what *they* most desire | ib 325 It was a pity,—but *a body* might have expected it, mightn't *they*? | Sh Err IV. 31 There's *not a man* I meete but doth salute me As if I were *their* well acquainted friend | Ru F 69 there is *not one* in a thousand who is ever taught, or can for *themselves* find out what a holy desire means | [Austen M 81 poor Julia, the *only one* out of the nine not tolerably satisfied with *their* lot] | AV Matth 18.35 if yee forgiue not euery one *his brother their* trespasses | Defoe G 37 We kno' 'tis the particular property of *a Russ* to think *they* kno' every thing

Instead of *their* we have *our* when it refers to *neither of us*, etc Doyle S 6.197 *neither of us* had broken *our* fast | Scott Iv 373 we have *each our* secret | Ru P 2.162 we enjoyed ourselves, *each* in *our* own way

5.57. We shall now consider some more or less exceptional cases of loose employment of the sg and pl forms, which may be with greater or less adequacy referred to the lack of a common-number form

A sg word like *a mother* may be continued by means of *them*, implying 'all mothers' Sh Hml III. 3.31 'Tis meete that some more audience then *a mother*, Since Nature makes *them* partiall, should o're-heare The speech | Swift 3.325 the rich man enjoyed the fruit of the poor *man's* labour, and the latter were [pl, because *man* = men] a thousand to one in proportion to the former | ib. 3.376 they concluded I was not *a native* of the place, *who all go* naked [= as they all]

5.58. We have the opposite phenomenon in Sh Gent IV 4 32 how *many masters* would doe this for *his* seruant? The question here implies "no one would", and that induces *his* instead of *their*

5.59. "She's worth ten of her daughter" (Thack P 3.198). In such comparisons, after a numeral + *of*,

the sg is constantly used, *of* is not partitive, but stands as it were for *like*, or we may say that *ten of* means 'ten times (the value of)'. If the pl *daughters* were used, it would imply the false idea that there were more than ten daughters Though Malory here uses the pl (74 the scaubard is worth x of the swerdys—only one sword is mentioned), the sg construction is at least as old as Shakespeare: Sh H4B II. 4 238 thou art as valorous as Hector of Troy, worth *five of Agamemnon* | Sh H4A II. 1 40 I know a trick worth *two of that* | Sh Cor IV. 5.174 worth *six on* [= of] *him* | Sh Ado III 4 23 | Sterne 101 sleep . . I know pleasures worth *ten of it* | Lamb E 1 55 I am worth *twenty of thee* | Thack P 2 345 you are worth *ten of me* | Thack V 259 my poor good Rawdon is worth *ten of this creature* | Di D 353 Mr. W., who is worth *five hundred of you—or me* | Zangwill G 308 Beethoven is worth *two of me.*

Make = be worth

Goldsm 658 She [Betty]'d make *two of she* [Miss Neville] | Norris P 30 he was a heavy-built man, would have made *two of Corthell*

The same sg is found where no direct comparison is expressed

Kingsley H 76 she would sacrifice me, or a *thousand of me* | Kipl L 83 when *ten thousand of him* find time to look up | Caine E 120 wish we could enlist *a few thousands of him*

Numerical Metanalysis.

5.61. I have ventured to coin the word 'metanalysis' for the phenomenon frequent in all languages that words or word-groups are by a new generation analyzed differently from the analysis of a former age Each child has to find out for himself in hearing the connected speech of other people, where one word ends, and the next one begins, or what belongs to the kernel and what to the ending of a word, etc In most cases he will

arrive at the same analysis as the former generation, but now and then he will put the boundaries in another place than formerly, and the new analysis may become general. Familiar instances are *a nadder* which through metanalysis becomes *an adder*, *North Thriding* which becomes *North Riding*, *sur* + *ound* which becomes *surround* and is felt as if derived from *round*, *vegetar-ian* which is felt as *veget-arian* and gives rise to *frutarian* and even *nutarian*. I shall give elsewhere a detailed classification of various kinds of metanalysis.

Here we are concerned with numerical metanalysis, i.e. metanalysis affecting the numerical value of a form. A form that is originally a singular, may be taken to be plural, or vice versa. This is especially frequent where the *s*-ending is involved; and two essentially different kinds are to be distinguished.

In the first place (5.62) an *s* originally forming part of the kernel has been apprehended as the plural ending and the word thus been syntactically treated as a plural, a further development may be the formation of a new singular = the original minus *s* (5.63). In the second place (5.7) an *s*, which originally was an inflexional ending, has been apprehended as belonging to the kernel, the form in *s* has then been treated as a singular, and in some cases a new plural has been formed, which thus contains two *s*'es.

Quite naturally, the meanings of some words lend themselves more readily than others to numerical metanalysis, we shall find the two classes of mass-words and of names of composite objects very fully represented in the following lists.

An original singular used as a plural.

5.62. The chief examples in which an *s* of the kernel, which is still preserved, is taken as the pl ending, are *alms* and *riches*.

Alms is OE *ælmysse* (ultimately from Gr. *eleēmosunē*),

ME. AR *elmesse*, Ch *almesse* with stress on the second syllable B 168, but on the first D 1609. The last quotation for the pl *almesses* in NED is from 1541. In most cases in which the word is used it is impossible to tell the number (*take alms*, *give alms*, etc) thus in 8 out of 11 cases in Cruden's Concordance to the Bible and in 9 out of 12 cases in Sh Examples of the old sg are Sh Shrew IV 3 5 *a* present alms | AV Tobit 4 10 almes *doth* deliuer | ib. 4 11 almes *is* a good gift | Acts 10 2 gaue *much* alms | Tennyson En Arden 813 scorning *an* alms (decidedly archaic)

Examples of plural construction: AV Tobit 1.16 I gaue *many* almes | ib 2 14 where *are* thine almes | Dryden Hind III 106 For alms *are* but the vehicles of prayers

Compounds like *alms-deed*, *alms-house* and others show *s* as part of the old kernel

F *richesse* was taken over as ME *richesse*, in Ch with stress on the second or first syllable, also the pl *richesses* occurs. After the stress shifting /s/ was voiced into [z] (I 6 62) and was soon apprehended as the pl ending The word is found extremely often in connexions which do not show the number (*gain riches*, *envy him his riches*, etc, thus in 15 of the 24 places in which it occurs in Sh). Bacon has *riches is* and *riches are* (Bøgholm 17), Shakespeare has the sg oftener than the pl construction Now the word is always pl

Examples of the sg Caxton R 35 where *is* the rychesse becomen the rychesse *was* stolen | More U 107 all the riches that there *is* | Sh R2 III. 4 60 too *much* riches | Oth II 1 83 the riches of the ship *is* come on shore | Fielding T I. 251 what *signifies* all the riches in the world?

Examples of the pl (hardly before EIE): Bacon A 44 *these are* the riches of Salomons House | Sh Gent IV. 1 13 My riches *are* these poor habiliments | Wordsw Sonn 83 riches *are* akin To fear, to change, to cowardice, and death | Di D 141 his riches hid *themselves* | Ru U 40 riches

are power | Ru C 197 his riches must diffuse *themselves* at some time | Merriman S 49 she was afraid of *these* riches, and mistrusted *them*.

Jaundice, F *jaunisse*, was often used in the 15th—17th c as a pl (written *-yes*, *-iers*, *-ers*, NED, cf. other pl names of diseases); in Alabama we have the same phenomenon with *cheese* (them cheese) and *licence* (Payne, Word List)

5.631. In the following words we have back-formations, *s* being subtracted from the original kernel to form a new singular

Pea. OE *pise*, pl *pi(o)san* from Lat *pisum*, ME *pese*, pl *pesen*, Bale T 991 *a pease*, ElE *pease* in both numbers, Sh only in the pl. Butler 1633 gives *peas* as sg and *peasen* as pl, but he adds, "the singular is most used for the plural: as . . a peck of peas, though the Londoners seem to make it a regular plural, calling a *peas* a *pea*". The pl was long written *pease* (especially as a mass-word), thus still by Ruskin (R 1.61, 2.330), now *peas* Note the collocation with mass-singulars in Defoe R 2 78 some peas, barley and rice In compounds the *s* form was long in use: *pese porrege* (Bale T 1566), *pease soup* (Swift J 198, Lamb E 1 22), *peascod* (Sh, *pease-cods* Stevenson Und 15), *peaseblossom* (Sh), *pease straw* (Kipl P 227) But here too the short form is now used *pea-cod* (Scott Iv 213), *pea-soup*, etc —Bridges, Eros 90, uses the archaic form no bigger than a pease ease

Cherry: ME *cherris*, F *cerise* As early as 14th c without *s* *chirie*

Merry 'kind of black cherry' (from 16th c), by the side of *merise*, F *merise*

Sherry: formerly *sherris* (Sh H4B IV. 3) from Sp *Xerez*, the *x* in Spanish being formerly pronounced [ʃ] In this word the discarding of *s* was due less to its being apprehended as an inflexional ending than to its being amalgamated with the initial *s* of *sack*, *sherris-sack* being an extremely common combination. Archaic forms

are used by Tennyson (113 *sherris-warmed*) and Browning (2.477, 478 *sherris*, 479 *sherris-brewage*).

Gentry is generally explained from *gentrice*, *gentris(e)*, OF *genterise*, which in the sense 'nobility' might be taken as a pl = 'the nobles' The form was easily associated with such words as *ancestry*, *infantry*, *cavalry*, *nobility*

Riddle OE *rædels(e)*, cf 1 3 114, 3 246, Wyclif has *the redels* as a sg, Tindal *redles* as a pl

Similar, but not quite indubitable, examples with the same ending are *bridle*, *girdle*, *shuttle*, *stickle*

Burial. OE *byrgels*, ME *an buriels* (Rob of Gl), *buriele* (Gen and Ex), the ending was assimilated to *-al* < OF *-aille* as in *funeral*

Asset. ME *assets* sg from F *assez*, Lat *ad-satis*, still sg in Bacon (assets . it, assets is, Bøgholm 15, 16). Ex. of the new sg. Review of R Jan 1906 21 a national asset of the first value

Eave OE *efes* cf Got *ubizwa* *Eaves* is now the ordinary form, apprehended as pl, *eave* is comparatively rare, NED has it from 1710, further Ouida, Wooden Shoes T 120 under a cottage eave | Ward El 162 Within its penthouse eave From *eave* are derived the participial adj *eaved* and the sb *eavings*, also *eavedrops* (Tennyson 304, not in NED), the ordinary form is *eavesdrop*, *eavesdrip*.

Marquee 'large tent' from F *marquise*

Sash (in *sash window*), 17th c *shash*, *shas* from F *chassis*, apparently mistaken for a pl.

Skate, orig *skates* sg, pl *scatzes* 1695 in Nares, from Dutch *schaats*, pl *schaatsen*

Caterpillar. probably from F *c(h)atepelose* 'hairy cat', *s* being subtracted as in the other words, the ending was thus assimilated to the ordinary *-ar*, *-er*

5.632. Words in *ese* formerly had a pl in *-eses* Bacon A 22.4 and 35.25 *the Chineses*, thus also Mi PL III. 436; Lithgow (1692, see Johnson R 175) *Maltezes*. Now the form in *-ese* is used as a pl (11 57), and vulgarly a

form in *-ee* is deducted as a sg, cf. Bret Harte's "Heathen Chinee", thus a *Maltee*, a *Portuguee*, etc

Yankee belongs here according to Logeman's ingenious explanation (*Volkskunde* XVI. 186, cf. my *Growth* p 187) · *Jan Kees* 'John Cheese' as a nickname of the inhabitants of the Dutch colonies in America

5.633. Other occasional back-formations of less importance, in which *s* has been deducted, are *aborigine* NED | *anana* NED | *antipod(e)* NED | *carrich* Sc from *carritches* F *catéchèse* | *chay* [ʃei] vg for *chaise*, NED from 1764, cf Pegge Anecd. 1803, 53 *Shay* and *po-shay*, Di D 355 a pony *shay*, see also his sketch The Tuggs's at Ramsgate, Ellis EEP IV 1068 | *claw* for *clause*, Pegge Anecd 1 c | *clow* NED | *coppy* for *coppice copse* | *corp* for *corpse* vg, Masefield O 92 a corp is a funny thing with no 'ed, also Sc and North E, EDD | *curch* Sc, EDD, from F *couvrechefs* = *couvre-chiefs* pl acc of *couvre-chief* | *cyclop* (see 2 67) may not belong here | *forcep* 18th c. for *forceps*, cf 2 67 | *fur* for *furze*, Joyce Ir 104 | *ho*, Sc, e g in Ramsay Christ's K 'a single stocking', from *hose* | *phalange* (Spencer, etc) 'one of the bones of the fingers or toes', from *phalanges*, pl of *phalanx*, cf, however, F *phalange*, It *falange* from the obl cases of *phalanx* | *pleb* 'vulgar fellow' from *plebs*, or possibly shortened from *plebeian* | *row* [rau] 'disturbance', if from *rouse* taken as a pl | *specie* vg, from *species* | *shimmy* vg for *chemise* | *wheatear* 'kind of bird, whitetail' for *wheatears* from *white* + *arse*

I suppose that *biznar*, which is found four or five times in Kipl S (152, etc) as a schoolboys' word for *business*, is a parallel case

5.634. *Summon* this rare sb. (one quotation in Davies's Suppl E Gloss) may be either directly from the vb or a back-formation from *summons*, used as a pl (Davies has a quotation from 1590 these so hasty summons, I have found one in Fielding T 1.100 all these summons) But ordinarily *summons* is a sg, from F *semonce*, in which /s/ has become [z], see I 6 62 Sh Mcb II. 1 6 a heaule summons, thus also Austen M 386, PP 83, Quincey 102, Di N 8, Beaconsf L 331, Thack V 186, N 842, Garrett T 29, Caine C 290, Meredith R 41, E 324, Ruskin Sel I 216 The pl *summonses* is avoided by some, but is found e g Ward D I 228, Doyle S 2 142, M 27 In juridical and sometimes in familiar language *summons* is used as a vb, see Alford Q 10, Galsworthy P 25, C 66

An original plural used as a singular.

5.71. This kind of metanalysis will most easily take place where there is something unusual in the formation of the plural form, or when the original singular does not at all or not often occur beside the plural In some of the following instances both these conditions are fulfilled.

5.711. First we have some French words with the plural ending voiceless [s] against the ordinary rule (cf. vol. I 6.61).

invoice < F *envois*, pl *invoices*

quince < F *coigns*, Ch Ros 1374 *coyns* as a monosyllabic pl

trace < F *trai(t)s*.

chess (always sg) is the F pl (or nom sg.) *esches*, an E pl *chesses* is probably never found

dice, F *des*, now more or less dissociated from *die*, which in various other senses ('stamp for coining', etc) has the regular pl *dies* [daiz] In the sense 'cube for gambling' *die* is found By DJ 2.199 all of theirs upon that die is thrown | Mered E 262 the die is cast But *dice* is found pretty early as a sg, and still Thack P 3 227 he swoar as he never would touch a card or a dice The pl *dyces* as early as 14th c That *dice* is no more felt as a pl, appears also from the formation of the vb *to dice* and the sb *a dicer*.

grece † 'a flight of stairs', OF *grez* pl of *gre* < *grado*, pl *greces* found occasionally Still in dialects.

[*lettuce* possibly from F pl *laitues*]

5.712. Also in some native words [s] is found contrary to the ordinary rule:

truce, orig pl of † *treow* 'pledge of truth', AR 286 triws, More U 263 truce . . it | Ml J 803 this truce pl *truces*.

bodice, orig. pl of *body* (a pair of bodies), pl *bodices*

To these may also be reckoned *bellows* and *gallows*,

because of the old pronunciation [belǝs, gælǝs], preserved vulgarly, while educated speech has now [belouz, gælouz]·

bellows, often *a pair of bellows*, *a bellows* is found from the year 1568 on (NED); see for instance Keats 2.148 My voice is not a bellows unto ire The pl *bellowses* is found in Hobbes 1676 (NED) and is now common dialectally (e. g Barrie M 329), but not in standard English

gallows, OE *galga* sg, Ch *galwes* (B 3924, 3941) in speaking of one instrument for hanging, Caxton a *galhouse* (Kellner's ed of Bl X; popular etymology??), More U 43 *one gallowes*, Sh *a gallows* (Tp V. 1 216); Sh uses also *gallows* in speaking of more than one instrument, yet he makes his gaoler say *gallowses* (Cymb. V 4.213) Latroon Engl Rogue (1665) II 148 *gallowses* From the 19 th c Stevenson T 26 *a gallows* | id. M 128 *the gallows itself* | Browning 2 317 *a* goodly gallows | Shaw P 54 on *that* gallows Annandale, Dict., recognizes *gallowses* as the only pl in the sense 'suspenders', which according to NED is dialectal, Sc or US

Gill 1621 makes a distinction between *flouerz* flores and *flouers* menses muliebres, singulari caret.

Cf also *sixpences* 5 171

5.721. The following are instances of metanalysis, though the *s*-ending has the normal pronunciation We have a few denominations of living beings (the first of them, however, are not completely parallel to the other cases, as they may never have been in use in the plural in *that* sense).

In (bahuvrihi) compounds we have formal plurals denoting one single being and used as singulars, as in *a sly boots* (Caine M 192 an old sly-boots) | *a smooth-boots* | *a lazybones* with the variants *lazyboots* and *lazylegs* (Di) | Sh Oth I. 1.66 does *the thick-lips* owe | Thack S 16 Louis XIV, his old *squaretoes* of a contemporary | Henley Burns 285 she was something of a *lightskirts* | *a sobersides*.

5.722. But when the first-word is a numeral, the sg form is used (cf also such OE adjectives as *fif-wintre* 'five years old', which may partly account for the type) *a five-leaf* (OE *fifleaf*, cf *cinquefoil*) | *a five-finger* | *a four-oar*, cf 7 1, 8 93. | *a nine-bark* We have also the sg form in *a blue-stocking*

5.723. *Buttons* as a name for a page was probably at first a jocular appellation, he had so many buttons that people would say "he is all buttons" (cf he is all ear, Hope D 57 said Dolly, all over dimples) or "he is nothing but buttons," and then he would be called Buttons. We may say *a buttons*, but hardly in the pl *buttonses*

Stripes as a similar name for a tiger is quoted by Sundén, Ellipt. Words 21 from NP '02

The word *boots* 'servant in hotel who cleans boots' is not quite parallel I suppose it originated in people *shouting* "Boots" when they wanted their boots, but this was taken as if they had *called* that particular servant — the effect was finally the same — and *boots* thus came to be the name of the man (A somewhat similar shifting is seen in Holberg From the signature *Imprimatur* with the name of the censor appended to it this Latin word was taken as the name of his title, and the question resulted "Who is this year's imprimatur"?) —A rare parallel to *boots* is *sails* as a designation for the sailmaker on board (Masefield C 145, NED from Hotten's Slang Dict and Smyth's Sailor's Word-book).

As the etymology of *a jackanapes* is doubtful, I do not know whether it should be mentioned here, the pl *two jackanapeses* is found Swift J 196.

5.724. *Better* and *elder* as substantives (with a possessive pronoun) are now only used in the pl, but this form (in -s) was formerly often (and is still vulgarly) applied to a single person·

Sh Shr II. 7 So well I know my dutie to my elders [seems to be addressed to one, but may be taken = those older than myself] | Sh As II 4 68 who cals? Clown

Your betters, Sir | Swift J 66 it is hard to see these great men use me like one who was their betters | Fielding T 1.221 though he is my betters | GE SM [vg] you're my elders and betters [speaking to one person].

5.725. *Commons* is not very frequent as a sg in the sense of 'common people, the third estate or their representatives' (NED quotation 1591) Di N 15 that most honorable and glorious Commons of England in Parliament assembled | Di D 524 the Commons was scandalized. —Cf. *commons* in a different sense 5 751

5.726. The legal term *tales*, originally a pl as in Latin, is now used as a sg. *award a tales* 'selection of people to supplement a jury'

5.73. Plural names of composite objects are in some instances treated as singulars:

a scissors = a pair of scissors, Thack H 18 a silver scissors | Egerton K 98, 100 | Doyle B 56 a very short-bladed scissors ('Rare' accord to NED, whose oldest example is from 1843).

a *pincers*; a *tongs*; a *tweezers* (Doyle M 121)

scales, only Sh Ro I 2 101 that christall scales, here *that* may be due to attraction to *crystal*.

bagpipes GE A 224 Give the lad a bagpipes instead of a rattle

buttocks Ml F 850 a buttocks †

colours (ab 1700) = 'a pair of colours' †, now in military language *a colour*, though the word is generally used in the pl

arms in the signification 'heraldic insignia' is nearly always pl; the NED has two quotations for the sg construction (Marlowe, Topsell), to which may be added Lamb E 1.152 What is become of the winged horse that stood over the former? a stately arms (Cf 5.742 on *Wingelbury Arms* as the name of an inn)

tweeze 'surgeon's box of instruments', F *étui*s, now obsolete. From *tweeze* is formed *tweezers*

5.741. Plural words indicating different kinds of places are sometimes used as singulars·

barracks: NP '97 the great universal barracks is kept together | Quiller M 200 in a deserted barracks —Formerly as in Gibbon M 140 a barrack

diggings NED

gardens· there is a fine Zoological Gardens in our town | Shaw 2 75 a tea gardens | O'Rell John Bull 59 By the side of Hyde Park stands Kensington Gardens.

grounds· a grounds with old trees, Trollope quoted Brynildsen

hustings, a hustings, Carlyle quoted ESt 6 374

jakes † (etymology unknown), Sh Lr II 2.72 a iakes, also Swift T 11 and 93

leads 'a lead roof', † occas. construed as sg NED

links: a golf links Shaw J 102 and often

lodgings: Caine M 29 at another lodgings (dialectal? at any rate not recognized) cf. 4.62

mews originally *mew* 'cage for hawks', Fielding T 1.167 my partridge-mew Pl *mews* 'range of such cages, later used for stabling', Stevenson D 157 is that a mews? The plural *meuses* occurs in a act of Parliament of 1797 (Alford Queen's Engl 18) and is frequent in police placards in London

quarters· my quarters was , Bentley quoted Flugel.

shambles: the old sg *shamble* OE *sc·amol* is obsolete, and *shambles* is construed as a sg Sh H6C I 1.71 to make a shambles of the Parliament House (in Oth IV 2 66 probably pl) | Stevenson M 224 Burron is a perfect shambles | Bennett W 2 224 the butcher's shop—what a bloody shambles | Doyle S 3.187.

stables: Di 264 smelling like a livery-stables.

stews BJo 1 30 a stews; now obsolete, used archaically by Kipling B 236 They'd call my house a common stews. According to Mulcaster 1582 p. 219 *stews* is a contraction of *stewhouse*, which is phonetically possible.

vaults. a wine-vaults.

works: a chemical works, a gas-works (frequent). Masefield C 322 a dye-works | Masefield M 200 an iron-works | Bennett A 46 Price's works was small | ib. 86, etc a works.

5.742. With these may be compared such geographical names as *Athens*, *Brussels*, *Marseilles*, *Naples*, etc, which are now always sg: *Brussels* is a fine city — Thus also *Flanders* Further Defoe P 27 as *Spitalfields was* then . *it* | Di Sk 408 Such *is the Wingleburg Arms* [an inn] at this day | Di N 179 *Manchester Buildings is* an eel-pot | Di D 320 telling you what *Doctors' Commons is* | ib. 326 *Doctors' Commons was* approached by a little low archway | London A 345 *the Solomon Islands is* not big enough for the pair of us | ib 263 *the Solomons was* no place for a woman. Cf *the United States* 5 18.

5.751. Plural mass-names used as singulars.

Chintz, the name of a kind of printed cotton cloth, is originally the pl of *chint* (from Hindi *chînt*, NED), the pl *chintzes* is occasionally found

baize 'woollen stuff', † sg *bay* < F *baies* (from *bai*, the name of the colour); pl occasionally *bayses*

commons at Oxford 'a definite portion of victuals' bring me a commons of bread and butter

bitters: Pinero M 39 You can give me a bitters = a glass of bitter medicine with alcohol, thus different from *a bitter* The sg use not in NED

5.752. *Brains*, in Sh sometimes construed as sg: Hml III 1 182 Whereon his braines still beating, puts him thus From fashion of himselfe [read *brain*, the *s* from *still*? or *brain's*?] | Lear I 5.7 If a mans braines were in's heeles, wert [= were *it*] not in danger of kybes? Now probably only in *much brains* and *little brains* Phillpotts M 273 if I had as *much* brains in my head as Ruth has in her little finger | Zangwill G 87 I felt the *little* brains I had getting addled in my head. The verb with *brains* would now always be in the pl, and the plural conception is clearly seen in Hope R 33 unless heaven sent me a

fiesh *set of brains,* I should be caught in much the same way | Masefield M 158 I haven t got the brains I suppose you'll say *they're* not essential They are essential, and you've probably got as *many* as any writer —In the same sense ('intelligence') the sg *brain* is also used, as in Masefield M 148 his *brain* was heavy | Bennett B 65 when she has *brain* . I have no *brains* Cf 5 281 and 283

5.753. *Wages* is often found construed as a sg, though not now so often as formerly More U 67 *a* certeyne, limityd wayges | ib. 302 theire dayly wages *is* so lytle | AV Rom 6 23 the wages of sinne *is* death (where *death* may be the subject) | Thack V 47 (vg) their wages *is* no better | Trollope D 2 109 not knowing what wages *is* | NP 10 how *much* wages do you get? Examples of the pl construction Bronte P 23 shabby wages *they are,* too | Finnemore Social Life 3 his wages *were* a penny a day less than the sums given above The sg *wage,* which many grammars do not recognize, is now extremely frequent. Wells U 188 the minimum wage . a certain wage | Collingwood R 314 a fair wage | Hardy F 390 a fixed wage | Stevenson A 49 the wage | ib 53 a small wage | Caine C 268 three halfpence an hour was the average wage

5.754. *Pains* in the signification 'trouble, application in working' is often used as a sg, especially in the combination *much pains* Ascham S 78 take so much paines; thus also Swift often, Defoe R 271, Fielding 3.624 after much fruitless pains, Sheridan 198, Coleridge B 48, Scott A 2 315, Wordsw P 4 112, Di D 604, Ruskin Sel 1.267, Black F 2 8, Darwin L 2 379 too much pains cannot be taken —Di DC 327 a great deal of pains — Thus also *little pains,* e g Sh John III 2 9

The form of the verb frequently, as in the Darwin quotation, is indifferent to number Where number has to be shown, authors disagree; we find the plural in Kingsley H 302 how *much of the pains* which I took *were* taken to please him | Skeat Ch VI, p X *much pains have*

been bestowed on the mode of numbering the lines | Review of Reviews Apr. '95. 323 why so *much pains were* taken. But the singular is well established· Mulcaster Positions 1581 58 upon what matter *was all this paines* bestowed? | Sh Shr IV. 3.43 *all my paines* is sorted to no proofe | Minto Prose Lit. VIII *every* [NB] *pains has* been taken Note the distinction as given by Elphinstone 1787 vol 2 133 pains ar evverivhare felt, dho pains is not evverivhare taken *Pains* is repeated by *they* Ruskin Art of Engl 276 take the pains, and they will be irksome Note also the retention of s in the compound *painstaking*

The use of *pain* in the sense of mod. *pains*, as in Sh H8 III 2 72 hath tane *much paine* In the kings busi-nesse, has now disappeared; it occurred also in the compound *painful* = painstaking (frequent in Sh, also Mi A 5) A good example of the mod distinction is Hope D 61 she *takes the utmost pains* to conceal from her mother-in-law anything calculated to distress that lady. She never *gives pain* to anyone

5.755. *Means*· the old form was *mean(e)* in the sg, e. g Malory 118, 119 by no meane | Ml T 4028, Straw III 1 44 a meane | Lyly C 296 by that meane | Sh Ro 1734 no sudden meane of death, though nere so meane (pun!) | Sh Wint IV 4 89 Yet Nature is made better by no meane, But Nature makes that Meane (thus often Sh, strangely by itself H8 V 3 146)

The pl *means* of course is frequent: More U 250 by none of thies means | Sh Cy IV. 2 403 Some falls are meanes the happier to arise | Sh Lucr 1140 these means | Johnson R 102 marriage is one of the means of happi-ness | Di D 140 Mr Micawber's means were straitened at about this time | Poe S 25 there were no means of deter-mining .

In a great many combinations the context does not show whether *means* is sg or pl, and this contributes to bring about the new use of *means* as a sg form: Ch B 480 by certein menes | Malory 129 by the meanes of Morgan |

1b. 159 by her meanes | Sh Merch III 1 65 healed by the same meanes | H4A I. 3 120 with the speediest meanes | Ro II. 4 192 bid her deuise some meanes | by any (no, what) means | by means of, etc

Means with sg sense and construction (oldest ex in the NED from 1512) is found in More U (36 that meanes, 175 a meanes), and there are eight indubitable examples in Sh (a meanes Wint IV 4 864, that meanes Merch. II 1 19, etc) Other examples are: Mi A 14 by this crafty means | Defoe P 57 a great means | Stevenson D 95 was this a means of safety? | Poe S 18 every other means. — As a mass-word in Masefield M 139 You haven't got *much means* of transport

In the sense 'that which is intermediate' the old sg form *mean* has been preserved

5.76. Plural names of diseases (also a kind of 'mass') are occasionally used as sg:

glanders: pl const as sg NED

measles 'the pl form is now usually construed as a sg' NED, as in 'measles is decidedly infectious'

rickets shingles

pox the sg *pock* is preserved in *pock-mark, pock-pitted*, also Di DC 64 the *cowpock* Pl Ch *pokkes*, BJo 3 29 the pox approach *A pox* was very common, especially in a kind of oath *a pox o' that* (frequent Sh, etc) | Rehearsal 55 a pox take 'em | Congreve 236 what a pox does she mean? | Fielding T 4 172 why, what a pox is the matter now? Swift has the double pl T 33 with *poxes* ill cured. As the name of a disease, *pox* is hardly ever used now, though *smallpox* is: Quincey 275 *that* same small-pox | Macaulay B 119 the smallpox had set *its* mark on him | Ellis Man 436 small pox *is* more fatal to males than to females | Kipling L 132 he caught the small-pox in Cairo, carried *it* here and died of *it* | Bennett W 2 131 she had caught smallpox and she died of *it* —Cf. also *bullet-pocks* (Doyle S 3 198).

5.77. The following instances of metanalysis are not easily classifiable, most of them indicate human activities or periods set apart for such.

5.771. *Amends* the form *amend* from F *amende* is and has always been very rare in English; the word is chiefly used in the phrase *to make amends*, and here *amends* is often felt as a sg. Thus already Ch Duch 526 thamendes *is* light to make; the oldest example in NED is from Pecock (1449) Mi S 745 what amends *is* in my power | Defoe G 10 make *a* full amends | Fielding T 4 210 *a* very pitiful amends | Austen M 385 *a* rich amends | Austen P 80 *every* possible amends As a pl in Hardy F 416 You owe me amends—let that be your way of making *them*

5.772. *Thanks* is regularly used as a pl: *Many thanks* | *a thousand thanks* | Goldsmith 624 Thanks, madam, *are* unnecessary | Wordsw P 14 233 Thanks in sincerest verse *have* been Poured out | Austen M 235 thanks *are* out of the question | Di Do 225 there *are* no thanks due to me | Hardy F 7 she might have looked her thanks, but she did not speak *them* | Stevenson U VI Thanks, when *they* are expressed, *are* often more embarrassing than welcome. When *thanks* is construed as a sg, it is, as it were, a quoted word Sh Ro 1330 else *is* his thankes too much (= his word 'thanks') | Sh Ant II 6 48 am well studied for *a liberall thanks*, which I do owe you | Cor V 1.46 *that* thankes | Sh Haml I 1.8 For this releefe *much* thankes Though this use as sg is now hardly heard in conversation, *much thanks* is now and then still written (Ward D 1 50 and E 197, Review of R Sept '05 300), probably as a reminiscence from Sh

5.773. *Tiding* is obsolete, though used by Swinburne T 138. *Tidings* is generally pl· AV Exod. 33 4 *these* euill tidings | Sh R2 IV 4 536 tidings . *they* But occasionally it is sg AV 2 Sam 18 25 there *is* tidings in his mouth (on account of *there is*? cf 6 8) | ib 18 31 tidings is brought | Peele D 451 *this* bitter tidings | Sh R2

II. 1.272 How neere the tidings of our comfort *is* | (Twain) the tidings *was* heard | Lang T 130 Then *comes* tidings that Cf *news* 5.781

5.774. *Assize* is rare (Hewlett Q 445 the assize was fixed for 12th April; Bennett W 1 258 the grand assize, but ib. 255 the Stafford Assizes), generally *assizes* is used, and that is sometimes construed as a sg (not in NED): Fielding T 1.212 at *an* assizes | Di Sk 407 at *every* assizes Bunyan has both constructions: G 126 the next assizes, which *are* called Midsummer assizes . . at *that assizes* He also has *assizes* as a real pl G 131 between these two assizes (= two assemblies)

Sessions as a sg occurs at any rate in ElE Decker S 2 at *a* sessions | Ml J 1673 To morrow is the sessions; you shall to *it* (cf. 840 sessions day) | Edw3 II. 2.166 the vniuersall sessions *cals* to count This packing euill Sh Wint III. 2 1 *This* sessions *pushes*

Holidays is sometimes treated as a sg: Southey 1825 (NED) spent *one summer holidays* with his mother | Vachell H 207 I shall have many expenses *this holidays*

Inversely *holiday* is often used (in England, not in U. S in the sense of vacation, comprising either more or less than one day Gibbon M 200 a short holiday [many days] | Bronte P 59 I might now take some hours of holiday | Di D 135 to make a day's holiday together | GE M 1 244 they might have a holiday in the evening | Ru P 1 25 two months at Midsummer, when my father took his holiday | Gissing B 502 they must have a thorough holiday abroad | Kipl L 44 after a holiday [of a few months] in the country | Ward M 320 even in these days of holiday

A jousts in Tennyson (433) is evidently due to Malory, who uses it thus: 41 a Iustes and a tournement | 49,76 a grete Iustes

An innings is common in cricket and in parliamentary language Thack S 81 | Trilby 272 | Dickinson S 109 | NP '96 a long enough innings.

5.775. The names of sciences and occupations in *-ics* often retain their plural construction (verb in pl, pronoun *they*), but there is a strong tendency to treat

them as singulars (verb in sg, pronoun *it*). In the great majority of cases it is impossible to see whether the word is taken in one or the other number He studied *economics*, etc The old sg in *-ic* is still found in *arithmetic*, *gymnastic* (though *gymnastics* is much more frequent), *logic*, *magic*, *music*, *polemic*, and *rhetoric* The forms in *-ics* apparently began with such words as *mathematics*, comprising the various branches of that science, cf F *les mathématiques*, Bacon has *athletic*, *arithmetic*, *cosmetic*, *metaphysic*, *physic*, but both *mathematic* and *mathematics* (Bøgholm, p 17)

From modern authors I have noted the following uses, in most cases it would serve no purpose to give the quotations in full

æsthetics pl Wilde

athletics pl Synge, G Carpenter.

economics sg Kidd.

ethics sg Chesterton, World's Work —pl Seeley, Wilde —Without *-s* Dickinson S 46 it is absurd to accuse us of indifference to *ethics* a new economic régime necessarily postulates *a new ethic*

linguistics sg Whitney

mathematics pl Collingwood

metaphysics sg Cooley, Jeaffreson; Mrs Browning A 198 A larger metaphysics —pl Mc Carthy, Jeaffreson, Shelley. —Without *-s* Kingsley H XIII *a metaphysic* at once Christian and scientific

phonetics sg Sweet —pl once heard phonetics, how is one to learn *them*?

physics sg Spencer.

politics sg Chesterton, Collier, Dickinson, Stevenson, Wells (N 263 politics *was* a great constructive process; ib. 483), Wilde —pl Caine, Harraden (F 40 to cultivate a language or two, a little music, a few politics—rather a strange expression), Hope, Kingsley, Lamb, Lecky, McCarthy, Merriman, Norris, Seeley, Shaw, Stevenson, Trollope, Mrs Ward, Wilde.

statistics sg Carlyle (S 76 *a Statistics* of imposture) — pl Stevenson, Shaw — Without *-s*: Carlyle Latt 140 *a* regular *statistic* | Merriman S 139 there were too many details — too *much statistic* | Norris O 453 *every statistic* verified.

tactics pl Macaulay.

5.78. Some doubtful cases.

5.781. *News* is generally supposed to be a plural, parallel to *greens* This, however, is by no means certain, as the word is found so early that substantivized adjectives did not yet take *-s*, and as *-s* is retained in compounds: *newspaper, newes-crammed* (Sh As I 2.161), etc., cf on the other hand *greengrocer* without *s* The *s* therefore may be originally, partly at least the genitive ending, as in Dutch *nieuws*, cf such partitive phrases as *huæt niwes oððe ealdes* (Toller from Cod Exon. 115); but the absence of ME instances makes the explanation doubtful *News* occurs very often indeed as sg in Sh, e g. Wint III. 2 148 *This newes is* mortall to the Queene. From more recent authors I quote Mi S 1538 For evil *news rides* post, while good *news baits*; cf. Di N 401 ill news *travels* fast | Goldsm 646 *this news puts* me all in a flutter | Scott A 2.223, 339 | Shelley Cenci III. 1 310 | Beaconsf L 147, 304, etc. | Di D 488 no news, they say, is good news, also Zangwill G 218 | Thack N 749, 892 | Morris Ep 51 | Garnett T 129 | Shaw C 260 | Kipl J 1 88 | Stevenson D 288 | Hope R 125 | James S 1 so *much news*, etc.

News as a pl was formerly pretty frequent, thus in Sh, e.g. Ro III 5 124 *these are newes* indeed | Lr II 1 6 the newes abroad, I meane the Whisper'd *ones*, for *they* are yet but ear-kissing arguments | Peele D 483 *these* cursed newes | Greene F 6 95, 6 112, 10 163 | Mi S 1569 Suspense in news is torture; speak *them* out | Scott A 2.223 what *are* the news? | Hewlett Q 153 as he announced *these* news The last quotation is decidedly an archaism: in the natural language of today the word is only sg Caine, M 74 and 268, P 141 gives as vulgar the form

newscs, which may not be genuine On *piece of news* see 5 34.

5.782. *Goods* presents the same doubt as to the origin of *s* (cf Dan *gods*, orig gen) In OE we had the pl as in *mid his godum* 'with his property' Chaucer uses *goodes* and *good*, thus also Bale Three Lawes (1538) 1227 *great goodes*, but 1230 so *moch good* Malory 61 al the goodes that *ben* (pl) goten at this bataill lete *it* (sg) be serched | Ml J 379 of *these* goods | AV Luke XII 19 Thou hast *much* goods layd vp Sh has *goods* in fourteen places, but it is impossible to see whether it is construed as a sg or pl Now it is generally felt to be a pl (the goods *are* to be delivered), though *a goods* is rarely found (GE, quoted Storm 125) Many, though not all, would avoid saying *many goods* Note *a goods-train*

5.783. *Odds* used to be often construed as a sg Ml T 310 *an* ods | Sh H5 IV 3 5 'tis *a* fearefull oddes | R 2 III 4 89 with *that* oddes | Oth II 3 185 | Ant IV 15 66 the oddes is gone | Mi PL IV 447 preeminent by so *much* odds Now *odds* is always in the pl, thus invariably in the common phrase *the odds are that* . (By DJ 3.23, but without *the* 12.18; Doyle B 73, etc); *odds* may of course also be pl in the variant Lang Essays in Little 78 it is odds against five of the survivors still reading Greek books See also Stevenson D 124 against all *these* odds | Kipl J 1 67 *those* odds, and finally the combination *odds and ends*

5.784. In *whereabouts* the *s* is the adverbial ending; hence it is correctly used as a sg in Doyle S 3 93 her whereabouts *was* discovered. But in newspapers one finds also "The vanished member's whereabouts *are* unknown to this day" (Westm. Gaz March 3. '06)

5.791. Numerical metanalysis is rare with the ending *-n*, and the few examples may be otherwise explained (see Morphology sub *-n*)

chick, chicken. The OE form was *cicen* (*cycen*, related to *coc* 'cock'), n , pl *cicenu*, which would regularly become

ModE sg *chick*, pl *chicken*. This is the inflexion still in use in dialects (SW), and it is given by Dyche, Dict. 1740, Wallis 1653 says: "*an ox* bos, *a chick* pullus (avium), pluraliter *oxen*, *chicken* (nam qui dicunt in singulari *chicken* & in plurali *chickens*, omnino errant)" The plural *chicken* is found in Heywood (1600), Southey (1829), NED. An educated lady told me in 1887: 'a couple of *chicken*, never in the whole of England have I heard two *chickens*' *Chick* is now felt as a separate word, it is used very often in speaking of a little child, and it has the pl *chicks* (GE Mill 1.337, A 60,131 immediately after *chickens*), quotations for the sg are Trollope D 3 251 an additional ducal chick | Kipl L 90 like a hen with one chick | Stockton R 169, 170 (pl ib. 146 chicks, 170 chickens) | Sinclair IR 9 —There seems to have been a tendency towards using in sg *chick*, in pl *chickens*, thus in Sh (twice *chick*, four times *chickens*), apart from (the possibly spurious play) H6B, where *chicken* occurs twice (III. 1 249, 251) probably as a pl, NED has a quotation 1547 Two greate *chykens*, the one was a hen *chik* and the other a cock *chyk* Alford B 20 would establish "a leaning to *chicken* for the generic plural, *chickens* for the individualised. For the *chicken* are kept *en masse*, *the chickens* run in, one by one." This, however, is probably fanciful

Fern, OE *fearn* NED does not mention a sg *fere*, which I find in Wallis 1653, p. 70 after the just quoted passage: "Item *a fere* filix, pl^{ter} *fern* (verùm nunc plerumq; *fern* utroq, numero dicitur, sed & in plurali *ferns*, nam *fere* & *feres* propè obsoleta sunt)"

In Alabama, according to Payne, *oxens* is found in pl, and *oxen* is often sing.

Ramson 'kind of garlic' OE *hram(e)sa* pl *hram(e)san*; the *n* being transferred to the sg, with a new pl *ramsons*.

5.792. *Breeches*. OE had *brōc* 'trousers', pl *brēc*; in ME after the disappearance of the *o*-form *breech* was taken as a sg (Ch B 2059, in C 948 it may be either number); *breech* is found Swift T 87, but very early the

pl *breeches* (*breches* 1205) began to be used, and it is now the only form, the vowel now is shortened [britʃiz], but in the compound *breech-loader* the vowel is still long.

5.793. In this chapter we have seen several examples of new plurals formed by adding a pl ending to what was already a plural.

Examples from other languages of similar 'plurals to the second power' are Dan. *love* from *lov* < *lǫg* pl of *lag* 'law', G *tränen*, etc Murray (D 161) has the following interesting remarks: "I have known a second or double plural to be formed from such words as *schuin*, *feit*, *kye*. An old lady met a company of muddy-booted lads at the door with the injunction, "Nuw, screape yer *feits* weil, an' pyt aff aa o' yer *schuins* i' the passage!" With all diffidence, as became one of the culprits, I ventured to remark upon the oddness of such a form as *schuins*, but was rather testily told "Gin ye had them tui clean, ye wad ken the difference atween ae bodie's *schuin* an' aa o' yer *schuins*" The argument of course admitted of no reply, but I have often thought of the words as illustrating the numerous southern double plurals *calver-en*, *lamber-en*, *eyr-en*, etc , of which *children*, *brethren*, and *kine* (*sing* child, brother, cow: *pl* child-er, brether, ky, *double pl.* child-er-en, brether-en, ky-en, ky-ne), have come down into modern English Did the original plurals—still preserved in the northern dialect, *childer*, *brether*, *ky*—come to be used collectively for the offspring or members of a single family, the herd of a single owner, so that a second plural inflection became necessary to express the *brethren* and *children* of many families, the *ky-en* of many owners, or as my old friend would have expressed it, "aa o' thair *kyes*?" All the words so inflected seem to be the names of animals or objects naturally found in groups; and in modern English we restrict *brothers*, which replaces *brether*, to those of one family, using *brethren* for those who call each other *brother*, though of different families."

This explanation very well applies to some of the

examples given in this chapter and also to such vulgarisms as Thack Y 39 there was 8 sets of chamberses (*chambers* = one set of rooms) and Orig English 71 cats have clawses (each cat has claws) and ib. 71 cats have 9 liveses (each cat has nine lives). But it does not apply to other vg examples of double plural endings, as Di Do 103 when you have masterses and missesses a teaching of you.

Chapter VI.

Number in Secondary Words.

6.11. The logically ideal condition of a language would require that secondary words (adjuncts and verbs, ch. I) should not show any distinction of number, as this category applies really to primary words only This condition (which is carried through in such an artificial language as Ido) has been partially reached in English through a long historical process of simplification, and in such sentences as

the little child cried
the little children cried
some days must be dark and dreary

only the primary words (*child*, *children*, *days*) show which number is meant, while the secondary words (*the*, *little*, *some*, *cried*, *must*, *dark*, *dreary*) are the same in both numbers In other cases, however, the primitive linguistic structure, in which secondary words also indicated number, has been preserved, and English is therefore not wholly exempt from the difficulties arising in the older stages of our family of languages, from what is called 'concord', i. e. the agreement between secondary words and the principals they belong to. The distinctive numerical forms of adjectives and verbs are mentioned in 2 22 (2 7) and 2 24.

Adjuncts.

6.12. With regard to adjuncts, the only thing that requires exemplification here, is perhaps the use of *what* as an adjunct to plural words as in Sh Ven 188 *What bare excuses* mak'st thou? | Hawthorne S 201 *What questions* are these? | Stevenson M 274 *What children* you are! | [Hope In 265 my investments . I want you to tell me what I ought to sell and *what few* I might keep]

6.13. The advantage of having the same form for both numbers in adjuncts is seen when they are made to qualify at the same time one sb in the sg and another in the pl number, which would not be possible for instance in French:

my wife and children (= ma femme et mes enfants) | *the local press and committees* (= la presse locale et les comités locaux) | Fielding 3 493 he desired her to dismiss *the children and servant* | Congreve 226 I reverence *the sun, moon, and stars* | Austen M 103 *the season and duties* which brought Mr Bertram back to Mansfield took Mr Crawford into Norfolk | Di Do 236 among *the dust and worms* | Stevenson JHF 64 by *the air and sounds* of the open city || Ml T 1345 *the Persean fleete and men of war* | Di Do 133 he had arranged *the future life and adventures* of Walter so differently | ib. 66 it's not polite to eat *all the mutton chops and toast* | ib 357 *all her life and hopes, and griefs* | Phillpotts M 13 seeing *all my mistakes and silliness* | Ritchie M 167 beyond the boundaries of *common life and moods* | Thack P I 86 a man of *no small talents and humour* | Austen M 8 *their rank, fortune, rights, and expectations*, will always be different

A rare combination is found in Hardy F 19 she must have had *a beautiful neck and shoulders*, where *beautiful* is common to the sg word *a* (NB) *neck* and the pl *shoulders* Thus also Ward D 2.37 an angular person, with *a prominent mouth and teeth*

Predicatives.

6.211. As nearly all adjectives are uninflected, no question of concord arises with regard to adjectival predicatives (some days must be *dark* and *dreary*). Note, however, that *too many* is analogically extended to cases in which only one is implied, as in Sh Ro I 1.135 Being one too many by my weary selfe | Ward D 3 179 she made one too many in the omnibus | NP '13 there is no word too many in the description | Bennett W 1 279 a journey of five hundred yards to the Rectory had been one journey too many (*too many* is the predicative, *one journey* the indication of measure, similarly in the other instances)

This leads to the colloquial signification of *too many* = 'too strong or powerful' as in Di T 1 246 This boy is getting too many for me! (also Pinero M 28, GE M 1.12) | ib 2 123 This world's been too many for me, my lad | Doyle S 5.64 You are too many for me when you begin to get on your theories, Mr Holmes | Twain H 1 29 this was too many for me (vg)

6.212. A somewhat similar instance of numerical disagreement between subject and predicative (or apposition) is seen in such sentences as these Di N 90 he will not object to *sleeping five* in a bed | Hope C 94 I hate *riding three* in a cab | Maurier T 47 he would not *sit thirteen* to dinner

6.221. Substantives as predicatives will generally be in the same number as the subject though exceptions are by no means rare, especially when the predicative is a collective (They were a gay company) or a mass-name (Both dresses are silk) or may be taken as such (Stevenson M 129 all sins are murder)

6.222. Conflicts between a plural subject and a singular predicative noun are occasionally found when the idea of individuality is naturally prominent in the predicate

Sh. Meas V, 179 she may be a punke: for *many* of them, *are neither maid, widow, nor wife* | Sharp, Architects o E Lit 197 his personal beauty, to which so *many women* fell *a victim*.

6.223. *To be* (or *stand*) *witness* is a set phrase = 'to witness', used with the sg form even when referring to a plural subject:

Sh Merch II. 6.32 Heauen and thy thoughts are witness | Shr IV. 2 24 mine eyes are witnesse of her lightnesse. Other ex see Sh.-Lex This may be due partly to the old signification of *witness* 'testimony, evidence'

The sg of the predicative is also used in other set phrases: *they* stood *sentry* | Hewlett F 237 two *girls* sat *sentinel* beside her —After *turn* the sg is found in Gissing R 188 *Enthusiasts* have tried the experiment of turning *husbandman* | Raleigh Sh 161 young *gallants* with no intention to turn *husband*

6.224. The sg is found when the predicative has the article *the* (= 'the typical'), as in Barrie T 23 *they* were too much *the lady* to make up to a gentleman who so obviously did not want them | Wells V 176 the men . Brutes! *They* are *the brute* still with us! | Hewlett F 96 "he is not my lover He is my master." Oh, of course,—*they* are always *the master*. If *we* are *the mistress* we are lucky

6.225. The pl is used in combinations with *all* = 'nothing but' as in Di D 208 the room seemed to be all nooks and corners This is especially frequent in appositional combinations, in which it is semi-predicative Sh Hml I. 2 149 she followed my poore fathers body Like Niobe, all tears | Mrs Browning A 68 And everybody stood, all eyes and tears, To see and hear | Thack N 471 a society all smoke and all painters did not suit him | Hope D 57 said Dolly, all over dimples | Wells T 70 he crouched for a time, all ears and peering eyes —The sg is found (to avoid misunderstanding with *pupils* = 'schol-

ars'?) in Galsworthy C 292 Her eyes, all pupil, stared at this man.

6.226. The logical connexion between the sg *every* and the plural idea is brought out clearly in Galsworthy C 280 *every sound and scent and shape* became *the sounds and scents and shapes* of evening It would be hard to avoid the grammatical incongruity in such instances

Be friends with.

6.231. In "I am friends with him" the plural *friends* is due to the plural idea "I and he", the identical construction is frequent in Danish (and has points of contact with Italian *andiamo con X* = 'I and X' and similar constructions in many languages) Roister 86 I will be as good friends with them as ere I was | Sh LLL V 2 552 I must needs be friends with thee | Sh H4A III. 3 203 | Sh Ado I. 1 91 I will hold friends with you | Sh Meas I 2.185 that she make friends to the strict deputy | Thack V 15 Come, Joseph, be friends with Miss Sharp | Darwin L 1 39 I also became friends with some of the Newhaven fishermen | ib 1 237 | GE M 1 134 he would have got friends with her sooner | Di Do 158 Make friends with your new mistress | Benson D 100 she had made great friends with Mrs V || Leigh Fry Shreds (1890) 238 he hated to be out of friends with anyone (affected!)

Also without indication of whom one is friends with Street Autob Boy 21 I want to be friends

6.232. Other words, too, are used similarly in the pl. Sh H 5 II 1 108 be *enemies* with me | Stevenson B 55 "Well, Dick, we're friends now.' "Nay, I never was *unfriends.*' | Doyle M 202 I was *shipmates* with fifty dead men | Kipl M 224 I was great *pals* with a man called Hicksey

6.233. Parallel expressions are: *be quits with someone,* from *we are quits* (though the *-s* is of doubtful origin), formerly also *we are quit* | Wintle Scandal 66 We have

settled our little account, and I can *cry quits* of her in every respect | I offer to *go halves* with you.

6.241. The general tendency to make the numbers of subject and predicative agree leads to the use of *they are* (*these are*, etc) before a plural, where other languages have often the sg of the pronoun as subject (*ce sont, c'est, es ist,* etc)·

Di Do 30 but if *they were the last words* I had to utter, I should still say . | Di DC 105 I cannot conceive *whose stockings they can have been* that Peggotty was always darning | ib 587 I meet a pair of bright eyes, and a blushing face; *they are Dora's eyes and face* | Benson D 220 don't mind her, *they're only her foreign manners* | Stevenson JHF 210 *these are but playings* upon words | ib M 198 *They were not words* that came to h. *t, they were sounds* more beautiful than speech

6.242. This is different from the use of *it is* (even before a plural word) when *it* is only a preparatory subject and a relative clause follows· it was my two youngest sisters who knew her best = my two y s knew her best Here Ben Jonson's *they* is exceptional: 3 158 *they are such* as you are *that have* brought me into that predicament.

6.243. There is no disagreement between subject and predicative in the following instances, as *what* may be plural: Lamb E2 VIII he never cared for the society of *what are* called good people | Coleridge Sh 90 *what have* often been censured as Shakespeare's conceits *are* completely justifiable | Austen S 147 *what are* your views? | Caine P 37 to ask you certain questions "*What are* they?" | Holmes A 47 in consequence of *what are* called religious mental disturbances | Dickinson R 41 from *what appear* to be the general possibilities of the case | Stevenson U *5 the physician has generosity and tact; and *what are* more important, Heraclean cheerfulness and courage | Wilde L 20 What I want *are* details

Concord of the Verb.

6.31. The general rule, which needs no exemplification, is for the verb to be in the singular with a singular subject, and in the plural with a plural subject. Occasionally, however, the verb will be put in the sg, even if the subject is plural; this will especially happen when the verb precedes the subject, because the speaker has not yet made up his mind, when pronouncing the verb, what words are to follow. Thus even in OE (Past C 157 Eac was gesewen calle ða heargas) and ME (Ch F 660 That never yet was herd so griete mervailles): More U 121 Out of euery one of thies famelies *cummeth* euery yeare in to the cytie *XX persons* whiche *haue* . . | Sh Hml III 3 14 that spirit upon whose weal *depends and rests The lues* of many | Lang T 130 Then *comes tidings* that . (5 773) | Doyle S 5 227 Under the latter heading *is included*, no doubt, not only *those* who may have taken him away, but also *those* who Cf on, *there is* below 6 8

6.32. Titles of books, containing a plural, are generally treated as singulars (quotation words):

The Newcomes is one of Thackeray's finest books | Harrison Ru 70 in 1853, the *Stones of Venice* was completed | [Ru P 3 29 a little fourteenth century Hours of the Virgin]

But the plural may be used with such descriptive titles as the *Canterbury Tales* (the C T is, or are, Chaucer's chief claim to immortality) | Dickens's *American Notes* were published in 1842 | Grant Allan First Book 50 "Strange Stories" *were* well received —Shelley speaks of his "Cenci" in the pl Pr 295 the Cenci which *are* at the printers

With the former treatment of these pl words may be compared the following sg with a quotation word in the pl Shaw 2 110 *Wicked people* [i e the expression "wicked people"] *means* people who have no love —A different case is seen in Bennett A 120 and all the eyes of the market-place was preferable to the chance of those eyes—where the sg is justified, because the idea is 'being seen by '

6.33. In some arithmetical expressions a singular subject may take the verb in the pl, because really referring to a plurality

Defoe G 130 *not one in ten* of them *write* it so bad | Zangwill G 70 there are lots of engagements, but *not one per cent come* to anything | Defoe R 230 whence *one half* of their miseries *flow* | Shelley 65 the *half* of humankind *were* mewed | Macaulay E 4 60 fifteen hundred men, of whom about *one half were* Europeans | Shaw Fab 29 there *were not one-tenth* so many grievances

6.34. In the ordinary formulas used in arithmetical calculations usage wavers with regard to the number of the verb. An English friend once told me that he should say "How much *is* five times ten? What *is* twice three?" but "What *do* seven and eight make?" though he admitted that others would say *does*. In Rippmann's Reader I find What *are* twice three? What *is* 1 + 2 + 4? How many times three *is* nine? Ten *is* one and nine Twelve *is* three times four Twice twelve *are* 24 Five tens *are* fifty Cf. also

Browning T 4 58 *Twice two makes* four | Holmes A 61 All at once we find that *twice two make* five | Zangwill G 14 *Twice a hundred francs are* two hundred francs | Quincey 174: *18 times one quarter* of a hundred *is* = one quarter of 1800 | London A 65 before they know what *six-times-six is* | Goldsm 645 *twenty added to twenty makes* just fifty and seven | Di Do 305 *six and six is* twelve, and six eighteen —The sg is related to the unification mentioned 5 12

6.41. When the subject is one of the pronouns that have the same form in both numbers, *none*, *any*, *(n)either*, *who*, *which*, *what* (but not *you* 2.89), the verb may be in either number, according as the singular or plural idea is uppermost in the speaker's mind

6.42. Examples of *none* with the plural

More U 120 *none* of the cities *desire* | Sh (often, e g)

LL II. 51 *none offend* where all alike do dote | V 2.69 | Mcb V 4 13 And *none serue* with him but constrained things | Goldsm 657 as among the ladies there *are none* ugly, so among the men there *are none* old | Johnson R 91 *None are* wretched but by *their* own fault | Scott Iv 113 we shall meet again where there *are none* to separate us | Bronte P 95 *none* of her features *move* | Ru P 1 163 *none* of us *seem* to have thought | Morris E 110 b whence *none return* | Shaw C 100 I suppose *none* of your acquaintance *take* an interest in art | Stev JHF 177 *none are* happy, *none are* good, *none are* respectable, that are not gyved like us | Kipl J 2 21 *none know* when that was | ib 2 31.

Examples of *none* with the singular·

More U 263 *none* of them selfes *taketh* anye portion | Mi PL V. 59 *Deigns none* to ease thy load? | Dryden 373 *None* but the brave *deserves* the fair | Johnson R 103 All agree in one judgment, and *none* ever *varies his* opinion | Scott Iv 122 your sovereignty, to which *none vows* homage more sincerely than ourself | Kingsley H 229 I know, *none knows* better, what those fine words mean | Browning 1.525 b *none cares* how | Bradley S 5 These things are all possible, but *none* of them *is* presupposed by the question we are going to consider | Stevenson Dy 59 *none has* more keenly felt them·

This use of *none* is now only literary, in conversational language *no one* or *nobody* is used, and these may be called the sg forms of the pl *none* But, strange enough, many grammarians object to the use of *none* with a pl verb, with the pseudo-logical argument that *none* contains *one*, which is necessarily sg They might just as well object to the combination *no children*, which etymologically contains *one* just as much as *none* does: *none* and *no* are differentiations of OE *nān* = *ne ān* "not one".

None + *of* with a sg substantive of course takes the verb in the singular Ru C 109 *none of this wrong is* done with deliberate purpose

In many sentences it is impossible to say whether

none is to be taken as sg or pl· Sh Err 11.2.220 let none enter | Carlyle H 130 none ever saw the pillars.

6.43. Examples of *any* with the plural

B Jo 3 249 Gentlemen, *have any* of you a pen and ink | Austen P 207 *Are any*' of your younger sisters out? | Hughes T 2 265 *were any* of the crew caught? | Ru S 40 *Have any* of you the least idea | ib 166 it does not matter how little *any* of us *have* read | Hope In 326 If a man loved an unworthy woman (supposing there *are any*).

6.44. *Either* and *neither* generally take the verb in the sg, but sometimes in the pl because of the fundamental plurality of the conception: neither are alive = both are dead·

More U 227 if *either* of them *fynde themselfe* greued, *they* maye take an other | Sh Cymb IV. 2 253 Thersites body is as good as Aiax, When *neyther are* aliue | LL II 133 | Pilgr 181 | Fielding T 2 235 *either* of them [the words friend and mistress] *are* enough to drive any man to distraction | ib. 3 25 *neither* of them *are* a bit better than they should be | Scott Iv 289 *Neither belong* to this Saxon's company | Austen S 265 it was not a subject on which *either* of them *were* fond of dwelling | Austen M 13 to assist her with his pen-knife or his orthography, as *either were* wanted | Ru C 125 [war] is not a game to the conscript, or the pressed sailor, but *neither* of these *are* the causes of it | Wells U 158 Do you mean to say *neither* of you *know* your own numbers? | Wells L 194 | McCarthy King 103 *neither* of your heads *are* safe | Benson B 144 *Are either* of you dining with Stewart to-night?

In some of these quotations the pl may be, partly at least, accounted for by attraction to the immediately preceding pl (*them*, *you*, *these*, *heads*).

6.45. Examples of *who* with the plural (examples of the sg are not necessary): Ml H 2 217 *who have* hard hearts? | Mill L 123 *whoever allow themselves* much of that indulgence, incur the risk of something worse [rare].— Examples of the relative *who* and *which* with pl verb

abound. Interrogative *which* as a pl is found, for instance, NP '13 to find out *which are* the workers with the required aptitude most highly developed. *What* with a pl verb (cf 6.243). Pope Man 4 199 *what differ* more (you cry) than crown and cowl?

6.511. When the subject consists of two or more words joined by means of *and*, the general rule naturally is for the verb to stand in the plural

Sh Hml III. 2 74 those whose *blood and judgement are* so well co-mingled | Wordsworth 200 *The horse and horseman are* a happy pair | Quincey 121 the *noise and uproar were* almost insupportable | Austen M 58 even *the sandwich tray, and Dr. Grant doing the honours of it, were* worth looking at | Di Do 90 the Doctor's *glory and reputation were* great | ib 178 his *dress and attitude were* perfectly juvenile | Di T 2.206 *hay and straw were* stored | Hardy L 71 my chief *aim and hope lie* in the education | Mc Carthy 2 54 *A ball and supper were* to be given that night | Ru Sel 1 454 as long as there *are cold and nakedness* in the land | Pinero M 45 Here *are your hat and overcoat*

6.512. The pl is felt to be necessary when one of the words is already in the plural·

Goldsm 669 *your hat and things are* in the next room | Sterne 23 *the blood and spirits were* driven up into the head | Ru Sel 1 405 What *are the present state and wants* of mankind Also in Ewing Story of a Short Life 25 From this highway an open *carriage and pair were* being driven into the camp—though *carriage and pair* in so far forms one idea that we can even form a plural from it (2.57).

6.513. Thus also when an adjective in the sg form is the common adjunct to two substantives in the singular. Rusk Sel 1.462 how *this wholesome help and interference are* to be administered | Hardy W 113 *much care and patience were* needed

6.514. This applies also to combinations with an intervening relative pronoun

Austen M 57 with *an expression and taste* which *were* peculiarly becoming | Di D 271 with *a carelessness and lightness* that *were* his own | Thack N 204 with *that good temper and gaiety* which *have* seldom deserted him in life.

6.515. The plural conception may, of course, be shown, not in the form of the verb, but in a following pronoun:

Conway C 272 *shyness and restraint* now made *themselves* manifest in every word and action

6.516. Occasionally the vb is in the plural in essential conformity with the above rules, though there are not two substantives joined together, one substantive with two adjectives may stand for two; in the last quotation "how men laughed" is one idea, "how they cried" another, etc. Shaw 2 XI *Public and private life become* daily more theatrical | Scott Iv 29 our present English language, in which *the speech of the victors and the vanquished* [= and that of the v.] *have* been so happily blended together | Spect 75 In ordinary comedies, *a broad and a narrow brim'd hat are* different characters | Quincey O 196 *The Grasmere before and after this outrage were* two different vales | Darwin B 63 if *the death of neither man nor gnat are* designed | Gollancz, in Cbr. Hist. E. Lit 1 321 From these two sources *are* derived *much of the wealth and brilliancy* of the poem || Birrell Ob 11 *how men laughed, cried, swore, were* all of huge interest to Carlyle

The following is an interesting example of numerical intricacy Spect 174 Laertes and Irus are neighbours, whose way [sg] of living are [pl] an abomination [sg] to each other

6.521. When two or more subjects are connected by means of *and*, the verb is inevitably put in the sg if the subjects form one conception, as in Jevons L 289 *Accuracy and precision is* a more important quality [NB not two qualities] of language than abundance

6.522. But even when they denote several conceptions, we frequently find the vb in the sg in defiance of the rule given in most grammars. The psychological

reason of the sg is in most cases that only one of the subjects is present in the speaker's or writer's mind at the time when he thinks of the verb. I give first examples in which the verb precedes the subject.

Ælfric 1 10 þa *weard he and ealle* his geferan forcuþran and wyrsan; cf Krapp's ed. of Andreas, p. 93 | Ch D 1359 Thus *was the wenche and he* of oon assent | AV 1 Cor 13 13 now *abideth faith, hope, charitie,* these three | Ecclus 10 9 Why *is earth and ashes* proude? | James 3.10 Out of the same mouth *proceedeth blessing and cursing* | Sh R 2 III. 2 141 *Is Bushy, Green and the Earl* of Wiltshire dead? | Sh H 4 A 1 2.126 How *agrees the Duell and thee* about thy soule? | Swift P 122 how *does Charles Lamber and his fine wife* agree? | Johnson R 138 him, on whom *depends the action* of the elements, *and the great gifts* of light and heat | Norris O 594 where *was she and her baby* to sleep that night?

6.523. In the following examples the subjects come before the verb

Ch A 3230 For *youthe and elde is* often at debaat | More U 284 *Both childhode and youth is* instructed | Sh Mcb II 3 76 (708) *renowne and grace is* dead | Sh Merch II 9 83 *Hanging and wiuing goes* by destinie | ib. III 2 168 *My selfe and what* is mine, to you and yours *Is* now conuerted | Sh Hml IV 3 52 *father and mother is* man and wife, *man and wife is* one flesh | Mi A 38 our *faith and knowledge thrives* by exercise | Mi P L 2 495 *hill and valley rings* | Swift J 58 I drank punch, and *that and ill company has* made me hot | Shelley Pr 275 *the grouping* of the horses, *and the beauty, correctness, and energy* of their delineation, *is* remarkable | Scott Iv 227 *cup and horn was* filled to the Norwegian | ib 445 the *stock-fish and ale,* which *was* just serving out for the friar's breakfast | McCarthy 2 124 *an anomaly and a scandal was* removed from our legislation | Ru S 107 the *happiness and perfection* of both *depends* on . . | Shaw J 147 *life and literature is* so poor in these islands.

"Unfortunately", says C.Alphonso Smith in Publ. of Mod. L. Ass XI, 11, "the use of a singular predicate with a compound subject, logically singular though formally plural, is falling into disuse Yet Tennyson writes "My hope and heart *is* with thee", and even Macaulay says that "The poetry and eloquence of the Augustan age was assiduously studied " The idiom was almost a mannerism with Puttenham. By rejecting the singular in such constructions, modern English seems to me to lose in psychological truth what it gains in grammatical uniformity "

6.524. When two substantives, each with *every* before it, are joined, the sg idea so far prevails that the verb is put in the sg: every man, and every child, was filled with joy

6.53. An addition to the subject by means of the preposition *with,* generally does not influence the number of the verb, but occasionally an author forgets that he has said *with*, and goes on as if he had used the synonym *and*

Sh Gent 1 3.41 *Don Alphonso*, *With* other gentlemen of good esteeme *Are* journying | Bunyan G 10 *I*, *with* others, *were* drawn out | By DJ 6 26 *Don Juan* *With* all the damsels Had bowed *themselves* | Shaw Ibs 99 *The doubt* cast on her parentage, *with* her father's theatrical repudiation of her, *destroy* her ideal place in the home Cf 6 23

6.54. With *as well as* authors disagree. Caine M 54 his *hair* as well as his *eyebrows was* now white | Froude C 3 11 When a man enlists in the army, his *soul* as well as his *body belong* to his commanding officer — Most people would probably write: his *son* as well as his *wife was* dead—or avoid the construction

6.61. When two subjects in the singular are connected by means of *or* (*nor*) with or without a preceding *either* (*neither*), grammarians prefer the verb in the sg·

Quincey 219 *Neither Coleridge nor Southey is* a good reader of verse | Ru C 164 *neither truth nor gentleness is* matter of course | Holmes A 144 If *nature or accident has* put one of these keys into the hands of a person —This

is awkward if *I* is the last word: Page J 347 Neither *my dog nor I is* for sale (p 345 the same sentence with *myself* instead of *I*).

6.62. But extremely often the verb is put in the plural, the idea of plurality prevailing over that of disjunction. In many sentences, *or* might easily be replaced by *and*. Cf also *both* in Dryden, below. (In French, the plural is the rule after *ni . . ni*, and this is logically justified, as the negative statement implies the contrasting positive statement spoken of both, neither he nor she are willing = both he and she are unwilling.)

Examples of the verb in the plural after *or*: Dryden 5.231 My *life or death are* equal both to me | Spect 171 enquires how such an one's *wife, or mother, or son, or father, do* | Pope R III 17 *Snuff or the fan supply* each pause of chat (thus always Pope, see Concordance p. VII) | Swift T 29 to decide which society *each book, treatise or pamphlet do* most properly belong to | By 636 ere *thou Or I were* | Shelley Epips 473 veil after veil . . which *Sun or Moon or zephyr draw* aside | Lamb E 1 201 The fine *lady*, or fine *gentleman*, who *show* me their teeth, *show* me bones | Thack N 330 I don't know whether his *comedy or tragedy are* the most excellent | Ru Sel 1 231 when *Titian or Tintoret look* at a human being *they* (NB) see at a glance the whole of its nature | James A 2 187 what *are honor or dishonor* to her? | Wells U 289 *Acting, singing or reciting are* forbidden them — No example seems to occur in Shakespeare's works.

The pl is inevitable if the word nearest to the verb is in the pl: Doyle S 1 214 the vessel in which *the man or men are*.

Examples of the plural after *nor*:

Ml H 1 223 *Nor heauen, nor thou, were* made to gaze vpon | Sh Tit I 1.294 *Nor thou, nor he, are* any sons of mine | Coleridge B 61 *neither the morning nor the evening star are* so fair | Austen E 158 *neither provocation nor resentment were* discerned | Ru U 78 *neither the determination*

nor doing of justice *are* contemplated as functions (NB) wholly peculiar to the lawyer | Ru F 28 without that labour, *neither reason, art, nor peace, are possible* to man | Ru P 2 19 but *neither he nor I were* given to reading omens | Norris O 308 *neither his father nor his brother were* dressed for the function | Wells N 436 *neither Isabel nor I are* timid people | London C X I am afraid that *neither it* [Socialism] *nor I are* any longer respectable Cf. also Ru P 2 18 nor *were either my father or I* the least offended.

6.63. In the following instances the verbal form is ambiguous, and may be either plural, agreeing with both subjects together, or the first person singular, agreeing with *I* Ru T & T 86 *neither he nor I have* had any choice | Wells U 258 *Neither my Utopian double nor I love* emotion.

6.64. The plural idea may be shown in various ways, apart from the verb form (as already pointed out in some quotations above):

Ru S 124 you do not treat *the Dean* of Christ Church *or the Master* of Trinity as your *inferiors* | Stevenson T 36 It was some time before either *I or the captain* seemed to gather *our* senses | Quiller Couch M 210 *where she went or where she came from* are *mysteries alike* to me.

6.65. *One or two* always requires the plural

Ru S 38 there *are one or two subjects* on which you are bound to have but one opinion | Shaw 1 21 there certainly *were one or two points* on which we were a little in the dark | Swinb L 110 *one or two* of his things *are* still worth your reading | Lowell 327 There *are one or two things* I should just like to hint | Bennett W 2 312.

But on the other hand we have the sg in Benson B 111 *a Don Juan or two was* wanted among the dons.

6.66. A related phenomenon is seen in the following sentence, in which *between one and two* is a kind of quantitative adjunct Spencer A 1.236 Between one and two months were thus occupied.

6.71. When the subject and the predicative are of different numbers, we find a good deal of hesitation with regard to the number of the verb, nor is it always easy to decide which is subject and which predicative·

Sh H4A IV. 2 47 the halfe *shirt is two napkins* tackt together | ib. V 4 92 But now *two paces* of the vilest earth *Is roome* enough | AV Matth 3.4 his *meat* (1881 food) *was locusts* and wild honey | Swift P 89 *Manners is* a fine *thing* | By 85 *Fools are my theme* | Wells L 205 *Lies are the mortar* that bind [NB] the savage individual man into the social masonry | NP '99 *What is* of more immediate interest from a political point of view *are* the last 80 pages of his book —Cf. Knecht K p. 20

A special case is found when *one* is the predicative (either alone or with adverbial *all*).

Ch T 3.309 A vauntour and a lyere, al *is* on | Sh Sonn 42 13 My friend and I *are* one | Mi PL 5 678 we *were* one | Stevenson M 201 The soul and the body *are* one

Attraction.

6.72. Very frequently in speech, and not infrequently in literature, the number of the verb is determined by that part of the subject which is nearest to the verb, even if a stricter sense of grammar would make the verb agree with the main part of the subject This kind of attraction naturally occurs the more easily, the greater the distance is between the nominative and the verb. Thus we have the pl instead of the sg in:

Ml H 1 9 The *outside of her garments were* of lawn | Sh LL IV 3 297 *each of you haue* forsworne his booke | Sh Hml I, 2 37 more then the *scope Of these delated articles allow* | Sh Ado II 3 74 The *fraud of men were* euer so | Sh Lr III 6 4 All the *poure of his wits haue* giuen way to his impatience | Tw II 5.153 | AV Deut 1 2 There *are eleuen daies iourney* from Horeb vnto Kadesh-Barnea |

Defoe G 28 his *coat of arms . are* taken | Shelley 71 and the far *sound Of their retiring steps* in the dense gloom *were* drowned | Gardiner Stud Hist 23 *Little more than these few facts have* been handed down | Scott Iv 39 the *fore-part of his thighs*, where the folds of his mantle permitted them to be seen, *were* also covered | Norris P 359 incoherencies, to which *nobody, not even themselves, were* listening | Stevenson (*q*) *each of his portraits are.*— Cf. Knecht K 16 ff.

Cf also By 340 And *all that's best of dark and bright Meet* [as if *dark and bright* were the subjects] in her aspect and her eyes.

6.73. The sg instead of the pl is found in

Sh Alls III 2.16 the *brains of my Cupid's* knock'd out (cf 5.752) Franklin 157 The different and contrary *reasons of dislike* to my plan *makes* me suspect that it was really the true medium —Cf Knecht K p 19

6.74. Attraction affects the person as well as the number of the verb in

Tottel Miscel 168 My *graue and I am* one | Ml F (1616) 942 Both *he and thou shalt* stand excommunicate | Straw III 2 115 *wert* but *thou and I* alone | Sh Merch II 2 107 How *doost thou and thy master* agree? | Sh As I 3 99 *Thou and I am* one | B Jo 3 45 both *it* [the physic] *and I am* at your service Mi PL 10 816 Both *Death and I Am* found eternal, and incorporate both || Ml F 1382 And *none but thou shalt* be my paramour | Benson D 14 contrary to all *you or anyone else knows* of me | Sh Mcb IV. 2 81 (1486) Where *such as thou may'st* finde him

6.75. *More than one* seems always to require the sg both in the substantive and (by attraction) in the verb as in Hope D 61 *More than one woman has* been known to like her. (Bennett C 1 153 natives who had already *more than one wife*)

6.76. We have other related instances of anomaly in B Jo 1 94 when *all thy powers* in *chastity is* spent | Caine C 293 a childlike creature, and *of such are the kingdom* of Heaven

6.77. In a relative clause after *one of* . . ., the verb is sometimes in the sg, attracted to *one*, instead of the pl Cf the related phenomenon found e. g in Beowulf 1406 þone selestan . . þara þe mid Hroðgare ham eahtode, and Goethe's eine der peinlichsten aufgaben, die meiner tatigkeit auferlegt werden konnte, see Paul, Prinzipien [3]285, E A Kock, Engl Rel Pronouns, p. 10 ff, L R Wilson, Chaucer's Relative Constructions, p 44 ff. (Studies in Philology, Univ of North Carolina). Stoffel, ESt. 27 260, wrongly sees in this attraction a survival of a dim notion of the old construction *one the wisest prince that ever lived*; this is disproved by the fact that the construction is also found where no superlative is used. Examples.

Caxton R 115 ye be *one of them that oweth* me homage | Sh Alls IV 3 322 his brother is reputed *one of the best that is* | Swift J 179 he is *one of those that* must lose *his* employment whenever the great shake comes | Macaulay (q) he effected *one of the most* extensive, difficult, and salutary *reforms that* ever *was* accomplished by any statesman | NP '92 (q) *one of the few* Americans *who has* recently become familiar throughout the world | Shelley Pr 72 I am *one of those who am* [NB person] unable to refuse my assent

In Ch B 4174 five MSS have *Oon of the gretteste auctour that men rede Seith thus* with a similar use of the sg of the substantive, Skeat's reading *Oon autours*, is not supported by one single MS, one has *Some autourys*, and one *Oon . auctorite* — Similar attractions will be mentioned in the chapter on person

There is

6.81. After *there* and *here* (and more rarely *where*) the vb is often in the sg, even before a plural subject. This is easily explained as a case of attraction in such sentences as Sh As I. 2 127 There comes an old man, and his three sons: *comes* refers in the first place to *an old man*, and only secondarily to his companions. But all cases cannot be thus explained It is worth observing

that the sg is particularly frequent when *there* has no local significance and has become an "empty" word, pronounced [-ðə] as against the local ['ðɛ ə] *There is* (or *there's* [-ðəz]) is always placed in the beginning of the sentence, and becomes a fixed formula to indicate the existence of something, it is often pronounced before the speaker has considered whether it is a sg or pl word that is to follow. *Here* also, though less frequently and less markedly, serves the same function. In the same way Danish had regularly *der er* with the sg verb before a plural at a time when otherwise the plural was *ere* (now it is always *er* in all cases); Italian has often *v'è* and Russian *jest'* with the same signification of 'there's' before pl words In PE the sg is colloquial, and is generally avoided in literary style

Malory 53 *there was* slayne that morowe tyde *xM good mennys bodyes* | Sh Tp I 2 478 *there is* no more *such shapes* as he | Sh Tp V 1 215 *here is more* of vs | Bunyan G 51 then *there is hopes* | ib 116 *there is very few* that can | Congreve 239 *here's fine doings* towards! | Swift P 155 *Here's two bachelors* drinking to you at once | Defoe R 144 *here was no tools* to work it with | ib 200 if *there was twenty* I should kill them all | R 2 39 *there was five* or six men altogether | Goldsm 644 *there's the two Miss Hoggs* | Austen S 125 *there's a vast many smart beaux* in Exeter | Thack P II 316 *there is some things* I can't resist | GE M 1 40 *here's hooks* | ib 1 41 *There's no lions*—only in the shows | Wells V 35 *There s stories*, too, about Capes | Wells M 51 here there does seem to be, if not certainties, at least a few probabilities that . || Benson W 75 Really good talk is one of *the greatest pleasures there is*

6.82. Thus we have *there is* even in the rare cases in which the subject is *you* [Ch E 2160 Harl MS: her nys but ȝe end I; other MSS but thou and I] Galsworthy P 2.22 Can you find me any one who can take an impersonal view of things? Oh! of course, *there's*

you | Bennet W 1.135 his tone had changed "You are *you*", it had said, *there is you*—and there is the rest of the universe!—*There are you* would be quite impossible, and *There you are* would mean something quite different.

6.83. In the question *Where's your manners?* (Swift P 55, Ridge S 41, Shaw C 137) we have an analogous phenomenon

Plural of Verbal Idea.

6.91. In an interesting article (I F. 24.279 ff.) R M Meyer tries to establish the existence of "verba pluralia tantum", just as we have nomina pluralia tantum. He means by this such verbs as German *wimmeln, sich anhäufen, sich zusammenrotten, umzingeln* (English parallels would be *swarm, teem, crowd, assemble, conspire, surround*). The plural idea is not, however, connected with the verbal notion in itself, but refers to the subject. If instead of thinking exclusively of languages in which a plural form of the verb is used when the subject is plural, we take into consideration modern Danish, or Chinese, or Ido, in which the same verbal form is used, whether the subject is singular or plural, we see that it is not possible to term these verbs pluralia tantum Meyer speaks also of another class of verbs, which are peculiar by not admitting an object in the singular German *sammeln, vereinigen, trennen* English examples would be *collect, unite, separate* Here also the plural Meyer is speaking of does not refer to the verb in itself, but to some primary word [1]

In Meyer's sense we might say that *to quarrel* is a verbum plurale tantum, as it takes at least two to quarrel, and yet it may be found with a subject in the singular: *I quarrel with him*, cf also Pinero M 3 Don't they quarrel over getting the interesting cases? *I should.*

6.92. We may, however, ask whether the idea of "one or more than one" is totally incompatible with the

[1] If *sammeln* is a verbum plurale tantum then *between* is a praepositio dualis tantum and *among* a praepositio pluralis tantum.

verbal idea? The answer is seen to be a negative one if we turn for a moment to verbal nouns (nomina actionis) If the plural of *one walk* or *one action* is (several) *walks*, *actions*, the plural idea of the corresponding verb must be 'to undertake several walks, to perform more than one action' In other words, the real plural of a verb is the corresponding frequentative or iterative verb But in English and in most languages we have no 'plural' form of verbs in that sense; when I say *he walks* (*shoots*), or *they walk (shoot)*, it is impossible to know whether one walk (shot) or more than one is meant In some languages, however, we have a system of verbal forms by which such distinctions are regularly expressed This is the case in Slavic· Russian *stréljat'* is to fire one shot, *strĕlivat'* is to fire several shots Latin verbs in *-ito* are less numerous *cantito* "sing frequently", *ventito* "come often"; and some of them have lost the frequentative force (*hæsito* from *hæreo*, *visito* from *video*).[1]

6.93. English is very poor in frequentative verbs, especially in such as have corresponding non-frequentative verbs. Even *batter* as compared with *beat* is no perfectly unimpeachable instance, as *beat* may be used in speaking of several acts (*beat time*, etc.) Verbs that imply repeated acts, are *cackle*, *babble*, *stutter*, *chatter* and, in a different sphere, *persecute*. The plural of the verbal idea is also expressed by such means as *he talked and talked* | *he used to talk* of his mother | *he was in the habit of talking* | *he would talk* of his mother for hours These will be dealt with in future instalments of this work, and it is only to satisfy my logical propensity that I mention these things in such an unusual place as a chapter on number

[1] *Visito* is really a double frequentative, as it is formed from *viso*, which in itself is a frequentative It is easy to convince oneself, how imperfectly this category was developed in the old languages of our family, by looking up all the passages referred to in the index to Brugmann's *Vergleichende Grammatik*

Chapter VII.
Number. Appendix.

Number in First-Words of Compounds.

Singular in First-Words.

7.11. In 'first-words' (i.e. the first parts of compounds) the singular is as a rule used even if the idea is plural. The chief reason for this phenomenon is that in the oldest stratum of compounds the uninflected stem was used with no indication of case or number, and new compounds would at all times be freely formed on their pattern. In another (later) type of compounds the genitive plural was used, but as this ended in OE in *-a*, which later became *-e* and then was dropped, the form came to be identical with the nominative singular. Thus ModE *book-reading* may be equally a continuation of OE *bōca-ræding* and *bōc-ræding*, which are both found (OE *bēc-rædinge* in Bede is quite exceptional).

Examples:

The *printed book* section of the British Museum | An *Our-Day* Idyll [title of book] | Di D 449 some *Arabian-night* magician | *child* life | Caine C 7 her hunger for *child* company.

Examples with words not occurring generally in the singular form:

oats: oatmeal | *ashes*. Ash-Wednesday | *tweezers* a tweezer-case | *teens*: Ru P 1 211 the beginning of the teen period | *the West Indies* Di Do 134 any West India scheme (cf. ib. 143 the West Indian Intelligence) | *billiards*: a billiard table | *barracks*: Wells N 214 barrack architecture.

7.12. The first-word is very often qualified by a numeral:

a *two-horse* carriage | *three-volume* novels | a *five-act* tragedy | a *six shilling* book | a *five pound* note | *seven-*

league boots | Sh Shr IV 1 27 you *three inch* foole | Sterne 83 *nine-pin* alleys | Tylor A 219 the old *three-field* system | Doyle S 2 120 my *fifty-guinea* fee | Henley Burns 246 a *hundred and-thirty-acre* farm | Kipl L 23 *eighty-one-ton* guns | Parker R 72 a *seventy-mile* drive | Herrick M 81 an *eight-hour* day | Wells T 114 a *ninety-nine years* building lease.

Special examples with *foot* (cf. 3 62)

Sh Cy III 3 89 my *three-foot* stoole.| Fielding T 2 136 he was near six feet . . the *six foot* man | Kipl J 2 110 a *twenty four-foot* crocodile | ib 45 a forest of *hundred-foot* pines

Thus instead of *-pence* we have *-penny* in compounds indicating price or value

Sh H4A II 1 85 long-staffe *sixpenny* strikers | Greene F 9 228 *twopenny* chop | Swift J 51 It is plaguy *twelve-penny* [= bad] weather this last week | Sterne 67 a *three-halfpenny* pickle-pot | Carlyle S 7 (and often elsewhere) *twopenny* post | Di Ch 10 an *eighteen-penny* message | Thack V 144 a *twopenny-halfpenny* fellow | Kipl L 73 *three-and-sixpenny* pot-palms | ib 150 the *one-and-elevenpenny* umbrella. Thus in the sense 'worthless : Thack V 503 her *twopenny* gentility | id P 1 200 *twopenny* old gentlewomen in small towns —Cf on *pennyworth* 7.31

7.13. Sometimes the first-word is qualified by an indication of time

Doyle M 8 the *ten-hour-a-day* men | ib. 28 a bow-windowed *fifty-pound-a-year* house | Doyle S 3.77 we took a nice *eighty-pound-a-year* villa at Norbury

7.14. Compounds with adjectives as last-words:

Defoe P 69 she lay in the garret, *four story* high | Swift T 62 take three old high crowned hats, and clap them all on his head, *three story* high | Mrs Browning A 261 a *two-inch*-wide rush-cage | Kipl J 2.200 *ten-foot*-thick ice —Nowadays, the plural would be used when the adjective is not used as an adjunct before a substantive, thus in the first two quotations, the collocation *four stories high* being not now felt as a compound.

7.15. The form *year* is particularly frequent in such combinations, which may be due to the old unchanged pl of that word (3 61)

Sh Cor V. 4 18 an *eight yeare* old horse | Trollope D 1.185 any *three year*-old [sc. horse] | Ru C 141 her *two-year*-old child | Darwin L 1 351 my *ten-year*-long accumulation of notes | GE A 462 a sturdy *two-year*-old nephew | Kipl J 1 118 the young two, *three and four-year*-old seals

But the *s*-form is also found Sh Tw V 1 92 a *twentie yeeres* remoued thing | Thack P 3.187 a *six-years'*-old child.

Plural in First-Words.

7.2. There is, however, a growing tendency to use the plural form in compounds; this must be partly accounted for through the general loosening of the tie between the two parts of compounds generally (ch XIII) The pl form is naturally found (1) where there is no corresponding singular form in use, (2) where the form is scarcely felt as a real plural, (3) where the plural form is in some way separated from the sg, especially when it has a separate signification of its own, (4) where the sg form would lead to ambiguity; (5) in longer compounds of a somewhat loose construction.

7.21. No singular is found—or the sg is rare

Naples earth | *Brussels* lace | Ml J 1375 *Flanders* mares Cf. 5.742

Doyle M 220 a *scissors-grinder* (many compounds without *s*: *scissor-blade*, *-case*, etc.) | Mered H 204 a *shears-man* | Tenn 563 the practised *hustings-liar* | Goldsm 619 a *backstairs favourite* | GE A 147 a sort of backstairs influence | Bennett W 1.106 the *stairs-door*.

Cf. also Di Do 80 a three pair of stairs window (where the first-word is really the whole *of*-phrase) | Di D 3 a two pair of stairs' [sic] window. The same idea is expressed in a shorter way in Thack H 79 the two-pair lodger.

Both *trouser-pocket* and *trousers-pocket* are found, the

former e. g GE M 2 213, Doyle S 3.254 and 6,17, Barrie TC 266, Caine E 171, the latter Di N 405, Caine M 297; both in Wells Time Mach. 9 and 128 Thus also *breeches pocket* Fielding T 2 243, Sterne 73, GE M 1.7, Thack V 50, Di X 16, Hope R 193; Thack P 2 225 a reputable *leather breeches maker* | London C 255 *pants-finishers*

A foreign plural may be used as a first word: Stedman Oxf 120 the Litteræ Humaniores School

7.22. The plural is scarcely felt as such, as in the following "metanalyzed" instances (cf 5.7)

Sh Hml V. 1.49 the *gallowes*maker | Di T 1 47 the *gallows*-rope | Anstey V 74 a great *gallows*-like erection | *gallows* tree, before 19 th c. *gallow*tree | *pains*taking (oldest in NED 1696, earlier *paintaking*) | *dice*-play (More U 144), *dice*-playing, Roister 11 Dauy Diceplayer | a *goods*-train, *goods*-account | Wells F 205 a dry-goods-store

Wells Am 63 the *Niagara Falls* Power Company (the town is called *N Falls*)

7.23. The plural is separated from the sg either in form or signification or in both·

clothes, cf *cloth*. a *clothes* brush | an *old clothes* shop | Di Do 14 the *old clothes*-men | Carlyle S *clothes*-philosopher | ib 30 *clothes*-rubbish | Jerome T 169 two *plain-clothes* constables

mice. cf *mouse mice* poison (e g Bennett W 2 278, but rat poison)

teeth, cf *tooth*· the older compounds have *tooth toothache*, *a tooth-brush*, but Sweet Primer Phon 8 speaks (unnaturally) of the *teeth*-roots, the *teeth*-rim In Alabama people say *teethache* (Payne, *Wordlist*)

feet begins to be more and more used in compounds (cf above) Tylor A 244 a man cuts a *four or five feet* length of the trunk | GE A 138 the *two-feet* ruler | Ru C 4 this *two feet* depth of freehold land Alford [Queen's Engl. 1889, 209] says that what were formerly called *foot-warmers* are now generally called *feet-warmers*, but I am told that *foot-warmer* is still the ordinary form (1911)

men· AV 1 Tim 1.10 men-stealers | Defoe R 128 Cannibals or men-eaters (but 146 canibals, or man-eaters, 218 man-eaters) | Ru F 46 be 'men-pleasers' (biblical phrase). *Man-eater* would now be generally used

women· Mered E 7 the women part of the company was late in the dark — Cf *womenkind* 2 34

pence, cf. *penny* above· a *pence-table* shows how many pence go to so many shillings | NP '03 It was not an idealist s scheme, but a *pounds, shillings, and pence* movement by men who would lose pounds, shillings, and pence by a war

Twopence-halfpenny stamps may be heard by the side of *twopenny-halfpenny stamps*

oxen Torrend Grammar Bantu L 39 heavy oxen-waggons (generally *ox-waggons*).

children Thack V 371 she spurned children and children-lovers.

manners: Saintsbury Cbr Hist E Lit 2 179 the manners-painting of the Prologue.

salts: Thack V 101 her salts-bottle.

spirits: Masefield M 223 a methylated spirits can

customs: a customs officer | the customs duty | the customs inspector In the older formation *custom-house*, we have the sg, though the pl is beginning to creep in. Jerome Pilgrimage 44 a Customs-house clerk | Shaw P 222 (vg.) Castoms Ahses [= customhouses]

works. Shaw 2.129 He s on the Works Committee of the County Council.

honours [University] Lang T 10 honours men

7.24. In the following instances the form without *s* would easily be mistaken for the adjective *great*, *second* (note the particular meaning of *second-hand*), and *plain* Ward RE I 100 a Greats tutor | ib 101 his Greats pupils (*Greats* an Oxford examination) | the *seconds*-hand of a watch, cf *the hour-hand*, *the minute-hand*, where there is no such reason for the pl | Kipl J 1.201 you *plains*-people (contrasted to the mountain people) | ib 201 a plains-man

who lives in a hut | ib 202 the hill-drivers . . the plains-drivers | goods-train

7.25. Apart from these cases we have in recent times a great number of plural first-words, especially in long official terms

The *Natural Sciences* Tripos at Cambridge | Hamerton F 2.154 the *Contagious Diseases* Acts | Trollope D 1.190 the *Eastern Counties* Railway Station | The *United States* government | Galsworthy C 56 the *five-minutes bell* alone broke the Sunday hush

Always a *two-thirds* majority (McCarthy 2 253, Lecky D 1.86, 1 113, etc) | Sinclair R 280 election by a *four-fifths* vote

The greater tendency towards the use of the plural in long compounds is shown by Meredith R 120 the *wild oats* special plea | ib 121 the *wild oats* theory, compared with the *oat*-compounds above.

Other examples of plural first-words: a *savings*-bank (cf. in the same sense *a saving institution*) | Carlyle S 123 an American *Backwoods*man | Ward E 90 the little backwoods girl | Thack N 302 the *cigars* bill | Moulton Sh Artist 51 (and frequently): the *Caskets* Story [in Merch] | Kipl L 267 the train, plated with *three-eighths* inch boiler-plate | Shaw 2.221 the *Women's Rights* movement | ib 2 282 the Women's Rights woman | Carpenter P 68 the *Prisons* Blue Book for 1894—95 | Hope Ch 13 an assize town and quarter-*sessions* borough | Mered E 8 the *limes*-avenue | Doyle S 6 61 our *sales* books | Herrick M 111 a *stock-yards* office | ib 159 the entire food-*products* business | NP '10 an equal *terms* policy.

The *Parcels Delivery* Company | Wells A 61 *parcels delivery* tubes, in an American NP '12 1 find: the *parcels post* (or, as the law calls it, *parcel post*) has come to stay.

7.26. In some cases it may be difficult to decide whether we have a case of apposition or a compound:

Cf. Sh H4A I 3 91 aske me for one peny cost | Defoe P 12 it may not be of one farthing value to him | Scott

Iv 95 a bow of *six feet* length | Thack N 555 at some *forty feet* distance

7.27. If in such cases we have the form in *s*, this may be taken to represent either the plural or the genitive plural ending, in the following quotations no apostrophe is used·

Di N 202 the lady that got the *ten thousand pounds* prize in the lottery | Ward E 224 she had perhaps *ten seconds* start | Fielding 3 595 I enjoyed *several hours* sleep | Scott Iv 84 a drawbridge of only *two planks* breadth | Grand T 55 There is *twenty years* difference in their age | Spencer A 1 95 I had only *two shillings* pocket money | Shaw 1 217 I shall put in another *six hours* work before I go to bed | ib 217 I like *ten minutes* chat after ten | Tennys L 2 117 I have had *two very good days* coasting.

Compare the following examples from the period preceding the introduction of the apostrophe to denote the genitive:

Malory 92 they had *XV dayes* iourney | ib 126 | Sh Wiv III. 4.49 He will make you *a hundred and fifte pounds* ioynture.

7.28. In the following instances we undoubtedly have compounds, the spelling wavers between the form without and with an apostrophe

Fielding 8 400 to prefer a pain of three moments to one of *three months* continuance | ib 408 at *two miles* distance | ib 424 a *few days* residence | Mrs Browning A 97 the *Ten Hours'* movement | Carpenter LC 46 the woman has no *eight-hours* day | Mrs Browning A 188 the *ten-years* school-boy | Wordsw 1 288 a *five years'* child | Seeley E 20 the *Hundred Years'* War | ib 22 the *Seven Years'* War | Haggard S 287 a *two-months'* child | Shaw 2.99 a *three minutes* drive

7.29. Sometimes the spelling with *s'* is transferred to cases with an adjective following, which would seem to require the common case rather than the genitive:

Lamb E 1 193 a *two-days'-old* newspaper | Masefield C 340 a *three-days'-old* track | Thack S 76 a *three-months'-old* baby [in another ed. without the apostrophe] | Thack V 170 Brighton, which used to be *seven hours' distant* from London | Di X 10 his *seven years' dead* partner (but ib 12 that face of Marley, *seven years dead*). [Misprints?]

Two pennyworth etc.

7.311. A special class of compounds are those with *worth* and *power* The usual phrase is *two pennyworth*, educated pronunciation [tu peniwəþ] with stronger stress on [pen] than on the numeral and with shortened final syllable, never with the pronunciation ['tʌpəni], thus also *three pennyworth* [þɪɪ' peniwəþ], not ['þripəni-], etc This shows that to the actual speech instinct *pennyworth* is a substantive, unchanged in the plural, in very familiar as well as in vulgar speech it becomes [penəþ] But originally it must have been put together as *two-penny* (first-word with sg form) + *worth*. what is worth twopence

Examples [none in Sh]:

Franklin 30 give me *three-penny worth* of any sort | Di N 43 *twopenn'orth* of milk | ib 326 *a sixpen'orth* of the finest bran | ib 462 she pulled out *ten-pennyworth* of halfpence | Shaw M 132 Not *two pennorth* of jewellery | Shaw J 217 *three pennorth* of hair dye | Ridge L 191 *two pennyworth* of boiling water | Phillpotts M 371 *six pennyworth* of old brandy | Shaw D *19 supply you with *six-penny-worth* of the elixir of life.

Sometimes, however, *pence* is found, and this usage is on the increase, pron ['tʌpənswə·þ]:

Thack S 141 *twopenceworth of* sprats | Stevenson First B 301 any man with *twopence worth* of imagination | Shaw C 280 to buy *a few pence-worth* of food.

7.312. When there is no adjective (numeral) the pl is *pennyworths*

Sh H6B I 1 222 Pirates may make cheape *peny-*

worths of their pillage | Sh Ro IV. 5.4 you take your *penworths* now | Burns 1.179 *pennyworths*.

This is very rare after a numeral. Caine E 147 two *sixpennyworth's* (sic)

7.313. Corresponding compounds with other coins Sh LL IH. 1 150 *threefarthings worth* (folio; Q1 has three-farthing-worth) | Franklin 123 he had *thousands of pounds' worth* | Masefield M 206 *a hundred pound's worth* of stores

7.32. Thus also with *power*. *an engine of fifty horse power* is originally to be analyzed as *fifty-horse* (first-word) + *power*, but now it is practically *fifty* + a compound *horse-power*, unchanged in the plural. Analogically:

By DJ 10 34 Oh, for a *forty-parson power* to chant Thy praise, Hypocrisy! | NP '03 the light available from a grain of radium probably amounts to *several candle-power* | Sir W. Ramsay NP '11 How *many man-power* are equal to a horse-power? . 175 million man-power .. dividing the total man-power by the number of families.

Number in Genitival First-Words.

7.41. In genitival compounds the number of the first-word does not always conform with what we should expect from a purely logical point of view, but is often made to agree with that of the whole compound (i e. of the last element), the starting point may have been those instances, which are here treated last, in which the sound of the gen sg and gen pl is identical and in which there is, consequently, nothing but reflexion to guide the speech instinct. *A printer's error* logically requires the sg, but *two or three printers' errors* is generally spelt thus, though of course the errors may be due to the same printer, cf. also Trollope D 3.149 *Dukes' sons* .. *a Duke's son* | Thack V 254 to transact bargains with *ladies' maids* ... Send a *lady's maid* to me (but Trollope D 1 8 *lady's maids*) | *a tailor's account* | *their tailors' accounts*, etc.

In the following lists a star draws attention to illogical forms or spellings

7.42. First we take those words, in which there is a phonetic difference between the genitive singular and the genitive plural

child. Sh R 3 V 3.262 your *childrens children* | Thack V 295 *child's play* | ib 407 many hundred fresh *children's voices* | Thack P 2 30 *children's dolls* | Carlyle S 63 the Entepfuhl *children's-games* | ib 66 Entepfuhl *child's-culture** | Ward R 3 131 the *child's stocking* she was knitting | a *children's ball*.

man, woman: Sh R2 I. 1.48 a *womans warre** [in Herford's ed paraphrased: a women's quarrel] | Sh As I. 3 121 in my heart Lye there what hidden *womans feare* there will | Ml J 921 ringing *dead mens knels* | Spect 536 the *womens-men* or beaus | Thack V 18 he is always communicative in a *man's party** | ib 23 he was talkative in *man's society** | Thack P. 2 13 they had not much choice of *man's society** | ib 2.242 *women's hearts* | Sayce Introd 1.205 a *woman's dialect** existed among the Arcadians, and "a *woman's language**" is also said to exist in Bengal | Outlook 12/6 09 366 There are *men's ladies* as there are ladies' men, and Jane Welsh is a *man's lady*, enjoys *men's society* much more than the society of women | Galsworthy C 155 they would have smiled their *woman's smile* | Norris S 103 in *her men's clothes** she looked tall | ib 125 sitting there in *man's clothes* and *man's boots*, the pistol at her side | Stevenson B 147 he made me dress in these *men's clothes*', which is a deadly sin for a woman

F N Scott, in The School Review, June 1912, writes "A considerable number of persons hate the plural form *women*, as being weak and whimpering, though the singular *woman* connotes for the same persons ideas of strength and nobility It is for this reason perhaps that *woman's building, woman's college, woman's club*, and the like, have supplanted in popular speech the forms *women's building, women's college*, etc It is noteworthy also that in the titles of magazines and names of women's clubs the singular in most instances has displaced the more logical plural"

Compounds of man: Ml F 153 Almaine Rutters with their *horsemens staues* | Thack P 1.286 at *freshmen's wine parties* | Mered H 5 a *gentleman's school** [= a school for gentlemen] | GE A 179 in addition to their *journeyman's work**

Note that the sound of *gentleman's* and *gentlemen's* is generally identical (3 11)

wife: Caine S 1 205 we'll not repeat their *old wife's gossip** | Caine M 388 the people produced their *old wife's wisdom** [Observe that *wives'* here would give a different meaning] *An old wives' tale* may originally have contained the old genitive singular *wive's* (*wiues*), as does *a calves-head*, see Morphology.

thief: Thack P 2 314 that infernal little *thieves' den*; also e g. Mered E 100

7.43. In the following cases the sound of the gen sg and gen pl is identical

Carlyle R 1.108 to quit the barren *wasp's nest** of a thing (also GE Mm 1.60) | Swinb L 86 a wasps' nest | Kipl J 2.63 a *hornet's nest** (also Stevenson T 43) | Ru S 1 373 *bird's nests** | Di D 507 marks like *flies' legs* | Thack P 1 2 a few *crow's-feet* round about the eyes | Ritchie M 189 the *grasshoppers' concert* | Collingwood R 290 *camels'-hair* coats | Scott Iv 64 a chair decorated with two *ass's ears** | Beaconsf L 413 I have paid with my *heart's blood* | Ru Sel 1.484 their hearts' blood | Barrie T 187 a *lovers' quarrel* | Mered E 220 a lover's quarrel* | ib 142 one hears of lover's quarrels* | Hamerton F 2.169 The army . is essentially a *bachelor's profession** | ib 1. 65 After taking their *bachelor's degree* | Hope Ch 17 *chemists' drugs* | Thack V 389 how many of you have surreptitious *milliners' bills*? | Wright, ed of Sh Tw 90 Julia is dressed in *boys' clothes** | Thack V 315 a most flourishing *lady's physician** | ib 348 the celebrated *Lady's doctor** | ib 513 a professional *lady's man** (also Mered L 417; cf above woman's man) | Caine M 143 we mustn't live in a *fool's*

paradise | Masefield C 378 we were living in *fools' paradises* | Sw NEG § 624 English sank almost into a mere *peasant's dialect** | Benson D 59 she didn't care two *pins' heads* | id B 106 two *grandfather's* clocks.

I have found three spellings of *dogs-ear* (in books): Sher. Riv I 2 *dog's-eared* | Thack V 30 his *dogs-eared* primer | Jerome Nov. 11 *dogs'-eared* pages; also *dog-ear* is found

7.44. What is the plural of *a stone's throw* as a measure of distance? *Two stones' throw* (Thack V 196 Rebecca and her husband were but at *a few stones' throw* of the lodgings | Galsworthy C 263 within *two stones'-throw* of the club) is not logical, for the distance in which you can throw two stones is not double of that in which you can throw one, but *two stones'-(stone's) throws* is hardly found —Defoe R 2 114 within *two musket shot* of them | Kipl P 82 within *three bowshots*

Number in Derivatives.

7.5. The form used as a starting-point in derivatives is generally the singular, even when the idea is plural, thus.

-er: a *ten-tonner* . a *three-master* . a *forty-pounder* cannon (Kipl L 93) a *two-mover* (chess problem in two moves).

-ed: a *three-masted* vessel . a *three-legged* stool the *seven-hilled* city . *many-childed* mother (Swinburne SbS 12). *blue-eyed.*

-ful: *fanciful* (= full of fancy, or of fancies) . *fitful* . *thankful.*

-less *childless* (without children, without a child) . *friendless* . *toothless* generally, but Burns has *teethless* . *footless*, also (obs) *feetless* . *penniless*, very rarely *penceless.*

-y: *lousy*. Here we have *woodsy* (rare) by the side of *woody*, and *tricksy* (Storm EPh 888 has a quotation from Goldsmith and two from Helen Mathers, to which might be added Sh Tp V. 1 226, Mered E 40) by the side of *tricky* (Kipling L 7, Doyle S 1.145). Sweet (in Storm) says: "*tricky* = cunning, *tricksy* full of tricks, playful", while

Miss Soames says that *tricksy* is not English. With regard to *newsy* (see NED and Lehmann, Fludyer 91) cf. 5.781 on *news* as a sg.

Words with Numerical Relations.

7.6. Some languages, besides the general plural, which relates to "more than one" indefinitely, have one or more special plurals, relating to some definite number: two (dual), three (trial), etc. Arian languages originally had a dual, but in the inflexion of substantives only very few survivals were found even in the oldest English (where old dual forms have been traced in *duru* 'door', *sculdru* 'shoulders', *breost* 'breasts'), and none are found in Modern English.

Nevertheless, we find even now some words (besides the numeral *two*) which refer to two as distinct from one as well as from more than two, and on the other hand we have some words that refer to or indicate a definite number as distinct from an indefinite number, as in *which of them told you so?* as compared with *who told you so?* We shall now deal with both these classes.

Words Referring to Two

7.71. First we have the word *both* as in *both my sons*, indicating that I have two, while *all my sons* would imply that I have more than two. In French, on the other hand, we have no word for *both*, but must say *tous deux* or *tous les deux*, or *mes deux fils* without *tous*

While the pronoun *both* is never used in speaking of more than two, the conjunction *both* very often is placed before more than two members (see NED *both* B 1 b), examples Ch A 2298 bothe hevene and erthe and see | Sh Ven 747 Both fauour, sauour, hew, and qualities | Mi PL 4 722 The God that made both Skie, Air, Earth & Heav'n.

7.721. Secondly we have a series of pronominal words in *ther* (cf Latin *uter*, *alter*, Gr *póteros*, etc): *other*,

either, neither, whether The relation to "two", however, is not always strictly observed in PE.

The suffix in these words is an old comparative sufix, cf. below on comparative There is an interesting illustration of the relation between such pronouns and comparatives in Finnish, where the word for 'both', *molemmat*, has the form of a comparative

7.722. *Other* originally was the ordinal corresponding to *two* and may still be considered as such in combinations like "his other arm", "the other place" (in the House of Commons = the House of Lords, and vice versa; also = Hell, as opposed to Heaven) But soon *other* acquired an application so wide and vague that *the second* had to take its place in the strict signification of "No 2" as opposed to the first, the third, etc *Another* in "Have another cup" may mean a fourth, a fifth, etc. Examples of *other* in this indefinite application:

Sh R2 I 1.128 three parts The other part [= the last fourth] reseru'd I by consent | Spect 119 three . . one . another . the other | Franklin 45 The two first were the other was clerk to a merchant | McCarthy 2 209 Thirteen of these (vessels) she burnt, and the other two were converted into cruisers | Ru C 1 in my other volumes | Stevenson B 79 the four who ; the other three came galloping up the road

7.731. *Either* as a pronoun is generally used of two only, though there is a tendency to use it about three, etc., probably because *any* is felt to be too indefinite to be used where the number is still comparatively small. Examples:

[Sh Compl 306?] | Smollett (q) if I could be admitted into your service as house-steward, clerk, butler, or bailiff, for either of which places I think myself qualified | Scott A 2 28 Dousterswivel . Sir Arthur . Oldbuck . . Thus each being wrapped in his own unpleasant ruminations, there was hardly a word said on either side | Austen P 449 Elizabeth, Kitty, and Darcy were to entertain

each other. Very little was said by either | Austen S 248 he laid before me three different plans . do not adopt either of them | Di D 151 [three or four of us .] I soon became as skilful as either of the other boys | Ru S 1.465 nor does it appear in any way desirable that either of the three classes should extend itself | Hawth S 54 [three possibilities] In either case, . | Poe 216 either of these numerous modes and motives could have been the actual one.

The tendency thus seems to be towards establishing the same mutual relation between *either* and *any* as between *each* and *every*, or *which* and *who*, see 7.8

Corresponding examples with *neither* Hardy F 339 neither of the three was in a fit state to take charge of the waggon | Meied T 81 Poet, novelist, essayist, dramatist, shall be ranked honourable in my Republic I am neither, but a man of law

7.732. As a conjunction, *either* is freely used where there are more than two alternatives

Sh Wiv V 1 4 there is diuinity in odde numbers, either in natiuity, chance, or death | Meas III 2 149 either this is enuie in you, folly, or mistaking | Jowett [NED] A narration of events, either past, present, or to come

This is, perhaps, still more true of *neither* as a conjunction

Sh Ado II 1 303 neither sad, nor sicke, nor merry, nor well | Cæs III 2 225 I haue neyther wit nor words, nor worth, Action, nor vtterance, nor the power of speech | Meas III 1 37 thou hast neither heate, affection, limbe, nor beautie | Meas V 177 neither maid, widow, nor wife | Austen P 440 Neither duty, nor honour, nor gratitude has any possible claim on me No principle of either would be violated by my marriage | Neither fish, flesh, fowl, nor good red herring.

7.741. *Whether* as an interrogative pronoun, meaning "which of two" was evidently obsolescent ab 1600. It is found a few times in the AV, and pretty frequently in

Bacon (Bøgholm p 45 has ten examples, among which one is adjectival, and one contains *whethersoever*); in the 19 th c. this *whether* is found only rarely as a biblical reminiscence:

Matth 21.31 Whether of them twaine did the will of his father? | ib 23 17 whether is greater, the gold, or the Temple? | ib 23 19 | Bacon Lett 4 329 collate those two sums, whether is the better? | Ru Art 193 neither may you suppose that between Turner's eyes, and yours, there is any difference respecting which it may be disputed whether of the two is right.

Spenser and Ben Jonson use this *whether* of three. Faerie Q IV 9 1 all three kinds of love . . . doe disport the hart . Whether shall weigh the balance downe | BJo 3 62 a question it were now, whether of us three In pleasing him, claim the precedency can?

7.742. The transition from the pronoun *whether* to the interrogative adverb (or conjunction) is seen in comparing the two parallel passages:

AVMatth 9.5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee or to say, Arise, and walke? | Mark 2 9 Whether is *it* easier to say, etc

Cp. also Ch B 3119 wher [= whether] shall I calle you my lord daun John, Or daun Thomas, or elles daun Albon?—three alternatives!

Shakespeare does not really use *whether* as a pronoun, but only in the transitional stage, in which we may analyze it at will as "which of two" or as a mere introductory word before a disjunctive question, in which *whether* now seems superfluous, cf Lat. *utrum*

Sh Wiv III. 2 3 Whether had you rather lead mine eyes, or eye your masters heeles? [where a comma after *rather* would change one construction into the other] | All IV. 5 23 Whether doest thou professe thy selfe, [here the comma is in the folio] a knaue or a foole? | John 1. 134 | Elliptical in Ven 304 and Pilgr 188. Cf also

Pilgr 101 Was this a louer, or a letcher whether? [= ... letcher? whether (was it?)]

7.743. In the conjunctional use of *whether*, no regard is now paid to the number of alternatives; at first used only when followed by a single *or*, it is now very often used where no alternative is expressed (as already very frequently in Shakespeare, e g H4A III. 2 4 I know not whether Heauen will haue it so), or again before three or more alternatives (as in Sh Sonn 37 For whether beauty, birth, or wealth, or wit, Or any of these all, or all, or more)

7.744. As a pronoun *which* has taken the place of *whether*:

Sh Merch IV. 1.174 Which is the merchant heere? and which the Iew? | Lamb R 91 the 14 th of November 1743 or 4, I forget which it was | Di D 345 Mrs. W., who was a large lady—or who wore a large dress. I don't exactly know which, for I don't know which was dress and which was lady | ib 492 I hardly know which was the better pleased, Traddles or I | Shaw 2 109 Pray are you flattering me or flattering yourself? I dont feel quite sure which | Hope D 95 I stayed two hours—or two minutes, I forget which | Hope R 232 he was bolder, or less scrupulous—which you will

Even *who* may be used in questions comprising only two individuals.

Mrs Browning A 225 Who's stronger, He who makes, or He who mars? | Hewlett Q 57 Who is the doxy: Arran or the lass?

7.751. I do not know whether the distinction made in most grammars between the reciprocal pronouns *each other* and *one another*, that the former implies only two, and the latter more than two persons, has at any period been observed consistently, anyhow it is not now.

Examples in which the rule is observed

Sh Hml II. 1.81 his knees knocking each other | Shaw

P 4 Americans and English . . . to kill as many of one another as possible

7.752. Examples contrary to the school rule: *One another* of two·

Sh Wiv I 1 257 when wee are married, and haue more occasion to know one another [frequent in Sh and elsewhere] | Spect 584 the courts of two nations do not so much differ from one another | Spencer E 1.217 two men frequently seeing one another | Wells V 195 they regarded one another, each blinded to the other | ib 214 For a time he and Miss Klegg contradicted one another.

Each other of more than two:

Otway 171 were all mankind villains, They'd starve each other | Spect 583 various nations distinguished from each other by their customs | Franklin 27 Some people . hallow'd to us . , but . . . we could not hear so as to understand each other | Gibbon M 129 a number of remarks are heaped on each other without method | ib 156 twenty ladies . at each other's houses | Austen S 349 the family were again all restored to each other | Merriman S 78 a crowd of well-dressed men jostled each other | ib 141 a dozen or more gentlemen, who gazed at each other.

7.753. Therefore we frequently find *each other* and *one another* in the same sentence, simply by way of variety·

Franklin 113 the members should engage to afford their advice to each other in promoting one another's interests . . . | Thack N 270 In such a history events follow each other without necessarily having a connection with one another | Hawth Sn 77 these two—who help one another along, and seem to be comforting and encouraging each other | Shaw C 256 People that are fond of one another never have any difficulty; and people that hate each other never have any comfort | Norris O 256 the throng of guests . . tripping upon each other . stepping over one another, getting behind each other |

Wells V 334 They were enormously pleased with one another, they found each other beyond measure better than they had expected —See also the story of the two Englishmen on the desert island, Sweet, Elementarb. 57

7.761. *Between* etymologically (OE *bi-tū̆onum*, *bi-twēon* 'by two") refers to two, but it has been "from its earliest appearance, extended to more than two"; *among*, which refers to more than two, is now more vague, while *between* "is still the only word available to express the relation of a thing to many surrounding things severally and individually " (NED) When two or more words are added by means of *and, between* must always be used *between* (never *among*) *A and B and C* The original distinction is perhaps best retained in the signification "by the joint action of, shared in by", as in Sh Err V. 1 177 My master and his man . . Betweene them they will kill the conjurer | Hope Q 379 we've killed him among us, I and you and the people out there.

But even here *between* often takes the place of *among*

7.762. By a natural ellipsis found in many languages *between* may be used before one word in the singular if it is preceded by *each* or *every* (= between each . . and the next) Sh Pilgr 92 *Betweene each kisse* her othes of true loue swearing | Fielding T 1 115 *between every stroke* | Di T 2 279 with a shake of her head *between every rapid sentence*

7.771. The comparative was originally used when two were compared, the superlative when more than two were referred to Thus in what is still considered the more dignified or literary usage

Sh Merch II 1 32 If Hercules and Lychas play at dice Which is *the better* man, *the greater* throw May turne by fortune from *the weaker* hand | ib III. 4 64 He proue *the prettier* fellow of the two | Fielding T 2 238 two sons of which I was *the younger* | Di D 492 I hardly know which was *the better pleased*, Traddles or I | Tenn 562 Rome of Cæsar, Rome of Peter, which was *crueller*? which was *worse*?

7.772. But apart from such set phrases as *the lower lip, the upper end, the lower (and upper) classes,* the natural tendency in colloquial speech is to use the superlative in speaking of two, and this is found very frequently in good authors (ME quotations, see Matzner III 301; cf. also Baldwin, Infl. and Syntax of Morte d'Arthur § 44; Bøgholm, Bacon 66; Franz, Sh.-Gr § 215 anm. 2; Storm, EPh. 707; Sweet, NEG § 2081).

Examples of the superlative (which in Sh is more frequent than the comparative):

Sh Merch II. 1.7 whose blood is *reddest,* his or mine | Mi SA 1155 whose God is *strongest,* thine or mine | Defoe R 2 22 two priests . . . the *oldest* man . . the *younger* priest | Goldsm 645 we'll see which is *strongest,* you or I | By DJ 12 20 Malthus and Wilberforce—the *last* set free the Negroes | Scott Iv 190 the guest and the entertainer . although the former had probably fasted *longest* | Austen E 5 She was the *youngest* of the two daughters | Austen S 333 I believe Marianne will be the *most happy* of the two | Quincey 12 being of two evils by very much the *least* | Beaconsf L 476 which is the *most valuable* companion, the volume that keeps him awake or the one that sets him a-slumbering? | Stevenson JHF 101 *the carpenter . . . the locksmith . . . but this last* [= the latter] was a handy fellow (*the last* of two also Defoe G 49, 68, 99; Sweet NEG § 118 the first half . the last half)

7.773. Sometimes the comparative and the superlative are used in speaking of the same two persons or things

Sh H5 III 6 120 when leuitie and crueltie play for a kingdome, the *gentler* gamester is the *soonest* winner | Austen E 96 the *elder* [brother], whose temper was by much the *most communicative,* and who was always the *greater* talker | Caine First B 59 a widow with two sons . . the *younger* son . . . the *eldest* son . 62 the *younger* son . . that *elder* son.

7.774. Inversely, the comparative is sometimes found instead of the superlative in speaking of three, thus especially *the latter*

By 555 leaving to the ravens, And wolves, and men —the *fiercer* of the three—Her myriads of fond subjects | Doyle B 42 the youngest of three brothers of whom poor Sir Charles was the *elder* || Scott Iv 72 excepting the Jew, the Mahomedans, and the Templar, the *latter* of whom . | Fox 1 153 letters from Trench, Carlyle, and Coleridge. That of the *latter* was as follows | Stevenson T 153 roof, walls, and floor. The *latter* stood in several places as much as a foot above the surface of the sand | Gosse F 145 three orphan sisters, Ann, Mary Grace, and Bess, the *latter* lately married to a carpenter.

7.775. In the following quotations, *the latter* is apparently used of more than two, but in reality we have a division into two halves:

Spencer Ess 2.338 the latter syllables of a long word | Doyle S 1.190 in the latter days of December.

Words Referring to a Definite Number.

7.8. While in the just mentioned cases we have a distinction between two and a higher number, we have elsewhere a distinction between a definite, limited number on the one hand, and a vague, unlimited number on the other. Thus *each* as opposed to *every*, *which* as opposed to *who* and *what*, and *the Englishmen* as opposed to *the English*.

7.811. *Every* is etymologically = *ever* + *each*, OE *æfre* + *ælc*, the addition of *ever* makes *every* more universal than the simple *each*. "The form *ever each*, surviving in archaistic use till 16th c., was corrupted into *every each* . . . occas. used arch by recent writers" (NED). The ending of *everich* was weakened in ME; *-ch* disappeared first before a consonant, and then everywhere, and soon the word was no longer felt as a compound of *each*; *every* was felt to be more emphatic than *each*, and when Wyclif writes *euery languor and eche sekenesse*, Dr Bradley

(NED) explains it through "it being unnecessary to repeat the emphasis" In course of time the two words were differentiated, though the distinction is even now by no means always clearly observed (Cf on *each* instead of *every* Storm EPh 756, 767, 1038)

If *every* individualizes if compared with *all,* so does *each* in a still higher degree; it singles out where *every* unites. See for instance·

Mi PL 8 342 *Each* bird and beast behold after thir kindes | ib 351 *each* bird stoop'd on his wing | Wordsw P 4 199 a narrow vale where *each* was known to all ‖ AV Gen. 16 12 his hand will be against *euery man,* and *euery mans* hand against him.

7.812. The difference is pretty clearly seen in the following quotations, where *each* and *every* are used in close proximity:

Caxton R 85 vnder *euery* historye the wordes were grauen that *euery* man myght vnderstande what *eche* historye was | Di D 455 at least one letter on *each* side *every* day | Maclaren A 54 he started on a survey of his farm . from field to field and into *every* corner of *each* field | Besant First B 8 *Every one* wanted to write a series of articles *Each* in turn proposed a series as if it was a new and striking idea | Poe 254 we not only opened *every* book, but we turned over *every* leaf in *each* volume | Holmes A 149 The saturation-point of *each* mind differs from that of *every* other | ib 247 he is inclined by nature to love *each* and *every* woman. Therefore it is that *each* woman virtually summons *every* man to show cause why he does not love her | NP '09 *Everybody* was discussing routes with *everybody* else. *Each* was sure that he was going the only good way | NP '10 The fly is a danger which comes home to *every* family. And *each* family can do much to minimize the danger.

But sometimes no apparent distinction is made in similar collocations, the two words being simply used for the sake of variety:

Mi C 311 I know *each* lane and *every* alley green | Wilde In 154 He will seek for beauty in *every* age and in *each* school | Macdonald Fk 243 they had to deal with *each* day's difficulties as they could, *every* new day bringing its own changes.

7.813. Very frequently both words are collocated (*each and every*) for the sake of emphasis.

Trollope D 3 218 *each and everyone* there | Black F 2.59 *each and every* day was one to be marked with a white stone | Holmes A 141 through the centre of *each and every* town or city | Jerome T 125 that anything any of the seven could do for her, *each and every* would be delighted to do.

7.814. *Each* may refer to only two persons or things (and is then a synonym of *either*), while *every* always implies more than two.

Franklin 77 because I would not give an unkind preference to *either*, I took half of what *each* had offered | Wordsw 214 both he [W Scott] and I, without *either* of us knowing that the other had taken up the subject, *each* wrote a poem in admiration of the dog's fidelity | Di D 581 *each* knew that the other liked him

7.815. *Each* very frequently is followed by *of* (each of us, etc) Formerly *every* was used in the same manner (Sh As V 4 178 euery of this happie number, and Ant I 2 38 are the only places in Sh, Defoe, see NED), and this may still be found in legal documents But *every one of* is a frequent combination (*one* is the numeral, not the 'prop' word); it resembles *each of* in referring to a definite number, but does not specialize in quite the same way as *each*

Sh Tw II. 5.153 *euery one of* these letters are in my name | AV Luke 16 5 hee called *euery one of* his lords detters vnto him (Rev V he called each one of his lord's debtors) | Defoe R 2 146 and 209 | Di X 19 the air was filled with phantoms *Every one of* them wore chains | Ru P 3 24 every one of Maurice's disciples took what

views *he* chose || Gardiner H 216 *Every one of* these three claimants was an English baron | ALang Ess 127 *every one of* a man's books cannot be his masterpiece | McCarthy 2.610 Russia had set her heart upon recovering every single one of the advantages | Shaw M 9 She'll commit every crime a respectable woman can, and she'll justify *everyone of* them.

7.821. With regard to the interrogative pronouns, *which* asks for one (or more) out of a definite number (cf *whether* above), while *who* and *what* ask indefinitely.

"*Who* was the murderer, and *what* was the instrument he used?" implies that we are in complete ignorance as to both facts "*Which* was the murderer and *which* weapon did he use?" implies that two or more particular persons are suspected of the murder, and that the murderer is supposed to have used one of two or more particular instruments The question is *which* of these individuals was the criminal and *which* of these instruments was his instrument." G R Carpenter, Princ of Engl Gr 1898, p 87 — In *what part* of London does he live? If we were here to say "In which part", this would imply a much more definite division of London into separate parts than is found in actual fact

Which do you like best, tea or coffee? | Which way shall we turn? [i.e. to the right or to the left?] | Which of you has seen him? [cf. Who has seen him?] | BJo 1.53 I am a knave, if I know what to say, What course to take, or which way to resolve | Di N 322 in favour of one of them. Then the question arose, which one it could be | Wilde H 92 he only knew two airs, and was never quite certain which one he was playing | Gissing B 38 Deluge? growled Mr G What deluge? Which deluge? | O'Rell JohnB 202 Let the religion be good or bad, no matter which it is, or what it is, it is better than none at all [Here *which* = which of the existing religions; and *what* is quite indefinite = of what quality, or contents].

7.822. *Which*, accordingly, is necessary before a partitive *of*, though *who of* is found now and then, in Thack V 30 "Who amongst us is there that does not

recollect similar hours of childish grief?" *us* means "all men", and the question therefore is really indefinite.

Other instances of *who* and *what*, where we should expect *which*: Mrs Browning A 225 Who's stronger, He who makes, or He who mars? | Poe 664 Of all melancholy topics, what is the most melancholy?

In ordinary conversation, such questions as this "*What* will you have, beer or wine?" are very common, because the speaker has not, at the moment when he starts asking, realized that the choice is limited.

7.823. In the genitive, no distinction can be made, *whose* being everywhere used.

Sh Merch II. 1 7 whose blood is reddest, his or mine | Ant II. 3.16 whose fortunes shall rise higher, Cæsars or mine? | Mi S 1155 whose God is strongest, thine or mine | Dryden 5.230 If I come singly, you an armed guest, The world with ease may judge whose cause is best

7.824. *What one* (with *of*) is sometimes used (in US only) instead of *which* (or rather bearing the same relation to *which* as *every one* to *each*).

Poe 565 by quoting (we will not say whence—from *what one* of her poems)—a few verses | ib 660 Of the innumerable effects, or impressions of which the soul is susceptible, *what one* shall I select? | Royce R 5 of these diverse races, *what ones* are the superior and *what ones* are the inferior races? What race or races ought to rule? *What ones* ought to yield to their natural masters? To *which one* of these races has God ordained the final sovereignty of the earth? Which of these types of men is really the human type? Cf. on a different use of *what one* 10 63.

7.825. As *what is* asks about the quality (description, contents, etc) of a thing (What is love, a star, etc.), *which is* is often used when information is wanted about the name of something, even if the group indicated by *which* is not very precise or definite:

Thack N 462 Which is that star? [= What star is that?] | Ridge L 91 which were the six principal rivers of England?

Note that the (recent) distinction between *who* and *which* as relative pronouns referring respectively to persons and to things is quite different from that observed between the interrogative pronouns, in the following quotation from Chaucer it seems as if *which* was used in concordance with the rule for the interrogative pronouns and was made relative only by the addition of *that* A 796 And which of you that bereth him best of alle, Shal have a soper

7.91. Adjectives as principals in the plural (chapter XI) with *the* denote a whole class *the poor* = "everybody poor", while *the poor ones* is a limited plural = such among those mentioned as are poor *there were several artisans at the meeting; the poor ones* . . Thus also *the Irish* is more comprehensive (= the whole Irish nation) than *the Irishmen*, for instance in Ward M 127 We have had a nasty scene in the house [of Commons] with the Irishmen Cf also *those present—the present ones* (*Who did it? The poor.* | *Which of them did it? The poor ones*)

7.92. We may finally give the following survey of words with numerical relations

An indefinite number.	A definite number	Two
all	all	both pron
—	both conj	both conj
every	each	(either) pron.
any	any (either)	either pron
none, no	none, no	neither pron
—	neither conj.	neither conj.
—	one another	each other
who, what	which	(whether †)
superlative	superlative	comparative
among	among	between
the Irish	the Irishmen	—
the poor	the poor ones	—

Chapter VIII.

Substantives.

8.11. As already indicated (1 31) the different parts of speech are marked off by formal criteria. The chief criteria by which substantives as such are distinguished from other parts of speech, are the formation of the plural by means of the endings, etc., enumerated in 2 21, and the formation of a genitive in *'s*. Neither of these criteria, however, is absolute and applicable to all substantives; there are some substantives which form no plural, and there are a great many substantives from which a genitive is never formed. As a third criterion might be mentioned the capability of taking an (adjective) adjunct, especially when a word can take one of the articles *the* and *a* before it, we seldom hesitate to reckon it among substantives.

8.12. On the other hand we are not entitled to call a word a substantive merely because it can be used as a principal (1 31) The distinction is often overlooked, and in many instances it is obscured by the current grammatical terminology, in which phrases like 'standing as a substantive' or 'in substantival function' are loosely used of pronouns, adjectives, and adverbs employed as principals In NED. for example, the word *there* (11) is called a substantive, not only in sentences like "there is no 'here' nor 'there'," in which it is a quotation substantive (8 2), and like "Motion requires a here and a there", in which it has become a real substantive, as seen especially by the plural in the quotation "In the Space-field lie innumerable other theres", but it is also called a substantive in "over against there", "from there", and "He left there last night', in which cases *there* retains its proper adverbial force and signification though used as a principal (object of a preposition or a verb) If we were

to call *there* in these combinations a substantive, to be consistent we should call the group *behind the old oak* a substantive in the combination "from behind the old oak" and *between two and three thousand* another in "he left between two and three thousand"· in my system they are simply group principals.

8.13. The formal distinction between substantives and adjectives is more pronounced in English than in any other language of the same family; this is due to the fact that while most of the OE endings in substantives and adjectives have been obliterated in course of time (*-e*, *-a*, *-an*, *-um*, etc.), the only endings that were strong enough to hold their own, were those containing an *s*, while these *s*-endings were even extended to most of the 'stems' which did not possess them originally. Now, the plural ending OE *-as*, ME *-es*, was not at all found in the adjective inflexion, and the genitive ending OE *-es*, ME *-es* was much rarer in adjectives than in substantives and could therefore disappear analogically from adjectives when most of the other adjective endings had been merged into a non-significant *-e*, accordingly when this *-e* was lost, adjectives came to have only one form, while most substantives had *-s* both in the genitive and in the plural.

8.14. In the following instances, therefore, the words in *s* are substantives, and those without that plural ending adjectives, the former have a more specialized signification, though this is not equally obvious in all the examples: *heathen roughs* | *rough heathens* | Sh H5 III 5 10 *Normans*, but *bastard Normans, Norman bastards* | Wilde L 152 *Millionaire models* are rare enough; but, by Jove, *model millionaires* are rarer still | NP '09 There is a large number of *student athletes*, there is a much smaller number of *athletic students* | Gissing G 214 the most *intimate* [notice *most*] of her *intimates* received little hints | Ru P 1 260 he looked for *subordinates* who would be *subordinate* for ever.—Note also in the sg the distinction made in Gals-

worthy M 24 Having been a *Conservative Liberal* in politics till well past sixty, it was not until Disraeli's time that he became a *Liberal Conservative.* (The pl would be respectively *Conservative Liberals* and *Liberal Conservatives*). —Chesterton. most official Liberals wish to become Liberal officials.

8.15. Substantives are either substantives proper, which are always substantives, or words belonging to some other part of speech (or word-groups), which have been turned into substantives, often enough only for the nonce.

8.16. To substantives proper belong also substantives derived from verbs, even if they have in Present English no ending to distinguish them from the verb itself. *A move, a drive, a find* are in every respect just as good substantives as *a motion* or *a movement,* etc ; and it is not quite correct to speak, as is often done, of the 'faculty English possesses of using verbs as substantives' *Love* is not a verb 'used as a substantive', but represents the OE subst. *lufu,* which in old times was distinct in form from the verb *lufian*, though in course of time the two have lost their distinctive endings, the one is as much a substantive, and the other a verb as in the oldest period, and the same distinction holds true also of words which have been formed in recent times on their analogy, see *Growth* p 166 ff.

But in other instances we are justified in speaking of words of other classes being turned into substantives. (See 8 2—8.5). And we have also groups and parts of words that have become independent substantives (8 6—8 9) Cf. also on the whole 2 3—2.5

Quotation Words.

8.21. Any word, and any word-group, may be turned into a substantive by being taken in the sense 'the word . ' (or 'the phrase, sentence .') That these quotation-substantives, as I have termed them, are real substantives, appears especially from the possibility of

forming a plural from them, of which many examples are given in 2 48.

A few examples of the singular will suffice here the second *ruin* might easily be misread as *run* | Austen M 277 At last—it seemed *an at last* to Fanny's nervousness, though not remarkably late—he began . | Shaw D 197 she would go from her home without *with-your-leave* or *by-your-leave*.

Here also belong *a farewell* and *an I O. U.* = *I owe you*, i e. a memorandum of debt (e g Di D 499).

8.22. Pronouns may be used as quotation-substantives as in Sh All's II. 1.81 write to her a loue-line What *her* is this? | Tenn Becket I. 1 It much imports me I should know her name What *her*? The woman that I followed hither | Smedley F 2 19 so he left her there 'And who may *her* be?' inquired Freddy, setting grammar at defiance | Kipl S 116 They use the editorial *'we'* There is great virtue in that *'we'*.

8.23. A special kind of quotation-word is found in the colloquial (*I don't care*) *a damn* (Caine P 66) or *a hang* (Ward D 2.12, Vachell H 172, James S 128).

8.24. The names of some games are quotation-words containing an imperatival sentence: *hide-and-seek* | *catch* | *hop-skip-and-jump* (applied to handwriting in Caine C 247) Cf also a poem by Norman Gale. Love played at *Catch-me-if-you-Can* In Mary's eyes . . . Love played at *Kiss-me-if-you-Dare* On Mary's lips . . Love played at *Find-me-if-you-May* In Mary's breast.

8.25. The following I take also to be cases of quotation-words; they contain an imperative, or very frequently two joined imperatives, or an imperative-sentence (with the verb in the 'subjunctive'), and are preceded by *it is* (*here is*) or *it is a case of* Kipl L 238 It's a *toss-up* whether she comes again or not | also Mered E 178,343 | here's *cut and-come again* (Swift P, etc) | Lamb E2 VII It was *hit or miss* with him | Austen M 51 I thought it would be only *ask and have* | Hughes T 2 148 It was

touch and go | Darwin L 1.259 it was *devil take the hindmost* who should get out first | Caine M 260 if I hadn't had a stick that day, it would have been *Heaven help the pair of us* | Caine C 81 It is a case of *put a penny in the slot, and out comes the word of command* | Herrick M 121 it's *dog eat dog* in our business (also ib 148) —Cf. also Pinero Q 31 It was a genuine case of *done with the old life*

8.26. From these quotation-words may develop regular words, thus *give-and take*; the quotation is still obvious in Hughes T 2.19 it is henceforth to be all *give* and no *take*; but has been forgotten in Ward R 3 14 under all this delicate *give and take* both suffered | Ward E 158 an hour's walking mixed with the *give and take* of explanations on both sides | Collingwood R 192 the friendly *give and-take* of a wide acquaintance Thus also *cut-and-thrust* 'a hand-to-hand struggle'

Adjectives.

8.3. Adjectives are very frequently turned into substantives, as shown by the formation of a plural in *s* and of a genitive in *'s*, see ch IX A specially noteworthy case is the *one* that is used as a 'prop-word', see ch **X.**

Pronouns.

8.41. Pronouns may be turned into substantives Thus (formerly frequently) *he* = 'male being', *she* = 'female': Bale T 1439 I am non other, but even the very *he* | Sh Tw I 5.259 Lady, you are the cruell'st *shee* alive | As III. 2.10 carue on euery tree The faire, the chaste and vnexpressiue *shee* | Cymb I. 3 29 the *shees* of Italy | Swift 3 341 the *Hees* would fight with the females | Phillpotts M 40 (and often) a *she*

In the 19th and 20th c it is often the objective case that is used thus substantively: Trollope D 1.94 that other *him* is the person she loves | ib 94 reference to

some *him* | Gilbert Orig Plays 1884 129 (vg) Mr. Fitz Partington shall introduce him —It ain't a *him*, it's a *her* | Roosevelt NP '13 He feels, as though that child was not the present *him*, individually, but an ancestor

8.42. In this way we have substantivized (Carlyle S 132) the THOU and (ib. 39) that strange THEE of thine, and with special frequency in more or less philosophic style the pronoun of the first person, either in the nominative form as in: Ward D 3 86 Was there any law—any knowledge—any *I*? | L Morris Poet Works 121 And the *I* is the giver of light, and without it the master must die | Jefferies H 35 If, when I die, that 'I' also dies, still even then I have had the exaltation of these ideas —where the substantival character is shown by the adjunct and by the use in the verb of the third-person form,—or in the accusative form, as in Carlyle S 35 Who am I; what is this ME? | ib 37 our ME the only reality | ib 92 a certain orthodox Anthropomorphism connects my *Me* with all *Thees* in bond of Love | Ru Sel 1 503 But this poor miserable *Me*! | Mered E 489 the miserable little *me* to be taken up and loved after tearing myself to pieces!

An English friend once told me about a clergyman who in one of his sermons spoke constantly of *your immortal* I, but was sadly misunderstood by the congregation, who did not see why the *eye* should be more immortal than any other part of the body. It is perhaps to avoid such misinterpretations that the Latin form is sometimes used, as in Thack P 3 363 every man here has his secret *ego* likely

When the pronoun is preceded by an adjective, it is sometimes inflected in the usual way (poor *I* had sent a hundred thousand pounds to America, would you kill poor *me*? and similar examples are quoted by Storm EPh 208, note), but in other places we find it treated like a substantive: Sh Sonn 72 vpon deceased *I* | Cor V 3 103 to poore *we*, Thine enmities most capitall.

8.431. Another pronoun which in certain applications has become a substantive, is *self* Here only a rapid sketch of some features of the development of *self*

can find its place In OE the usual construction is that of an independent pronoun (as still in Danish): *Ic sylf hit eom*, or *ic . . self*, from an early period it became usual to attach it to a dative: Oros 200.33 Nero gestod *him self* on þæm hiehstan torre This is still surviving in *himself* and *herself*, but from an early period the latter form might be taken by the linguistic instinct to contain the possessive *her*, and then *self* would be taken as a sb As early as Ælfred we find *self* with a possessive of the third person plural: Oros 186 7 þæt he *heora self* onseon nolde These two circumstances, and perhaps others of a more intricate character, led to the formation of *myself* and *thyself*, which replaced *me self, the(e) self*. In the plural we find *self* (or *selve(n)*, which was also a sg form, < *selfum, selfa*), whether preceded by a dative or a possessive, see for instance Ch E 108, where three MSS have "that we Ne coude nat *vs* self deuysen how", and three MSS have *our self*. In the third person *them* (*hem*) *self* (or *selven*) was used up to the end of the 15th c. In the 16th c the forms with *selves* begin to appear (More U generally *themselfes*, but 227 *themselfe*, the 2d ed sometimes has *themselues*) In the 17th and the beginning of the 18th c (Shakespeare, Addison, Swift) *self* is printed as a separate word when preceded by a possessive (*my selfe, your selfe, her selfe, our selues, your selues*, also *it selfe*), but the forms with a dative are printed as one word (*himselfe, themselues*). Though *himself, themselves* have always been the literary and standard forms, *hisself* and *theirselves* have been, and are still, frequent in vulgar speech (see for instance Pegge, Anecd. 181, Shaw C 197 Billy dont look half pleased with hisself | id P 222 theirselves) By the side of the more natural *oneself* the form *one's self* is by no means rare in printed literature; Addison Spect no 163 corrects *one self* in the 2d ed. into *ones self*.

8.432. If we look at these forms from the etymological point of view, we must say that whenever *self*

is preceded by a possessive, and whenever the pl *selves* occurs, we have the sb. But grammatically we must say that each of the forms *myself*, (*thyself*), *himself*, *herself*, *oneself*, *itself*, *ourself*, *ourselves*, *yourself*, *yourselves*, *themselves* is now one indivisible pronoun; in particular the form *themselves* cannot be analyzed into *them* + a sb *selves* But apart from these we have a real sb *self*, pl *selves* in the following cases

8.433. First when there is an adjective between the possessive and *self*, as in Sh LL II 151 your faire selfe | ib V 1.120 your sweet self | ib V. 2.818 my wofull selfe | R3 I. 2 80 thy cursed selfe | ib III. 1 63, III 7 195 | Tp I 2.132 etc. | Sh Cy III. 4.160 woman it *pretty* selfe | AV 1 Pet 2 24 who his own selfe bare our sinnes.

Thus also in modern poets, though not in natural speech In Alabama, however, people say *his fool self* (Payne 284)

A special case is with numerals Franklin 202 between our two selves | Di Do 363 F and D, representing, in their two selves, all the other mourners | Lowell 304 forgotten by all but their half-dozen selves.

8.434. In the second place, *self* is a sb when it is put in the genitive case, as already in OE: Ælfric (Cook's First Book 197) [Satan] wolde bēon him self on his selfes anwealde | Sh R3 IV. 4.421 if your selfes remembrance wrong your selfe | Sh Err II. 2.125 thy deere selfes better part.—This now is completely obsolete

8.435. Third, *self* is a sb when it is preceded by the genitive of a substantive, this is obsolete though still used now and then by poets Greene F 8 140 unto Cyrus self | Sh Cor II. 2 98 Tarquins selfe | H8 I 1 42 actions self (not very common in Sh) | Keats 2 131 Sorrow more beautiful than Beauty's self | ib 1.72 dear as the temple's self | Hewlett Q 47 Betis, whose ancestor was Brutus' self

In a slightly different way in Darwin L 1.374 a child, whose parents and self I well knew (not natural)

8.436. A fourth use of the sb *self* is the philosophical as in Spencer (NED) if it is *the true self* which thinks, *what other self* can it be that is thought of? | Conder (ib) *Self* does not come and go, it abides

8.441. The pronouns ending in *-body* and *-thing* are sometimes turned into substantives The compounds with *body* are often used with the signification 'a person of distinction or rank'·

Beaconsf L 85 he seemed to know everybody who was anybody | Trollope D 2 15 everybody had been asked, —who was anybody | ib 2 60 Is he,—is he—just anybody? He is a very great deal | Jerrold C 37 I'm threatened to be made nobody of in my own house | ib 54 to think yourself nobody isn't the way to make the world think anything of you.

But it is only when in this signification an article is added in the singular or when a plural is formed that the word becomes a substantive (NED from 1601)

Jerrold C 78 you thought yourself *a somebody* || Mrs Browning A 162 some five hundred *nobodies* | Thack V 229 there was everybody that every one knew, and only very few *nobodies* in the whole room | Trollope D 2 61 they are *nobodies* | Galton H 46 many men who have succeeded as statesmen, would have been *nobodies* had they been born in a lower rank of life | Kipl J 1.33 as though ye were *somebodies*

This is different from the substantival employment of *somebody* (as a quotation-word) in Mered H 210 Somebody drove me to Fallowfield Who was *the somebody*?

8.442. *Something* and *nothing* become substantives when they take the indefinite article with or without an adjective or when they form a regular plural, the sense is comparable to that of *a somebody*, *a nobody*

Goldsm 627 he wanted *a something*—a consequence of form—a kind of a—I believe the lady perceives my mean-

ing | Austen M 202 there would be *a something* to do | ib 378 at length *a something* like composure succeeded | Thack N 398 *a something* embittered her | Hope D 36 of course there was *a something* | Mered E 84 it informed him of *a something* in her character that might have suggested to Mrs. J her phrase | Stevenson V 42 you have *a something* in you loveable and worth preserving.

The same with an adjective before it (NED from 1577): Fielding T 1.274 if I have taken *a little something* now and then | Di Do 33 promise me to take *a little something* warm before you go to bed | ib 196 Mr Toots had *a filmy something* in his mind | Thack E 2 44 a prophecy that *a wonderful something* was about to take place . . he owned that *the great something* he had been engaged upon had failed utterly | Carlyle R 1.77 he did not know very much, though still *a good something*

Somethings (NED from 1642):

Pope 366 the Chaos dark and deep, Where *nameless somethings* in their causes sleep | Lowell 304 we're *the American somethings* or other.

8.443. *Nothing* as a subst

Sh Mids V 16 the poets pen gives to *airy nothing* a locall habitation And a name | Sheridan 246 what he has done for me has been *a mere nothing* | Fielding T 4 50 such a woman as this, with her little, *her nothing* of a fortune | Austen M 131 it is *a nothing* of a part, a mere nothing || Tenn 725 What did you ask her? Some daily *something-nothing*

In the plural·

Sh All II. 5.33 vses a known truth to passe *a thousand nothings* with | Austen P 91 *pompous nothings* | Carlyle G 6 what says the letter? *Kind nothings* | Benson D 34 a few *polite nothings* | Stevenson V 17 *the thousand and one nothings* of the day and hour

8.444. *Everything,* too, may be used (half humorously) in the pl, I quote from the NED· there were

rum everythings | Ru: *Patent everythings* going of themselves everywhere.

8.445. Similar, though not quite the same uses, are found with *anything*:

Di D 645 he had no mother—*no anything* in the way of a relative | Ru Sel 1 261 if he can do anything but put his hat off and on, and give words of command, *the anything* must, at all events, have something to do with the barracks.

Adverbs.

8.51. Adverbs are sometimes turned into substantives As *once* = 'one time', it may take *this* or *that* examples in NED from the 14th c on): Sh H6A V 3 12. Helpe me this once | Stevenson M 46 . . . but once . That once he had passed dryshod | ib 168 bear with Felipe this once

For then once (ME *for then ones*), in which *then* is OE dative *þæm*, has been metanalyzed into *for the nonce*, which is no longer felt to be connected with *once*.

Once may be the object of a preposition, cf. besides the familiar *at once* also *for once* (NED from 15th c. on) as in Gissing B 437 for once that I feel tenderly, I have a hundred fierce moods, and *in once* (rare, not in NED) as in Jerome T 38 Guessed it in once. But this does not necessarily make it a substantive (8 12)

8.52. *A down* is used in recent language (slang?)' Shaw C 78 if she keeps a down on me for what I said to her —What is a down? A grudge?—Yes Something of that sort.—Colonial, it is not?—Yes, I believe I picked it up in the colonies | Kipl S 80 He has a down on King for something or other.

Ups and *downs* are usual in the signification 'upward and downward movements', as in Mrs Browning A 35 such ups and downs | Shaw D 11 by ups and downs | Doyle F 222 I've had ups in my life, and I have had downs.

8.53. Similarly *the ins and outs* = 'the inner and outer details', as in Conway C 132 he knew all the ins and outs of every plot or political event. In a different sense *the ins* = 'those in power' and *the outs* 'those out of power' as in Goldsmith 639 I have been dreaded both by ins and outs | Ward M 144 stiff with the angry virtue of the "ins", denouncing the faction of the "outs".

Miss Austen uses *the outs and not outs* (P 42) of the girls who have, or have not, been introduced into society.

In still another sense we find in Amr NP '05 the Armenians are *at outs* with the Government.

8.54. Instead of *the fors and againsts* (NED from 19th c) it is more usual to say *the pros and cons.*

8.55. *An aside* = a remark made 'aside', as in Caine C 153 mysterious asides about a friend being a friend

8.56. In philosophical language adverbs of time, etc, are often made into substantives. Jefferies H 34 I dwell this moment in the eternal *Now* that has ever been and will be | Hawth S 174 throughout the long *hereafter* | Cf also Barrie T 106 in the *long ago* (ib 126, 369)

8.57. Thus also interrogatory adverbs: Scott A 2 15 "You must tell me *the when—the where—the how*" "The when was at midnight—the where, in the ruins—the how, was by a nocturnal experiment" | Swinb L 274 the *how* I was bent on making out | James S 8 having forgotten the connection, the *whence, whither* and *why* of his guest.

8.58. Though *this very now* (Hawthorne 1.420) is only a strengthened *now* (subjunct), *now* is here treated like a sb (cf. *this very moment*). Thus also *now and then* in *every now and then* (frequent, e.g. Hope Q 12); cf also the rarer *every here and there* (Stevenson B 39)

8.59. Other unclassified substantives from adverbs are seen in: Sh WT III. 3 61 in the *betweene* | Carlyle R 1.23 he handed it her by way of *over and above* | Hawth Sn 11 Again, however, and again, and yet other

agains, she could not help turning her head to the window | (heard:) will *by and by* do? | the *ayes* have it.

Type Pick-pocket.

8.61. A (formless) verb plus its object (without any article) may be made into a substantive. So far as I know, these formations are entirely unknown to Old English, whereas they abound in all the Romance languages: It. *bacia-mano*, *passa-tempo*, *spazza-camino*, Sp. *basa-manos*, *corta-plumas*, *cumple-años*, Fr *couvre-chef* (whence *kerchief*), *li-cou*, *fai-néant*, *crève-cœur*, *porte-plume*, *tire-bouchon*, *guerit-tout*, etc See on these formations Diez, Gramm d. roman. spr 4ed. II 438; Darmesteter, Formation des mots composés, 1875, p. 146 ff, and Dictionnaire général § 204, Osthoff, Das verbum in der nominalcomposition, 1878, p 236 ff The form of the verb is generally the imperative (cf Lat. *fac-simile*, etc), though often perhaps it is merely the bare verbal stem When such compounds begin to make their appearance in ME, they seem to be modelled on the French formations, but in English it is quite immaterial whether we take the verb to be in the imperative or in the crude-stem form In Chaucer we find *picke-purse*, *lette-game* 'spoil-sport', in Langland *cutte-purs*, *pike-porse*, *pike-herneis*, and the number of these words rapidly increases so that in Shakespeare we find at least 25 of them

8.62. We may divide these formations into two classes according as they denote persons or inanimate objects, though the distinction is not always sharp, some words being used in both classes.

To the first class, at any rate mainly, belong such words as

break-vow, Sh John II 1 569 that dayly breake-vow | *carry-tale* Sh | *cut-purse* Sh | *cut-throat* Sh | *do-nothing*, Hawthorne Sn 68 | *find-fault* Sh | *kill-courtesy* Sh 'a rude fellow' | *kill-devil* Marl F 412 I should be cald kill diuell | *know-nothing* | *lack-bread* Sh | *lack-brain* Sh | *lack-land*, John

Lackland | *lack-latin* † | *lack-linen* Sh | *lack-love* Sh | *make-peace* Sh | *pick-pocket* | *pick-purse* Sh | *pick-thanks* Sh | *run-the-hedge*, Stevenson B 19 | *sawbones*, nickname for a surgeon, e g Stevenson JHF 7 | *'scape-gallows* Di N 544 | *scatterbrain*, Caine C 426 What a scatterbrain I am! | *Shake-speare* | *spendthrift* Sh | *spoil-sport*, Shaw 2 313 Dont let us be spoil-sports | *tell-tale* Sh Merch V. 1.123 we are no tell-tales | *tell-truth* Swift PC 179 | *turn-coat* Sh | *turn-key* | *turn-spit* | *toss-pot* Sh | *want-wit* Sh.

Cf. also Sh LL V. 2 463 Some *'carry-tale*, some *please man*, some slight zanie, Some *mumble-newes*

These formations are generally more familiar than such formations as *peace-maker*, and they often seem to originate in an ironical imperative (see Bøgholm, ESt 44 94).

8.63. To the second class, or words denoting inanimate objects, we may reckon the following compounds

be-all Sh Macb I 7 5 this blow Might be the *be all* and the *end all*, cf also Di Do 193 | *breakfast*, cf. for the pronunciation [brekfəst] I. 4 36 and 9.212 | *break-neck* Sh | *breakwater* | *catchfly*, of plants, see NED, from 1597 | *catchpenny* | *hold-all*, e.g Kipl J 2 108 | *kill-time*, Caine C 274 such holy *kill-times* as going to church | *make-mirth* Mrs Browning A 106 | *make-rime* Rossetti's ed of Adonais 101 one of the least tolerable instances of *make-rhyme* | *makeshift*, The S 79 foolish makeshifts | *pastime* | *pick-lock* Sh | *save-all*, Swift T 70 that useful instrument, a save-all | *scare-crow* Sh | *stop-gap* | *sweep-stake(s)* in Sh *soopstake*.

The term *dreadnought* was originally formed to denote a person, but now it is best known as the name of a type of battleship

On the plural of these words see 2.45; on adjuncts formed on the same pattern 14.7.

8.64. In one case the original mode of composition has evidently been forgotten, namely in *hangman*. We had the old *hangdog* 'a man who hanged dogs', as in

Swift J 155 I dined privately with a *hang-dog* in the City, and *hangman* was formed in the same manner, *man* being the object of *hang*, we should in vain search for parallels to the other possible explanation: 'a man who hangs', as if we had a word *bake-man* = *baker*. But the pronunciation [hæŋmən] instead of [-mæn] seems to indicate that *man* ceased early to be felt as the object, and the recent formation *hang-woman* 'a woman who performs the function of a *hangman*' (NED, two newspaper quotations) points in the same direction.

8.65. We nowhere find a pronoun as the last element in such substantives, but in some cases we have a pronoun as the object, if it is followed by an adverb: *forgetmenot* (after the F *ne m'oubliez mie*) | *pick-me-up* 'refreshing drink' or 'refreshment' Ridge S 77 now it's time for your little pick-me-up | *reach-me-down* 'ready-made garment' | *catch-'em-all-alive* 'fly-paper'. Cf. 2 46

8.66. In a few cases the object of the verb in such combinations is itself a verb (in the infinitive) *hear-say*, frequent from the 16th c.; More U 199 knowe by heare say | Hardy L 160 a piece of hearsay | *make-believe*, frequent in 19th c., Caine C 7 a child's genius for make-believe | Tennyson 144 make-believes (the same pl in Stockton R 210). Some write *make-belief* with the sb as object, thus Di D 605, Barrie T 78 (but ib 267 *-ve*); pl *make-beliefs* Street E 23

8.67. We have also some colloquial substantives, made up of a verb in the crude form and a subjunct, and meaning 'one who —s' Thus *go-between* 'one who goes between parties', Sh Wiv II. 2 273, Di Do 389 to be his go-between to you (frequent) | *runagate* Sh, obs | *runaway* Sh, frequent, *run* might be ptc. | *gadabout* 19th c. | [*start-up* Sh Ado I. 3.68, may originally contain the sb *start* 'tail', rather than the vb, cf. the more usual *upstart*] | *fly-by-night* 18th and 19th c. | Bennett W 2.265 one of your *stay-at-homes* | Shaw 1.179 What an old *stick-in-the-mud* you are | the '*Die-Hards*', an historic nickname

of the Middlesex Regiment, in 1911 applied to the 'No Surrender' party in the House of Lords | Bennett W 1.25 Mr. P., the unfailing comfort and *stand-by* of Mrs. Baines | Herrick M 228 the men . . . were the *hold-ups*.

The popularity of these formations is accounted for by the awkwardness of adding the ending *-er* to the whole phrase (though such a word as *hold upper* is occasionally formed in US), and a certain disinclination to put *-er* in between the two parts of the phrase, as is done in the more regular words *looker-on*, etc (2 51)

8.68. With these must be classed *a lean-to* = 'what leans to, a penthouse', NED from 1461 on, also e g. Defoe R 2 123, Morris N 25, Gosse F 42, and *a draw-back* 'what draws back, disadvantage', from ab 1700 (in Swift J 45 in the same sense *a pull-back*) The meaning of these formations is somewhat different from that of the more numerous class of similar formations (*a set-to*, *a break-down*, etc = the action of setting to, of breaking down), which will be treated in Morphology together with the ordinary substantives derived from verbs (*a drive*, *lift*, etc.).

Type Afternoon.

8.71. We have a few substantives consisting of a preposition with its object, such as *afternoon*, *overall* 'outer garment', *out-of-work* 'unemployed', *undergraduate*, *counter-poison*, and with Greek and Latin prepositions *Antichrist*, *pro-Boer*. These are different from similar words, in which the first component is an adverb: *an afternoon* is not a kind of noon, as *an aftertaste* or *an afterglow* is a kind of taste or glow; *over* governs *all* in *overall*, but not *coat* in *overcoat*.—To the class here dealt with we must refer *an at-home* (e.g Di Do 321), though this is really a kind of transferred quotation-word, taken from the words on the invitation-card: "Mrs. X at home . ."; and further *to-night*, *to-morrow*, and *to-day* in such collocations as Galsworthy P 2 72 she's been looking forward *to to-night* ever

since you wrote | Dryden (NED) Unhappy he who . . . *to to morrow* wou'd the search delay; His lazy morrow will be like to day | Conway C 131 I looked forward with impatience *to to-morrow* | Galsworthy P 4.19 I'll give him *till to-morrow* | Fox 1 46 they spent *to-day* with us [Mrs Browning A 183 *all to-night* I have strained at you | Wells T 20 and *all to day* the girl's foot has been bleeding]

The substantival character of these combinations is especially obvious from the possibility of a genitive as in Sh R3 V 3.45 Let vs consult vpon *to morrowes businesse* | ib V. 3 206 euery one did threat *To morrowes vengeance* on the head[e] of Richard | Dryden 5.217 by *to-morrow's dawn* | Spectator 5 in *to-Morrow's paper* | Di Do 62 on *to-morrow's inquiries* | *to-day's post* | Smedley F 1 355 you call *to-night's* an adventure. Note the parallelism in Ru Sel 1 456 part of *to-morrow's work* . . part of *next month's work*.

Some substantives of this class are abbreviations of adjunctal combinations (cf. 14 6), such as *the Underground* (in London) = 'the under-ground railway'

8.72. The preposition *to* + an infinitive is made into a sb in (*a great*) *to-do* from such a combination as Ch B 4441 I wol not *han to do* of swich matere; cf. F *une affaire* < *à faire*); cf. *ado* < *at* (Scand.) + *do*, and the rare substantive *the to-be* 'the future'

Phrases.

8.8. Here may also be quoted some instances of phrases that have been turned into substantives, besides the plural ones given 2.46 ff Kingsley H 232 to their long-lost *might-have-been* | Barrie T 292 he shuddered to think of the *might have been*, had a girl, who could love as Grizel did, loved such a man as her father | Page J 414 He's a *has-been* | Bunyan G 32 how if all our faith, and Christ, and Scriptures should be but a *think so* too | Shaw D 179 the Church had to execute a complete *right-*

about-face | Archer A 158 the credit of having sent to the *right-about* the Invincible Armada (also Philips L 92 from the word of command: *right about face!*)

Abbreviations.

8.91. Parts of words may also be turned into separate substantives Just as first-words of compounds may become adjectives (13 82), they may be detached as substantives with the same meaning as the whole compound, the second element being left out because the whole context or situation makes it clear what is meant. The psychological procedure is the same as in the numerous shortenings like *photo* for *photograph*, *pub* for *public-house*, etc., which will be dealt with in another place. Abbreviated expressions will always be especially frequent in the speech of sets of people who live habitually together and continually have to talk about the same things; they are not necessarily slang though of course particularly frequent in slang When people living in the same village speak of "the Crown", they mean "the Crown Inn", other ellipses belong to the whole English-speaking world, as when the 11 45 train is spoken of as "the 11 45", etc Some examples may follow

a copper = a copper coin (she threw a few coppers to the beggar), or = copper kettle (Di N 87 it's washing-day to-morrow, and they want the coppers filled).

a nickel = a nickel coin (in America = 5 cents).

Trinity = Trinity College (Wordsworth P 3.53 Trinity's loquacious clock), and similarly the other colleges, etc

the Foundling = the Foundling Hospital (Thackeray V 85)

the Haymarket = the Haymarket Theatre (Wilde In 296)

a four per cent = a four pct security (Austen P 135 1000 pounds in the 4 per cents), still shorter *four* (NP '06 The Bourse was again weak on Wednesday. Fours fell to 79).

shorthorns = shorthorn cattle (Hope Ch 35)

chestnuts = chestnut horses (Doyle S 6.11).

tops = top boots (Di N 76, D 318; now obsolete).

patent leathers = patent leather shoes.

outsides = outside passengers (Di N 50, obsolete)

worsteds = worsted stockings (Di N 510 displayed his grey worsteds to the fullest advantage).

clay = clay pipe (Jacobs L 109 he slowly filled a long clay).

straw = straw hat (Ridge L 176 it's my hat . . . it isn't new I can't afford new things. It's an old straw I had dyed)

sailor = sailor hat (Norris O 580 She was dressed neatly . . jacket and a *straw sailor*).

excursion = excursion train (Ridge N 13 they caught the first excursion on the morning of the great day)

cottages = cottage pianos

ash-leafs = ash leaf potatoes

Cumberlandshire = Cumberland speech, generally called *Cumbrian* (Black Ph 21 Bell, whose broad Cumberlandshire vastly delighted the youngsters | ib 28 Bell was allowed to talk Cumberlandshire to the Doctor's own face).

dip = dipcandle (GEliot A 198).

Gladstone = Gladstone bag (Jerome T 54 We got a big Gladstone for the clothes)

stage = stage coach (Ward El 480 that's the stage coming down hill).

return = return ticket (we'd better take returns)

dog-skin = dog-skin glove (Black P 207 a pair of old dog-skins).

bye = by-election (NP '05 the General Election may not go as the "byes" have gone), cf also NED *bye* or *by* = by-road (by[2], bye)

Cf. Dickens D 154 the plate . . six *tea*, two *salt*, and a pair of *sugars*, I have at different times borrowed money on (= tea spoons, salt spoons, sugar tongs) | Di

N 216 Four-and-twenty silver tea spoons, two *gravies*, four *salts*

There is also an obsolete word *a common-place* = a common-place book (Fielding T 2.48).

The Solomons (London A 17) = the Solomon Islands, *the Admiralys* (ib 71) = the Admiralty Islands

8.92. Sometimes the ellipsis becomes so common that it is scarcely thought of as such:

rifle = rifle gun (which is now never said)
hansom = hansom cab (Hansom cab).
beaver = beaver hats.
Newfoundland = Newfoundland dog
buttonhole = button-hole bouquet.
cheviots = Cheviot sheep, or cloths.
landau = Landau carriages.
ulster = Ulster-coat
rubbers = rubber overshoes
water-colour = water-colour picture.
soda = soda water.
kid = kid glove
bugle = bugle horn (bugle, obsolete = 'buffalo')
pike or *turnpike* (Amr.) = turnpike road (Herrick M 21 instead of taking the pike, which was shorter | Read Kentucky Col 14 the pike, 15 the turnpike, smooth and white, stretched out).

8.93. As the singular form is used in the first element of compounds (7 1), the absence of *s* often shows a word to be an isolated first-word. Boating men will speak of having *a four-oar* instead of a four-oar boat, and Chaucer scholars mention *the six-text*, meaning the six-text edition of the Canterbury Tales The NED has a quotation "What if he should bring *a ten-button* instead of *an eight*!" (= glove). Thus also in GE M 1.71 a *four-wheel* (= a four-wheel carriage, generally called a four-wheeler) | Thack S 12 where the usage of the *four-prong* is general (= four prong fork, or four pronged fork, as it is called on p 10) | Doyle M 222 he's got a

touch of Martell's *three star* (= brandy) | Bennett A 233 measured it [the room] with a *two-foot* [two-foot rule].

A sixpenny magazine will be spoken of by journalists and booksellers as *a sixpenny* (Rev. of Reviews 1890, 154 A new sixpenny, the Paternoster Review, will be published early in October); and this new noun forms a regular plural, *the sixpennies*. I know of no other language utilizing beautifully such simple methods of plural formation as we see in the English series: *six pennies—sixpence—sixpences—a sixpenny—sixpennies*

Chapter IX.
Substantivized Adjectives.

9.1. There are a great many substantives which were originally adjectives (or participles), but which cannot be called substantivized adjectives from the point of view of actual speech-instinct. These include not only those which cannot any longer be used as adjectives, e.g. *tithe* (OE *teogoða* 'tenth'), *friend*, *fiend* (old participles of verbs meaning "to love, to hate"), *Orient*, *Occident*, *fact* (from Latin participles), but also many which can still be used as adjectives, if the substantive is now felt to be the "original word", from which the adjective is felt to be derived, or if the word has developed two more or less differentiated significations, according as it is used as sb or as adj. As examples may serve *light . night half novel subject object . particular . infant . captive secret . ideal motive*

In this chapter we shall deal with those instances in which the adjectival origin is still generally felt more or less distinctly by ordinary speakers

On substantivized *other* (*others*) see ch. XVI

A. Denoting Persons.

9.21. Adjectives cannot now as in former periods of the language be used freely in the sg without a sb or

one (ch. X): instead of *a poor* (ein armer) or *the old* (der alte) one has to say *a poor man*, *the old man* or *a poor one*, *the old one* Matth 9.33 OE had *se dumba spræc* and the AV *the dumb spake*, but the RV of 1881 has *the dumb man spake*, and the 20th Century Bible *the dumb man spoke*, which was already found in Wycliffe *the doumb man spak*

In the common case singular we have no formal criterion to decide whether a word is still an adjective or has become a substantive (thus in all the cases enumerated 9.22 ff.) But when the genitive in 's (9.5) or the plural in *s* (9.3) is formed, we have undoubtedly a substantive

9.22. Among those cases in which it is still possible to use a sg adjective alone in speaking of a person, I shall first mention the religious expressions *the Almighty* | *the Crucified* (Ward E 388)

9.23. One of the adjectives found most frequently substantivized in the sg is *the dead* with its synonyms, though colloquially *the dead man* is preferred It seems impossible to say *a dead* for *a dead man* In all the following quotations the word is in the sg, though this can often be seen only from the whole of the context, all the examples of *dead* are from very modern writers, who are affecting Biblical English:

Zangwill G 180 the *dead* stood revealed as he had been in life . Every eye was fixed upon the *dead man* in the picture | Kipl J 2 120 toward the *dead man* . then say the friends of the *dead*, "Let him hang" . . For the *dead* was a strong man . . . and the *dead man* comes to me | Caine P 215 as if the *dead* were asleep [there is only one] | ib 218, 219 | Jacobs L 47 the old people buried their *dead* [= their son] | Hope R 263 he would not look at the *dead* || Austen M 25 the memory of the dear *departed* | Di N 25 the dear *departed* | Di D 47 the *departed* | Barrie T 271 || Di N 2 the *deceased* had taken no further notice of his nephew | Di D 521 paying all

the just debts of the *deceased* | Caine E 362 the *deceased* has settled her temporal affairs || Zangwill G 78 in the lifetime of the so *lamented*

9.24. Other participles in the sg· Kingsley H 259 you alone have come to visit the *bereaved* and the *deserted* in his misery || Zangwill G 126 Lucy, the *betrothed* of the deceased | James S 127 the footfall of Mrs. Damerel's *intended* was loud on the staircase | Hardy L 184 another woman whom he spoke of as his *Intended* || Di N 443 appointments up and down its every side the *Appointed* saunters idly || Gissing B 416 suspend judgment until the *accused* had offered his defence | Zangwill G 209 he had obtained an interview with the *condemned* || Kingsley H 209 my *firstborn* (biblical) | Di Do 193 || Di N 491 information respecting the fair *unknown* (from the French, *la belle inconnue*)

9.25. Examples of other adjectives in the sg: Wordsworth 204 When the *fatherless* was born | Zangwill G 39 In the realm of the blind [pl] the *one-eyed* is a king (French) | Thack S 129 It shall be a sin for the *poorest* not to have a pretty girl to love him | Shelley 651 When a lover clasps his *fairest* (poet)

9.26. In the following cases there can be no doubt that the words have become real substantives, because it is possible to form a pl in *-s*, besides they admit of being used with the indefinite article: Austen M 14 to make a *third* very useful, especially when that third was of an obliging temper | GE A 82 a *soft* [= 'idiot'] | Doyle S 5 149 The child was a *dear* | Caine C 82 I was not such a *silly* as to let wit about that | Wilde In 172 we are dominated by the *fanatic*, whose worst vice is his sincerity

9.31. The OE adjective never had an *s* in the plural (the pl forms in the nominative were *gōde*, *gōda*, *gōd*, *gladu* and in the weak declension *gōdan*, all of which forms have become the modern endingless *good*). But in the ME period the *s*-plural spread not only to a great

many original substantives which in OE had other endings, but also to some original adjectives, cf. Gerber, Substantivierung des adj., 1895, p. 14; and in the ModE period this tendency is constantly increasing.

The difference between adjectives that have become substantives (plural in *-s*) and adjectives merely used as principals (plural unchanged ch. XI), is well brought out in Fielding T 3 133 we *moderns* are to the *ancients* what the *poor* are to the *rich*. It is not always easy to see why words are treated in one way rather than in the other. Substantivization in general is the sign of a more specific classification, as seen in the difference between *the innocents* and *the innocent* 9 35. There is also a greater tendency to use the *s*-plural of learned words, and the unchanged plural of familiar words, thus *mutes* and *deaf-mutes* in contrast to *the deaf and dumb, the blind*. In the following paragraphs the chief instances of plurals in *-s* are roughly classified

9.32. Human beings in general: We *mortals* (Mered H 159) | *humans* "formerly much used; now chiefly humorous or affected" (NED), it is frequent in US and begins to be commonly used in England as well, especially because *men* is ambiguous (= 'humans', or 'male humans'), thus Doyle S 5 44 | Wells U 237 we poor humans | id V 43 among humans (a 'suffragette' speaking).

Races etc : *the whites* | *the blacks* | the *reds* But not in ordinary language *the yellows*

Europeans | *Asiatics* | *Eurasians* | *Indians*, etc.

Chineses (Mr PL 3 438, Defoe R 2 323) and *Japaneses* (Defoe R 2.292) obsolete, see 11 57.

Savages, natives (Smedley F 1 192 and often astonish the natives) | Kingsley H 101 We *Easterns* | Mered H 356 we *continentals* | *aliens*.

9.33. Social position, etc . *nobles* (Ru Sel 1.398 a distinction of race between nobles and commoners) | the Honorables (Thack V 346) | *notables* (Beaconsf L 43) | *equals* | *superiors* | *inferiors* | *fashionables* (Ward M 150,

Thack P 2.72) | *commercials* (= 'c. travellers', Ridge G 72) | *domestics* (Spect 163 *-icks* = 'servants').

NP '12 where he would get so much money. He answered: "From the *higher-ups*" [Cf *grown-ups* 2 44]

privates (= private soldiers) | *regulars* | *irregulars* | *heavies* (Mered R 13) | *ordinaries* and *specials* (i e. policemen) | *orderlies* | *marines* (go and tell it to the marines!).

9.34. **Gender**. *males* and *females*. The substantivized *female* has very often been strongly objected to by purists, it is found in a great many of the best authors (see Lounsbury, Standard of Usage, 1908, p. 212 ff). From my own collections: Bacon A 27 32 the males of the family . . the females | Sh never as a sb | Mi only once in the sg, SA 1055 | By DJ 15 82 deference to what females say | Lamb E 1.142 respect, which we are supposed to pay to females, as females | Quincey 266 the most magnificent young female | Scott Iv 205 pl | Bronte P 99 these ladies sat side by side with young females destined to be demoiselles de magasin | Di N 176 sg

9.35. **Age**: *three-year-olds* (Kipl J 1 11, cf. ib 2 212) | *grown-ups* (now very frequent colloquially; found e g. Shaw Man 33; Quiller Couch M 269) Here may also be mentioned *innocents* (murder of the innocents = little children; cf, on the other hand, Pope Rape 1 40 the fair and innocent shall still believe).

The moderns as opposed to *the ancients*, very frequent, Swift T 15, Goldsmith 620 | Tylor A 373 we moderns | Ward F 151 Rubens and Velasquez are moderns | Gissing B 373 he was a modern of the moderns | the *mediævals* (Ru Sel 1.143) | the *contemporaries* (Carlyle H 23, etc) | *temporaries* (= t. servants, Di Do 33)

9.36. **Creed and party**: *Christians . infidels Evangelicals* (Ruskin Sel 1 469). *Primitives* (= Primitive Methodists) and *Wesleyans Peculiars* (Shaw D XVII).

With regard to *heathen* a distinction is made: the plural without *s* is used with the definite article in the Bible and elsewhere to designate them as a whole:

Kingsley H 332 she knows more than the heathen | Fox 1 150 the state of the heathen and their hope of salvation | Stevenson JHF 177 do not envy the heathen | Ru C 22 the heathen, in their saddest hour, thought not so | Hope Ch 1 But otherwise *heathens* is used: they are regular heathens | Kingsley H 227 with thy foot on the necks of heathens | ib 319 (and 376) Down with all heathens! | ib 396 either heretics or heathens. In the same book, p 233 the heathens were moved with wonder, the plural in *s* denotes not all pagans, but those present on that particular occasion

Liberals and *Conservatives* | *Radicals* | the *Blues* (= Conservatives· Thack P 1.38 those zealous Blues). *Reds* (= Communists, etc · Ru F 88 we old Reds) —*Contents* and *non-contents* (those who vote for and against, in the House of Lords).

9.37. **Physical and psychical characteristics** *worthies* (frequent, the Nine Worthies, 16 th c) | *prodigals* (Thack V 336, N 300) | *degenerates* (Shaw M 195) | *criminals* | *roughs* | *undesirables* (Wells F 143) | *drunks and disorderlies* (frequent in police reports, Review of R Sept 1901 250, Herrick M 13, 44, Carpenter P 72) | *unfortunates* (Stevenson D 140, Conway C 195, James S 11, Macdonald Fk 305) | *respectables* (Carpenter C 102 the criminals have become the respectables of modern Society) | *efficients* and *inefficients* (Wells A 184, 205) | *unsuccesfuls* (Kidd S 62) | *stupids* (Hardy F 245) | *mules, deaf-mutes* | (general) *paralytics* (Ellis M 400) | "The *Born-Tireds*" (Ridge S 98) nonce-word | *goodies* (frequent; e g. Caine C 63, 272) | *silly softs* (Mered R 265) | my *pretties* (Goldsmith 657) obsolete

An obsolete instance is *gentles*, formerly frequent, especially in addressing women Sh Shr III 2 85, H5 Prol 8, Greene F 10 16, 54, Scott A 2.186, cf ib 188 to raise up the puir folk against the gentles (= gentry).

9.38. **Personal relations** *familiars* (Di Do 66, Stevenson JHF 46) | *dears* (Thack V 83 the children, little dears), thus very often, very frequent also as a

manner of addressing: my dears (Austen M 15, GE M 1.79, 80, Ward R 1.17, etc) | *beloveds* (Mrs Browning 417) | *inseparables* (Di Sk 340) | *intendeds* (Di N 129 men fall in love and desert their chosen intendeds) | *greats* (rare, Quiller Couch M 244 your father and mother and your grandfathers and grandmothers, and right back into the greats and great-greats) | *likes* the likes of you, frequent (Tennys For 51, 70, Caine M 349, Bridges E 11 all her likes) | *unlikes* (Tennys ib 70 their unlikes); cf. 11.34.

9.41. **Comparatives** are naturally felt as more distinctly adjectival than positives, therefore there are only few of them that can take the *s*-plural. *Elders* is at least as old as Ch in the sense 'parents' or 'ancestors' (cf G *eltern*), see Ch B 3387, cf E 65, 156, Caxton R 96. More U 156 has the contrast *the yonger to their elders*, and 165 *the yonger . the elders*, but 164 *the elders* induces the form *the yongers* In Sh Cor *elders* stands for 'senators', I 1.230, II 2 46, but in other places Sh has it in the now current sense "those that are older", generally with a possessive Shr II 1.7 my duty to *my elders* Trollope D 2 19 among *the elders*. Without a defining word it is rare· Peele D 455 honoured Of tribes and *elders*.

Shakespeare has *better* as a pl in a few places All III 1 22 when better fall | H4A IV. 2 73 they'le fill a pit, as well as better But he also, and more frequently, has the present form *betters* (with a possessive). Lr I. 4 277 make servants of *their betters* | Shr IV 3 74 *your betters*

9.42. **Superlatives** are often used alone in the singular before a partitive *of* Sterne 37 the *best* of brothers | Johnson R 55 if I were Emperor, not the *meanest* of my subjects should be oppressed | Austen P 37 to the *youngest* of the family.

In the common phrase "the Devil take the *hindmost*" the last word is properly in the sg, but it is used as a pl in Garnett T 113 In this age the devil is taking the hindmost, and we are the hindmost.

Superlatives do not occur in the pl with *-s* to denote persons.

Genitive.

9.51. The OE adjective had the genitive ending *-es* only when it was not preceded by a defining word In most cases when the adjective was a principal, it had the weak inflexion and thus ended in the genitive case in *-an* (*þæs godan*) In ME the genitive ending *-es* was, however, gradually extended to adjective principals, which thus became virtually substantives In AR we have only a few isolated instances like 334 þes *unselies* sawe (that unhappy person's saying) | 220 of-þunchunge of *oðres* god (of the good of another) In ModE the instances have become somewhat more numerous.

9.52. In juridical language the genitive of such words as *accused, deceased* is common: a doubt as to the *accused's* identity | Gretton H 1.431 those who believed in the accused's innocence | Scott Iv 466 no emblem of the *deceased's* birth | NP '94 the *deceased's* landlord NED has examples of *the dead's* from 1465 and 1529; I have found a 19th c one in Whittier 53 With the *dead's* unconscious power [= the dead woman's] Thus also in Scots law *dead's part* (= the part of one's property that one is free to dispose of by testament).

9.53. Other examples of the genitive of substantivized adjectives. I have marked with stars those cases in which it is also possible to form a plural in *s*, and in which there is, therefore, every reason to call the word a real substantive. With the exception of *the Almighty's* these are the only instances in which the gen sg seems perfectly natural.

Fielding 3.495 to beseech *the Almighty's* favour | GE Mm 98 *the Almighty's* intentions | Sh Sonn 78 7 Thine eyes . . Haue added fethers to *the learneds* wing [might be gen pl; not possible now] | Peele D 442 To see the guiltlesse bear the *guilties* (sg) paine | Sterne 23 to have

no *mortal's** help but the old woman's | Thack N 801 Had he not done everything in *mortal's* power? | Ru T 125 a *black's** skull will hold as much as a *white's** | London A 10 on the *black's* mouth | Ru S 168 are his words more cheerful than the *Heathen's** | Di D 130 I shall be always near my *pretty's* resting-place | ib 645 this *unfortunate's** manner | Stevenson MB 189 His death was like an antique *worthy's** | Kingsley H 316 he felt his old blood as hot as a *four-year-old's** | Philips L 253 on my *second's* yacht [= my second husband's] | Sharp Browning 116 that *noble's** [= nobleman's] trial | Holmes A 270 a *paralytic's** senseless arm | Ellis M 401 the general *paralytic's* wife | Bennett W 1.194 a *lunatic's** luck | Gissing R 174 the *Stoic's** sense | Barrie T 413 his *beloved's* arm | Yeats 147 Your *well-beloved's* hair | Phillpotts K 95 the mystery of her *betrothed's* sudden death

Thack P 2 145 our *contemporary's** establishment [thus frequent in one newspaper's mention of another].

9.541. The genitive of *the elder* and *the younger* is not unfrequent·

Thack N 641 How was Barnes to know the reason of *the elder's* refusal? | ib 764 the old man was pleased with *the younger's* spirit | Phillpotts M 11 By their mouths these women might have been judged *The younger's* was firm to hardness

9.542. The genitive of *the former* and *the latter* is frequent in literature, though not colloquially·

Fielding 3 467 such was *the latter's* confidence | Thack N 344 Clive and Belsize had returned to *the former's* quarters | ib 624 such was *the latter's* general habit of submission

9.55. The genitive plural is practically never found in those cases in which adjectives and adjectival pronouns can stand alone as principals, though Shakespeare has *in manies eyes* (Ro I. 3 91) and *in manies lookes* (Sonn 93 7), and the NED quotes from a letter (1715) *to counterquestion both's witnesses.* AV Gen 18.29 I will not doe it for *four-*

ties sake, 31 for *twenties* sake, 32 for *tennes* sake Pinero M 114 has *the poor's box* instead of the usual *the poor-box* Instead of *both's* the usual expression is *both their,* though *both they* is not now used: Wilde S 188 It is greatly to be regretted for both their sakes. Instead of *all's* one says *everybody's* Genitives like *those present's opinions* or *some's opinions* or *the French's rights* are universally avoided in favour of constructions with *of*, or else *some people's opinions*, etc , will be said

9.56. But where adjectives can be substantivized in the pl by means of the ending *s*, a genitive plural may be formed, though it is not very frequent· Sh R3 IV 4 30 *innocents* blood (the folio reads *innocent*) | Thack Sk 31 Windsor Heavies . . go to the *Heavies'* mess. The only gen pl of this kind that is at all frequent, is *others'*· Sh Oth III. 3.272 for others vse | Sh Sonn 78 11 In others workes thou doost but mend the stile | By 381 with tears for nought but others' ills | Ru Sel 1 497 instruments of others' ills.

B. Neuters.

9.6. It is not every adjective that can be substantivized, and sometimes considerable capriciousness prevails, even with regard to the signification in which an adjective can be thus employed This may be exemplified by some synonyms and antonyms *Evil* can be freely substantivized: *an evil*, this *evil*, *many evils* (*evils* already Ch), but *ill* is becoming obsolete in the same general sense and is now chiefly used (also in the pl) = 'calamity' or (chiefly Sc) 'bodily disease'; *bad* is never used in any of these senses, and never in the pl, though it may be called a sb in the phrase *go to the bad* (Carlyle R 1.225, Caine C 285, Benson D 43) also Grant Allen, First 46 a deficit of some forty pounds *to the bad* against me *Good* is used as a sb, especially in the signification 'use' what is *the good* of lying? | It is *no good* trying to conceal it (different from *not good*) | Stevenson JHF 137

my resolve was fruitful of *some good* (different from *something good*) | take that, it will do you *good*. In the moral sense *good* is chiefly, but not exclusively, used in contrast to *evil*: Di Do 400 all distinction between *good* and evil | Hope D 91 there must be *some good* in her; even with the numeral *one*: Meredith E 332 sorrows have done me *one good*. A third signification is seen in *for good* 'definitely, finally': Di D 45 she had come *for good* | Di X 25 Home, *for good and all*. But this *good* is not indubitably a substantive. The substantive *goods* has come to be a word by itself, 'merchandize' (5 782); note the retention of *s* in the compound *goods-train* (7.22). We realize the isolation of this word when we read in Thackeray N 329 "The law professes to exclude some *goods* (or *bads*, shall we call them?)—well, some articles of baggage, which are yet smuggled openly" Lowes Dickinson, who wants to use the pl of *good* in the moral sense, is obliged to write it with a capital *G*: S 133 virtue that is mean . . . art that is base, love that is sensual are not *Goods* at all; cf. ib 69 if it did not endanger other *Goods*.

That *good* is felt to be a sb, is shown by the adjective in Gissing G 420 in that case you would be doing good *Distinct good* [= what is distinctly good]

While the unchanged adjective principal in the plural (*the poor*) is used only in speaking of persons, there is a stronger tendency to use the *s*-plural of things than of persons, cf. Sh Hml V 1.266 Sweets to the sweet.—Many words are used in this way only, or chiefly, in the plural; in the following lists they are naturally given in the pl form.

9.71. Abstracts. The philosophical use of *the unknown*, etc., will be mentioned in ch. XI, as such adjectives have not become indubitable substantives. As such we must recognize the following on account of the pl ending:

Spencer First Pr 81 *an Absolute* which existed not alone, but along with other *Absolutes*, would no longer be an absolute but a relative | Ru U 2 constant elements . .

Let us eliminate the *inconstants* . . . the *accidentals* | Dickinson R 16 what may be called *fundamentals* | Wells F 101 these things are *universals* | Hope Q 132 the *superficials* | Henley Burns 333 those *unknowns* | Archer A 14 he compares *incommensurables* | Doyle S G 218 How do all these *unusuals* strike you?

9.72. Languages Adjectives like *English, French,* etc., are used to denote languages either without or with the definite article according to the ordinary rules for substantives he speaks *Spanish* well enough | *the Spanish* he speaks is good enough [*From the Spanish*—in speaking of translations] That these words, though of course not occurring in the pl, have become substantives in this sense, appears from the fact that they can have possessives and adjectives before them: *my Spanish* is not very good | *colloquial French* | Philips L 210 he speaks *excellent English* (more frequent than · *speaks English excellently*, in which case *excellently* is a subjunct to the verb).

9.73. Studies, examinations, etc : *mathematics* etc. (5 775) | *classics* || *greats* and *smalls* (at Oxford) | *intermediats* and *finals* (at American colleges, Page J 36) || *unseens* (= unseen translations, Stedman O 215)

9.74. Substances, materials in general: *chemicals* (Stevenson JHF 88) | *vegetables* | *greens* | *eatables* frequent, Defoe R 2 50, rare in sg: no eatable (Landor in NED) | *drinkables* | *sweets*, Sh Lucr 867 The *sweets* we wish for, turne to lothed *sowrs*; also figuratively: Sh Shr I, 1 28 to sucke the *sweets* of sweete Philosophie | Fielding T 1 135 the *sweets* of marriage . . . its *bitters* | Austen M 189 the *sweets* of housekeeping | Marlowe F 112 princely *delicates* (†, = delicacies) | *cordials* (Fielding T 2 46) | *home-brewed* (GE A 82 a chat over his own home-brewed; not pl) || Thack P 3.72 called for "four *stouts*" (= glasses of stout, thus also two *bitters*, etc).

Di N 256 all her *movables* and *valuables* (*movables* also Sh, both frequent in 19th c.) | *necessaries* (Johnson R 38 the necessaries of life; common) | my *dues*, customs dues.

Colours: Ruskin Sel 1.187 all the *greys*, and *reds*, and *purples* in a peach | ib 180 sober *browns* and dull *greys* | Stevenson M 251 the quiet pattern of *greens* and *greys*.

9.75. Animals and plants are occasionally denoted by substantivized adjectives *natives* = native oysters | *greys* (Thack VF 305, Hog 84, Di M 349, 350, etc) = grey horses | *thoroughbreds* = th horses.

Evergreens (Carlyle S 56, etc.) | *everlastings* (Bronte P 174) | *quicks* (= hawthorns, Tennyson 271 through the budded quicks)

9.76. Parts of the body Di N 41 [noses] Snubs and *romans* are plentiful enough, and there are *flats* of all sorts and sizes, but perfect *aquilines* are scarce | Fielding 3.602 a gentle kick on his *posteriors* | *vitals* (= vital organs) | *genitals* | Haggard S 63 he turned up the *whites* of his eyes

9.77. Articles of dress (some of these expressions are now obsolete, because the articles themselves have gone out of fashion) *academicals* (Stedman O 112) | *canonicals* (GE A 376 the chaplain in his canonicals) | *regimentals* (Fielding T 2.44, Austen P 37) | *woolens* (Franklin 8 a dyer of woolens) | *ready-mades* (Ridge L 70) | *blacks* (Chesterton F 136 to wear "blacks" for an official enquiry) | *unmentionables, unwhisperables* and other euphemisms for trousers | *tights* (= tight trousers, Thack P 1.48, Di X 13, Di D 145, etc) | *smalls* (kind of trousers, Di Do 367, Di D 211 knee-smalls) | *Hessians* (Hessian boots, Thack P 1 48) | the *uppers* (of shoes) || Ellis M 425 men's shoes were made *rights* and *lefts*.

9.78. Various technical uses. Letters or types: *capitals* | *Italics* | *initials*. — Sounds (in Sweet's phonetic works) *vowellikes* | *affricates* or "stop-opens".—In metre. *longs* and *shorts*.—In music f *sharps* and b *flats*.—In journalism: *dailies* (= daily papers), *weeklies* (Doyle M 244), the *illustrateds*, the *comics* (= comic papers), cf. penny *dreadfuls* (= novels) Note in advertisements the contrast

in inflexion in "Nine years' experience on first-class Evening and Dailies".—Shipbuilding: *ironclads* (Wells A 195).—Mathematics: Spencer A 1 109 in any proportion the product of the *extremes* is equal to the product of the *means*

9.79. Unclassifiable: *constitutionals* (= c. walks, Ridge L 40) | *toilet tidies* (Wells L 175 two toilet tidies used as ornaments) | *anniversary, -ies* | a village *green* | the *Rockies* (= the Rocky Mountains) | *calms* | *contraries* (Congreve 287 dreams are to be understood by contraries | Wordsw P 11.180 change of them into their contraries) | *deeps*, often figuratively, as Kipling L 108 his experience of the sordid misery of want had entered into the deeps of him, also Mered E 104 | Page J 34 *Germans* and other social functions (U S : kind of dance or ball) | *deads* = earth or rock containing no ore | *disagreeables* (Mered H 99 they had disagreeables) | *full*. the next full of the moon [Bennett A 51 Here's two *fives* = 'five pound notes', cf. 5.131].

The *Holy of Holies* (in this form due to Milton: Wyclif has *holi of halowes*, AV the most holy place) | Mered E 227 the inner *holies* of a man | Carlyle S 201 how many *Unholies* has your covering art made holy?

9.81. Superlatives are not often used in the pl with *s*· BJo 3.268 this is the worst of all worst *worsts* that Hell could have devised | Mrs Browning A 47 God, that unity of *Bests* | NP '88 (NED) Fruit should be sorted into *bests* and *seconds* and in some cases into *thirds*. A comparative in the pl is found in Kingsley H 124 all *greaters* containing the less

A neuter superlative is found with *no*: Di D 406 Think of me at my best, if circumstances should ever part us!—You have *no best* to me, and *no worst* (This is nearly a quotation-word.)

9.82. Ordinals are substantivized in fractions: *two-thirds* (cf. also *tenths* = tithes, AV Tobit 1 6, 5.13), in musical names for the intervals: *fourths*, *fifths*, and in a few special combinations: a *first* (in a University examin-

ation: Collingwood R 55 he seemed to hope he would get a First | Wells N 102 most of us took Firsts), *third* = third class carriage, on railway (Hope Q 28 he's always ridden first-class and he won't believe there's anybody worth knowing in the *thirds*), on the second [day of a month], pl in Macaulay: on two successive *thirds* of September. Cf. also above 9 81 (*seconds, thirds*).

9.83. A **past participle** used substantively: *bygone*, rare in the sg (Di D 123 it was all a bygone then), but frequent in the pl: let *bygones* be bygones (similarly Di M 478 | Anstey V 319 why do you bring up bygones like this?)

Genitive.

9.9. The genitive is not frequent with substantivized neuter adjectives, because it is on the whole rare with all words that do not denote human (or at any rate living) beings:

Vachell H 281 loving evil for *evil's* sake | Henley P 108 the *past's* enormous disarray.

Chapter X.
The Prop-Word One.

The Beginnings

10.11. The origin of the ModE construction *a (the) good one* has been variously explained, see Gerber, Substantivierung des adjectivs (Gottingen 1895); Einenkel in Grundriss and in Anglia 26 (1903) 469ff = Das englische indefinitum 25 ff.; Luick, Anglia 29 (1906) 339; Einenkel, ib 36 (1912). 539 According to Gerber, *the good one* is a blending of ME *the best oon* = 'der beste' and *he was a maister oon* = 'er war meister'. But the real ME form of the former construction is *oon the best*, in which *oon* strengthens or emphasizes the superlative;

the latter does not really occur in the form given, as it is abstracted from *A wonder maister was he on* (Rob Gl.). In all the instances given by Gerber p 10—11 *on* stands by itself after the verb, except only in Orrm 2333 "ȝho wass ædiȝ wimmann an All wimmannkinn bitwenenn", where we should probably place a dash between *wimman* and *an*. Besides, it is not easy to see how the two constructions should have been blended ('contaminated') and how the result should have been the ModE construction. Luick is on safer ground when he refers to OE (Riddles 50) "Ic wāt eardtæstne ānne standan, dēafne dumban", where *ān* is the numeral placed after the adjective in a similar way as elsewhere *sum*, *tu*, *twegen* (unhȳdig sum | dēore tū | mōdige twegen) About 1000 we find *ān* + substantivized adj as *ænne scyldigne*, etc. But though we have ME examples of postpositive *oon* when the adj is preceded by *so* (RobBr 3271 so grete one | Ch T 1 373 so goodely oon | Rose 563 so semly oon), we do not seem to have any contemporaneous examples of *greter one* Luick thinks that this is accidental, but I think there is the same psychological reason for this word-order as for *so great a man*. the speaker thinks first of the emphatic comparison; therefore *so* precedes, with which the adj is so intimately connected that it is placed immediately after *so*; then, and not till then, the indefiniteness calls for expression (*one*, *an*). Einenkel, in his latest treatment of the subject rightly lays stress on such combinations as *swich an*, *many an*, *ech an*, while still ascribing to the construction with the superlative OE *ān se betsta* more influence on the development of our idiom than I should accord it

10.12. The decisive innovation was the rise of combinations like *a good one* This, I think, is to some extent like the use of *it* in *it rains* or in *I think it necessary to wait*, and like the use of *there* in *there was peace* or *let there be peace*: in all these cases a word becomes necessary because speakers are accustomed to have some

word in that particular place: *it* and *there* take the place of a subject or of an object, and similarly *one* takes the place usually occupied by a substantive People were so accustomed to say *a good man*, *a great house*, etc, that they felt *a good* and *a great* as rather bald expressions: the ordinary balance was restored by saying *a good one*, *a great one* Or, we might perhaps rather say: the balance that was felt wanting in both ME constructions *ān* (*one*, *an*, *a*) *great* and *great an* (*one*), was restored by a blending of both Corresponding developments are found in Danish (*en god een*, *et godt et*, *sadan een*, *hvilken*, originally *hvilk* + *een* 'which one ; now also *hvilken een*, even *sikken en een* < *se hvilk en en een*, literally 'see which an a one') and in Cape-Dutch (*das 'n mooie ene* 'that's a nice one', *di ander een* 'the other one', H Meyer, Die Sprache der Buren 1901, p. 40) But when once the use of *one* as a prop-word (to use Sweet's term) had been established, English went further than Danish at any rate, though some dialects (in Jutland) go further than standard Danish and admit, for instance, *den ækle en* 'that abominable one' and *din grimme en* 'you (literally your) hideous one' (both found in Bregendahl, Dødsnat 95). The chief difference between English and Danish in this respect is the use of the pl *ones*, which to some extent resembles Spanish *unos*, colloquial Danish has a repetition of *nogle* or *nogen nogen gode nogen* 'some good some', and correspondingly in the neuter sg *noget godt noget* 'something good'.

10.13. When Gerber says (p 55) that "Das XV und XVI. jahrhundert ist die werdezeit, in welcher sich die neuen verhaltnisse schon im ganzen so herausbilden, wie sie noch heute vorherrschen", he has overlooked some of the most interesting recent developments

10.14. It will be necessary to have terms for a distinction that is important in this as well as in some of the following chapters. I propose to apply the word *anaphoric* to *one* (or any other word) if it refers to some

word already mentioned, while I say *independent* if there is no such contextual reference. *The little one* is used anaphorically if it means 'the little flower' or whatever it is that has just been mentioned, but independently if it means 'the child' without some such substantive being already named. The independent *one* always denotes a person, while the anaphoric *one* may refer to a thing

There is a play on the anaphoric and independent employments in the wish addressed to newly married people: May all your future troubles be *little ones.*

10.21. The reason why the word *one* has been chosen to fulfil the rôle of a prop-word is chiefly to be sought in the frequent and quite natural use of *one* (by itself) to take the place of a substantive just mentioned. This may be called a simple application of the numeral *one*, and no plural is possible. Examples:

Ch A 3152 he is no cokewold. But I sey not therefore that thou art *oon* | ib 3161 | Sh Tp V 191 I chose her when I could not aske my father For his aduise: nor thought I had *one* [= a father] | Sh Hml II. 2.250 Denmark's a prison. Then is the world *one* | Goldsmith 619 while he is giving places to all the world, he cannot get *one* for himself | Di Do 402 the change, if it may be called *one*, had stolen on her | Di D 310 I haven't seen a pretty woman since I've been here, not the ghost of *one.*—We could show her the substance of *one*, I think | Phillpotts K 138 she was now a free agent—if she had not formerly been *one* | Bennett W 2.184 Matthew stopped, looking a fool and feeling *one.*

10.22. In the combination of a pronominal adjunct with *one* (971 in NED: æghwylcum anum | AR 46 of euerich one | Bale T 159, 595 euerychone, etc) the numeral value of *one* was originally strong, ME *euerich one* being the equivalent of modern 'every single one'. This is still seen more or less clearly in the following examples:

Every one:

More U 121 *euery one* of thies famelies (cf ib 139,

159) | ib 257 the wyues doo-stande *euerye one* by here owne husbandes syde | Defoe R 2.136 he made them every one a shirt | Swift 3.326 every one of which terms | Di X 43 God bless us every one! Cf. also 7.812 f. and 16.6.

Each one ("in modern use generally superseded by *every one*, or by *each* absol." NED): Sh Tp IV. 46 *Each one* tripping on his toe, Will be here | Mcb V. 8.74 thankes to all at once, and to *each one* | Galsworthy C 149 they who chance in the Park . . . and *each one*, if he has a Love, thinks of her | Bennett W 2.324 the scribes of *each one* of the Five Towns

Either one is rare: Lowell 331 b He would help *either one* of you out of a slough | Williamson L 174 Nîmes or Arles, *either one* of which would repay weeks of lingering | Mered E 339 he could marry *either one* of two women . . whichever one he selected would cast a lustre on his reputation | NP '05 *Either* one of two causes may produce this | Quiller Couch M 206 I offer him the choice of two farms—*either one* of them worth twice the rental of Saaron

Any on · Worth S 59 I could get meals at *any one* of a dozen boarding-houses in the village

But in most cases in which *anyone, someone, no one* are now used the numeral signification is obliterated, and *one* only serves to make the pronoun into a principal, see ch. XVI

10.23. When *one* comes before an adjunct, it may also in some cases retain its numeral force more or less unimpaired, as in

Ch A 3155 wyves a thousand gode ayeyns *oon badde* | Sh H4B II 2.20 shirts, one for superfluity, and *one other*, for vse [now rather. *another one,* or *one more*] | Gissing G 448 he emptied the contents of sundry little bottles into *one larger* [= *one larger one*].

But in most cases *one* has a weakened signification in this position, and fulfils only the grammatical function of serving as a principal to hang an adjunct on.

The construction is found in all those instances in which an adjunct is placed after a substantive

10.241. Examples of anaphorical *one* + adjective: Sh Tp V. 1.269 His mother was a witch, and *one so strong* That could controle the moone | Goldsm 612 a connexion with *one so unworthy her merits* as I am | Scott A 2 361 Oldbuck gave a conscious look to Sir Arthur, who returned it with *one equally sheepish* | Bronte P 78 I could not take my garden with me, and I should scarcely find *one so large and pleasant* anywhere else in town.

More often *one* is not anaphoric, but independent = 'a person'.

Sh H6A I. 2 26 He fighteth as *one weary* of his life | Di Do 78 too serious to be trifled with by *one so much younger* than himself | Morris E 48 the hopeful dream Of *one too young* to think death near | Haggard S 107 through fear of offending *one so powerful* | Meredith H 481 how could she take anything from *one so noble and so poor* ! | Bennett W 2 151 He looked like *one dead.*

The same *one* before a participle:

Sh John III 1 278 as fire cooles fire within the scorched veins of *one new burn'd* | Ml H 1.181 she blusht as *one asham'd* | Bunyan G 44 Now was I as *one bound* | Defoe R 181 I stood like *one thunder-struck* | ib 301 looking like *one astonished* | Defoe R 2 200 I lay as one drunk | Scott Iv 51 he was powerfully made, like *one accustomed* to endure the fatigue of war | Fox 2.229 he was *one greatly loved* by those who knew him | Garnett T 11 with her step hasty as of *one pursuing or pursued* | Masefield C 122 with the vacant stare of *one bored*

10.242. This position of *one* is often found (especially after *as* or *like*) with adjectives indicating physical or psychical deficiencies, although such adjectives are not as a rule placed after their substantives Thus already in some of the examples just given. Further:

Otway 159 I am *as one dumb* when I would speak of it | Fielding T 4.329 he behaved *like one frantic* | Lamb

R 69 I laughed aloud *like one mad*, whose mind had suddenly gone from him | Thack N 721 she acted *as one distraught* | Di Do 96 he looked *like one forlorn* | Wells T M 123 She lay *like one dead*

10.25. The adjunct after *one* may be a prepositional group. Examples of anaphorical *one*

Quincey 101 the situation was *one without hope* | Di D 344 his position is really *one of power* | Di D 215 considering the matter as *one to be arranged* between you and me

One = 'a person', not anaphorical:

Shelley 729 Like *one asleep* With open eyes . she lay | Di D 201 I felt, for many days, *like one in a dream* Conway C 21 I may have walked *as one in a trance* Hardy F 372 his lips moved as those of *one in great pain.*

This is frequent before an infinitival adjunct.

By DJ 4.54 She was not *one to weep* | Mered R 339 you are *one to want* more than money | ib 354 he was not *one to suspect* anybody | ib 447 | Caine S 1 37 with the air of *one about to communicate* a novel idea

10.26. The same *one* may be followed by a relative clause Sh Mids II 1 216 commit your selfe Into the hands of *one that loues you not* | Lr I 4 111 for taking *one's* part *that is out of favour* [now· the part of one

Rise of the Prop-Word.

10.31. We now come to those applications of *one* in which it is most distinctly a 'prop-word' The dissociation from the numeral is especially clear, (1) when the pl *ones* is used, (2) when *one* is preceded by another *one*, or *ones* by another numeral, (3) when *one* is preceded by *the* or a similarly definite word, for *one* is originally indefinite, as appears from the development of the indefinite article from a weakened form of *one*

10.32. *An (a)* + adjective + *one* Early examples. Rob Br. (Luick) *an uncouth one* | Sir Ferumbras (Kellner) a fair knyȝt a ['he'] was to see, *A wolif on* wyþ oute lak | 1463 (NED) oon of my short gownys, *a good oon.*

Examples abound in the 16th and following centuries:

More U 197 precious stones . to gette *an excellent one* | Sh Cy V. 5.292 He was a Prince *A most inciuill one* | Merch I. 1.79 A stage, where euery man must play a part, and mine *a sad one* | ib V. 1.20 Stealing her soule with many vowes of faith, And nere *a true one* | Give me a cigar, but *a good one,* please.

10.331. Adjective + *a* + *one.* This is especially frequent with *such*; Shakespeare has both *such a one* (frequent) and *such an one* (twice); the latter form is still found in the 19th c. as a literary reminiscence, but the only natural form is *such a one* on account of the pronunciation [wan], cf. I. 11.21.

Sh Mcb IV. 3.66 Better Macbeth, Then *such an one* to reigne | Spect 7 mother of the present Lord such-a-one | Swift J 121 we have nothing to save us but a peace . . . we cannot have *such a one* as we hoped | Ru C 160 many a giddy and thoughtless boy has become a good bishop . . but no *such an one* ever became a good general.

10.332. *So* (or *as*) + adj + *a one*·

Beaumont 1.91 this heavy trust, Laid on *so weak a one* | Di D 373 the street was *not as desolate a one* as I could have wished it to be | Ru F 192 the privilege of seeing beauty is quite *as rare a one* as that of possessing it | Morris N 125 the great meeting . . . *as large a one* was held on the Sunday | Spencer A 1.415 the step no longer appeared *so questionable a one*

too + adj + *a one*:

Wordsw [ed. Morley] 366 its catastrophe, far *too spiritual a one* for instant sympathy | Conway C 106 the chance was *too good a one* to be lost

What a one:

Mered H 3 but *what a one* he was! | Ridge S 90 you know *what a one* he is

Half a one:

Fielding T 4.67 I have stayed above an hour, and I

did not think I had stayed above *half a one* | Di X 43 they drew round the hearth in what Bob called a circle, meaning *half a one*.

many one has now been displaced by *many a one*; cf. above 2 73.

10.333. With these combinations may be classed *(n)ever a one*; in dialects *(n)ever a* is frequent, especially in the forms *arra*, *arry* (see EDD), in which the original components are no longer felt:

More U 120 *neuer a one* of them all hath . lesse then XX. myles of grounde [A: none] | Sh Tim V. 1.96 There's *neuer a one* of you but trusts a knaue | B Jo 1.60 *ne'er a one* to be found, now? | ib 1.69 ere they should ha' come in, *e'er a one* of 'hem | Burns 3.249 O, that's the queen o' womankind, And *ne'er a ane* to peer her! | Tenn 124 I have sung many songs, But *never a one* so gay | Thack E 1.165 birthdays (poor Harry had never a one).

Cf also the exceptional *not a one* for *not one* in Sh Mcb III. 4 131 There's *not a one* of them but in his house I keepe a seruant feed

10.34. The plural of *a good one* necessarily is *good ones* This form is used anaphorically in the following quotations:

More U 123 They bryng vp very fewe horses; nor non, but very *fearce ones* | ib 236 magistrates . . . take *newe ons* agayne wyth them [in the edition A: *newe* without *ons*] | Sh Shr I 2 171 well read in poetrie And other bookes, *good ones*, I warrant ye | Sh Ado III. 3 121 when rich villains haue neede of *poore ones*, *poore ones* may make what price they will | Hml V. 1.118 will his vouchers vouch him no more of his purchases, and *double ones* too | Bacon A 6.27 seventeene cells, very *neat ones* | Swift J 138 two of my businesses . were they not *worthy ones*? | Goldsm 616 don't let us make imaginary evils, when we have so many *real ones* to encounter | Fox 2.53 Cromwell letters: he does not mean to take in

any more *fresh ones* | Doyle S 2.116 this order might lead to *other ones* [= others].

The combination is rarer in a non-anaphorical employment:

Ascham S 69 *som greate and good ones* in courte | Sh Hml III 1.196 Madnesse in *great ones* must not vnwatch'd go.

10.35. There is naturally no article before the adjective in the vocative:

Sh Cy IV. 2.360 *Young one*, Informe vs of thy fortune | Alls II. 1.102 | Otway 205 Oh *thou unkind one.*— Plural Ascham S 68 *ye great ones* in ye court | Sh R2 V. 5.15 Come, *litle ones* | As IV 1.76 Good morrow, *faire ones* | Cy V 1.2 *You married ones* | R2 V 5.15 Come, *litle ones.*

10.36. *One* + adjective + *one.* Here the first *one* is the numeral

Sh Cor II. 2.83 That's thousand to *one good one* | Di Do 207 with one stationary eye in the mahogany face, and *one revolving one* | Spencer Ed 127 German teachers had rather manage a dozen German boys than *one English one.*

Similarly in the plural after a numeral:

More U 127 broukes . . and among othere *II sumwhat bygge ons* | Ascham S 69 *three or foure great ones* in courte | Defoe R 213 the *two old ones* [cats] | ib 358 the wolves . *twenty lame ones.*

10.41. *The* (or other definite word) + adjective + *one* The oldest examples (in the sg) in Gerber are from Greene (*the only one*) and Peele (*the mighty one* | *the Holy one*); but there is at least one in Ch E 1552 I have the moste stedefast wyf, And eek *the mekeste oon* that bereth lyf. Franz (Sh-Gr² § 363) has not a single example from Shakespeare among the many he gives of *one* in various connexions. And yet there are some, though probably not very many

Sh Lr II 4.75 But *the great one* that goes vpward,

let him draw thee after —Cf. also AV Mark 1.24 *the holy One* of God

Recent examples of the anaphoric singular need not be given here, but a few may be given of the independent *one*:

Browning 2 655 Never the time and the place And *the loved one* all together! | Caine E 484 Doesn't the highest love remember first the welfare of *the loved one*? | Kipl S 254 On my honour, gulped *the persecuted one.*

10.42. In the plural *the* + adj + anaphorical *ones* is more common in Sh than in the sg (the first two examples are also quoted by Franz)

Sh H8 II. 2 93 All the clerkes (I meane *the learned ones* in Christian Kingdomes) | Lear II. 1 8 you haue heard of the newes abroad, I meane *the whisper'd ones* | ib IV. 6 99 I had the white hayres in my beard, ere *the black ones* were there.

Later examples:

Swift 3 272 *the poor ones* [= the poor Struldbruggs] are maintained at the publick charge | Swift J 70 'Tis not *the great bulky ones* [microscopes], nor *the common little ones*

The + adj + non-anaphoric *ones*.

More U 55 *the yonge ones* of greate cattell | Peele D 455 *the mightiest ones* | Sh Cy III 6 15 Thou art one o' *th' false ones*

10.43. We may have an adjective before and another adjective after *one(s)*: Austen P 193 Stupid men are *the only ones worth* knowing | ib 346 he had no single relation with whom he kept up a connection, and it was certain that he had *no near one living*

10.44. The adjective + anaphoric *one* may be preceded by another defining word (possessive, *this*, *that*, genitive):

Sh Lr I 4.179 thou had'st little wit in thy bald crowne, when thou gau'st *thy golden one* away | Otway 267 have my unhappy days Been lengthen'd to *this sad one?* |

Nares, Orthoepy 1784. 113 N has . . a sound which may be called its regular sound, and has by some been considered *its invariable one* | Brontë P 192 Pelet's worn-out frame could not have stood against *my sound one* | Carlyle R 1.226 Emily was Basil's only daughter, but she was not *his wife's only one* | Holmes A 104 if we change our last simile to *that very old and familiar one* of a fleet leaving the harbour | Ridge G 254 I had to put away *my other one* [i.e. watch].

Corresponding examples with independent *one*·

Sh Cymb V. 4.61 *his deerest one* | Merch III. 2.208 I got a promise of *this faire one* heere To haue her loue | Carlyle R 1 327 oh, *my darling lost one!* . . 'Let us burn our ships', said *my noble one* | Trollope O 151 Mary Lawrie is not *your engaged one* | Trollope D 2 35 "*My own one*", ejaculated Tregear. "Yes, yes, yes; always your own." | Haggard S 110 I learned wisdom from *that dead one*.

Thus also in the pl

More U 39 both the rauen and the ape thincke *their owne yong ones* fayrest | Sh Mcb IV 2.69 with *your little ones* | Tit II 3.142 when did the *Tygers young-ones* teach the dam? | John II. 1 521 What say *these young ones?* | Mcb IV. 3 215 All *my pretty ones?* [= children] | Tw IV. 2.37 I am one of *those gentle ones*, that will vse the diuell himselfe with curtesie | AV Job 39.3 they bring forth *their young ones* | ib Luke 17.2 offend one of *these little ones* | ib Mark 10.42 *their great ones* exercise authority vpon them | Carlyle R 1.9 (and often) *we young ones* | ib 1.70 the spirits of *my vanished ones*.

Recent Developments.

10.5. All these combinations, in which we have *the, a, this, that,* a possessive pronoun, or a genitive before an adjective + *one*, lead up to the use of the same words immediately before the prop-word *one*. I should be very much surprised if these constructions were much

older than the beginning of the nineteenth century, but recently they have been gaining in importance.

The only example I have of *that one* before the 19th c is the following, where *one* is evidently the numeral, *that one* being opposed to *your summe of parts (together)* Sh Hml IV. 7. 76 a qualitie Wherein they say you shine, your summe of parts Did not together plucke such envie from him As did *that one* [Not in folio].

10.51. First we have *the one* followed by an adjunct. These cases resemble those mentioned above (10.23 ff.), to which they form the definite counterpart. They differ from them, however, by admitting the possibility of the pl *ones*.

The post-adjunct is an adjective or participle:

Austen M 94 her conviction of being really *the one preferred* | Di X 68 "Not the little prize turkey the big one?" "What, *the one as big* as me?" | Haggard S 49 the rock, which he knew, and that appeared to be identical with *the one described* upon the sherd | Stevenson M 164 such high dames as *the one now looking* on me.

10.521. The adjunct after *the one* is an adverb or a prepositional group Examples of anaphorical *one*

Austen P 254 from impatience of knowing what the next sentence might bring, she was incapable of attending to the sense of *the one before her eyes* | Di X 49 Scrooge's niece's sister—the plump one with the lace tucker; not *the one with the roses* | Di N 214 this room and *the one up stairs* | GE A 361 an encounter that was likely to end more fatally than *the one in the Grove* | Caine M 410 Bring me a cap—*the one with a feather* in it . open the drawer on the left, *the one with the key in it* | Swinb L 215 every day spent here is a heavier irritation to me than *the one before* | Hope F 16 who is the young lady sitting by our friend the Father—*the one*, I mean, *with dark hair* | Gissing G 278 Each woman I fall in love with is of a higher type than *the one before*

Thus also in the plural

Kipl L 184 any letters for me? give me all *the ones in fat grey envelopes.*

The one is not anaphorical in

Hardy T 114 . replied *the one in buff.* Plural: Conway C 28 to do a man's duty in succouring *the ones in peril.*

10.522. The adjunct following *the one* is an infinitive with *to*; all my examples show non-anaphoric *one*:

Austen M 266 she is *the very one to make* you happy | Trollope D 1.36 the Duchess was to be *the one to bell* the cat | Mered H 416 thinking that he was *the one to fortify* her faith in Evan | Quiller Couch M 154 Ruth should have been *the one to stay behind* and I *the one to go* | James S 39 | Williamson S 201

10.53. The post-adjunct is very frequently a relative clause; *one* is anaphoric in most cases: Thack H 6 of all my nephews and nieces, you are *the one whose* conduct in life has most pleased me | Thack N 635 of all the men in the world *the one* I like best to talk to | GE A 7 the basket was *the one which* on workdays held Adam's dinner | Conway C 213 unless your answer is *the one* I hope for, we shall never meet again | Caine E 163 the daughter of my old friend in England —*The one who* died in Elba? | Dickinson S 13 a very different England from *the one* I have known | Hardy W 83 such an excellent house as *the one* you live in | Doyle S 6 69 It was a bust like *the one* which we had seen that morning | Page J 141 The physician came duly, sent up by *the one* she had telegraphed to | Norris P 122 Laura was a very different woman from *the one who* an instant before had spoken so gravely | Gissing G 209 a different woman from *the one* I worshipped.

The plural *the ones* is recent and comparatively rare:

Hardy L 208 of all the years of my growing up *the ones that* bide clearest in my mind were 1803, 4, and 5 | Shaw C 145 I never read articles on such subjects. I have hardly time to glance through *the ones that* concern me

The following quotations show *the one* used non-anaphorically:

Di D 552 you recollect mentioning Sarah, as *the one that* has something the matter with her spine? | Caine C 96 a follower of *the One who* forgave the woman | Caine M 145 I saw myself lifted up by *the one* I loved

The plural is here very rare; I have only two examples, in one a Manxman, in the other an American is speaking.

Caine M 33 *the ones* that's telling it are just flying in the face of faith | Bentley T 132 It's only *the ones* who have got rich too quick who go crazy

10.54. *The one* is very seldom used before a genitive: Fox 2 115 Ledru Rollin has taken the house next to *the one formerly Guizot's* at Brompton This would not be possible except for the adverb *formerly* = the one which was formerly Guizot's.

10.55. In all these instances (10 51—10 54), *the one(s)* (anaphoric) takes the place of an earlier *that, those* (16 3); *that (those)* still has to be used before an *of*-phrase with the same sense as a genitive. But before other *of* phrases *the one* may be found, though not very commonly: Trollope D 1 46 the first and only strong feeling in the borough was *the one of duty* [Not quite the same thing as . was one of duty] The development of *the one* is especially valuable, because *that* could not, of course, be used except anaphorically, and there was thus room for a corresponding independent expression.

10.56. Next, *the one* is frequently used without any adjunct = 'the right or proper (person or thing)' as in "Hand me his letter" "This one?" "Yes, that's *the one*." Unfortunately I have no literary quotations in my own collections, and the NED does not seem to notice this usage

10.57. *A one* is also used without an adjective, in most cases there is a non-adjectival post-adjunct

Di N 103 you are *a one to keep company* [ironically = a nice one to . .] | Ridge G 28 I like you, but you

are *a one to tread over* | Ward F 35 I'm *a one for plain speaking* || Ridge L 205 "Well", exclaimed her delighted companion, "you *are a one*, and no mistake".

10.61. Examples of *that one* (anaphoric): Wordsw 494 [he] Plays, in the many games of life, *that one* Where what he most doth value must be won | Di D 369 [geraniums] Dora often stopped to admire this one and *that one* | Thack N 525 I don't understand much about women, but *that one* appears to me to be an artful old campaigner | ib 619 I felt the greatest desire to give him a kiss, and *that one* which you had just now was intended for him | Ritchie M 119 I think this present generation of women is a happier one than *that one* was | ib 132 I cannot tell whether it was this year or *that one* before it in which we found ourselves returning home | Morris E 44 through the fields, Noting what *this and that one* yields | Shaw C 110 to fight the other fellow—*that one* with his head in a big helmet | Williamson S 201 I felt that if ever a fib were excusable, *that one* was

Thus also in the pl *those ones*·

Hughes T 2.268 the dear gardens! What was the names of *those ones* with the targets up, where they were shooting? | Kipl L 237 you must get some other clothes —*those ones* aren't fit to be seen

Cf. vulgar *them ones*, Doyle St 156 [prayers] you say over *them ones* that you used to say every night

10.62. *This one* anaphoric (I have no examples of *these ones*): Di T 1.58 There appearing to be no other door going straight to *this one* | Ru P 3 6 meditating on the charms of the next world, and the vanities of *this one* | Dickinson S 117 I look like a stranger from another world upon the business of *this one* | Dickinson Im 14 the desirability of a future life must depend upon its character, just as does the desirability of *this one* | Wilde In 202 there are other cases, but *this one* is quite sufficient for my purpose | Chesterton F 68 a much better

story than *this one* | James S 155 with a condition.—Another?—*This one* is comparatively easy.

This one is hardly ever independent, except in combination with *that,* when it means 'various persons': Bennett A 249 chatting with *this one and that.*

10.63. *What one* (cf 7.824)

Di N 486 escape from some prison, but *what one* she couldn't remember | Poe 660 Of the innumerable effects, of which the soul is susceptible, *what one* shall I, on the present occasion, select? | Shaw 2 133 all the words belong to some attitude or other—all except one *What one* is that?

This (interrogative) *what one* is different from the (exclamatory) *what a one* exemplified in 10 332

Which one and *which ones* (anaphoric) are very frequent in colloquial PE

10.64. *One* is even beginning to be used after a possessive pronoun

Trollope D 3.163 When a woman is old . But *my one*! She's not old | Hope In 135 there was a letter for her While he attacked his pile, she began on *her one* | Ewing Jackanapes 26 leaning back in *his one* of the two Chippendale arm-chairs in which they sat

In Aberdeen I once heard an educated lady say [speaking of carriages] ". before *our one* [stress on *our*] comes" and a distinguished scientific man "I was talking of *my one*" [stress on *my*, meaning 'my dog']

10.65. Similarly after a genitive; I once heard a lady say "Her parasol is finer than *her sister's one*" [*one* weakly stressed], but a friend whom I asked about this told me that to him the combination would sound much more natural in such a sentence as this: "Her parasol is fine, but her sister's one is finer."

10.66. *Ones* may be used after a personal pronoun in the plural This is not astonishing when an adj intervenes (as in *you great ones,* above 10.35, or NP '06 it is very annoying to *us quieter ones*), but it is more diffi-

cult to see why *ones* should have been added to a single *we* or *you* This is found in Scotch dialect, as Dr. Murray once told me (the forms are something like [hʌzjənz, jaujənz]), and it is evidently from Scotch that American has taken it. *We 'uns* and *you 'uns* are especially frequent in the vulgar speech of the Southern states (see Farmer, Dict. of Americanisms s. v *gaunted*, *hoosier*, Century Dict. *'un*, etc.). H Fletcher, New Menticulture, 1903, p 124 makes a negro say: "good old times when all *we uns* had to do was work, and sing and dance" The usual pronunciation is [wɪ (ə)nz, ju·(ə)nz], as Prof Hempl informs me.

The idiom may have originated with *you* to distinguish clearly the pl from the sg (cf. 2.86 ff)

10.67. Before *one* we may now also use substantive-adjuncts: *a cotton one, the top one*, see 13 4, and in the same way other words that can be used as first-words of compounds, can be detached and placed before *one*

The eight o'clock train is faster than *the nine one* | Ruskin S 85 the problem of land, at its worst, is *a bye one* | Gissing G 388 he was wearing his overcoat in default of *the under one*

Even a genitive case may be thus employed though this is very rare · Ruskin Sel 1.471 your pretty protestant beads, which are flat, and of gold, instead of round, and of ebony, as the *monks'* ones were (cf 10.65).

10.7. In colloquial language, the prop-word *one*, especially after an adj, is very often pronounced [ʌn, ən] or even [n] as in Sweet's Primer of Sp E 92 [ə ˌregjələ 'bædn]. This might be due to the ordinary omission of [w] after a consonant in weak syllables (cf. I 7.3), but is more probably a survival of the old *w*-less form of *one* (I 11 21). This pronunciation is evident from the rime in Byron DJ 2 146 *a new one drew on* : *Juan*, and is pretty often indicated in novels by the spelling *'un*, especially in some constant combinations like *bad 'un*, *stiff*

'un little 'uns; see, for instance, Di Do 134 I will go upon my walk at once. Take a good *long 'un*, my lad | ib 496 the *stiff 'un* | Thackeray P 3.236 nothing like a *thorough-bred un* | ib 355 Have you only found out that now *young un*? Warrington said.

It should be noted that with this pronunciation, (*one*) *un* tends to be a mere suffix added to the adjective to make it serviceable as a principal, and that there is a curious parallelism between *a bad* (+ sb): *a bad 'un* (without sb) and *my* (+ sb): *mine* (without sb), although the two phenomena have developed in different ways

I suppose that the Sc word *wean* 'a child, an infant', which is sometimes supposed to be derived from the verb *wean*, is nothing else but the adj *wee* 'little' + a short form of *one*

Importance.

10.81. We are now in a position to inquire into the rôle that this prop-word *one* plays in the economy of the English language. *One* replaces a substantive, which either has just been mentioned and which it would therefore be inelegant to repeat (anaphoric *one*), or else which would be so vague or general in signification that no ordinary substantive fulfils the requirement so well as the completely indeterminate *one* (independent *one*). It is in itself a substantive, and has the same inflexions (genitive, plural) as an ordinary substantive On the other hand it serves to indicate that the word joined to it is not a principal, but an adjunct, and thus in many cases removes the doubt that might otherwise exist in such a 'formless' language as English We shall now take in turn the advantages derived from the development of *one* as a prop-word, and finally (10 9) point out a few draw backs and inconsistencies.

10.82. The form shows at once whether we have to do with a singular (*one*) or a plural (*ones*) and thus removes the doubt caused by the flexionlessness of Eng-

lish adjuncts. This is seen clearly in the case of *which* (5.54). if we say "Here are some gloves, *which* do you want?" the question is more indefinite than if we say "*which one* do you want?" or "*which ones* do you want?" Thus also *the great one* and *the great ones*, where ME *the grete* may mean both G *der (die, das) grosse* and *die grossen*. The comparative frequency of the plural in the early quotations collected by Gerber seems to show that the opportunity it gave for indicating number played a rôle in the development of the idiom.—In Poe 661 "the modus operandi by which *some one* of my own works was put together" the addition of *one* makes *some* sg, while an isolated *some* can only be plural

With regard to the plural *ones* it is noticeable that in the great majority of early examples collected by Gerber the adjective is *little* or *young* (10 + 8 instances against 5 with *great* and 8 in all with other adjectives). It would seem that the plural first became popular in such combinations as *my little ones* and *her young ones*. Also in the AV these plurals are very frequent indeed (36 + 8 against 28 with other adjectives).

10.83. It is of some importance that by the use of *one* the formation of a genitive is rendered easy in cases where it would not otherwise be possible:

Kingsley H 73 Three set on me with daggers, and I was forced to take *this one's* dagger away | Caine M 413 a poor gentlewoman . . *this one's* father has turned his back upon her | Mi A 10 leaving it to *each ones* conscience to read or to lay by | Conway C 148 a dream in which two persons appear, and the dreamer cannot be certain with *which one's* thoughts he identifies himself | Whittier 439 *many a poor one's* blessing | Gissing B 44 a garret served as bedroom for the two boys, also as the *elder one's* laboratory | Hardy T 62 *the little ones'* eyes filled with tears.

10.84. While *one* as a substantive shows that the whole group plays the rôle of a primary member of the

sentence, it also shows that the word joined to *one* is a secondary word (adjunct). This is important in those cases in which the word can be a principal in itself. Compare

a little : *a little one*
go to the right : *go to the right one*
the fat : *the fat one*

Note also the difference between *what* (independent neuter) and *what one*, in the same way *this* and *that* tend to be used only as independent neuters, while *this one* and *that one* may either be anaphoric (neuter or personal) or independent personal, while in former periods *this* might also have the latter function (= G *dieser* 16 3). While "the last ball *before this*" would be understood as = 'before this time' (*this* independent neuter), "the last ball *before this one*" (Caine E 524) means 'before this ball'.

10.85. Further the combination *the top one* shows that *top* has not the same signification as when it stands alone, but the same as in *the top branch* = 'topmost'; *one* has a similar effect in Stevenson JHF 67 *the middle one* of the three windows was open *the middle one* = 'the middle window', different from the substantive *middle* = 'the middle part'. In Elizabeth R 240 . ' in my present condition . It's the glories of your *future one* that made me laugh" the addition of *one* limits the signification of *future*, which otherwise would be taken = the whole of what is to come Cf also the distinction between *the present one* and *the present* (which has also the signification 'the gift'). Further Wells F 260 America is an older country than any *European one* [*any European* would = any person born in or living in Europe] | Di D 77 this peculiarity striking me as his *chief one* Somewhat different is the case with Masefield M 261 His memory for art was *a good general one*—where *a good general* would give a ridiculously wrong meaning

The evil is a neuter substantive, but *the Evil One* = Satan' (e g Mi PL 9.463, Carlyle H 129)

While in these cases *one* prevents the ambiguity that would arise from a different use of the same word, in other cases it does the same with an accidental phonetic identity, as in *a sound—a sound one, a fair—a fair one.* The latter combination is particularly frequent as a designation for 'woman':

Sh As IV. 1.76 Good morrow, *faire ones* | Merch III. 2.208 I got a promise of *this faire one* heere To haue her loue | Scott Iv 179 I will rescue the unfortunate and afflicted *fair one* | Burns 3.250 this fair one . . every other *fair one.*

10.86. I must be forgiven for calling the attention of the reader to the ease with which my new terminology allows me to deal with some phenomena, which had previously puzzled me a good deal According to the usual terminology I should have had to say something like this *what* is a substantival pronoun, which in *what branch* is made into an adjectival pronoun, in *what one* it must be equally adjectival, while at the same time it is substantivized by *one* Or *top* is a substantive, in *top branch* it has become an adjective or an adjective-equivalent, but in *the top one* this substantive that has become an adjective-equivalent is again substantivized Instead of this I now say *what* is always a pronoun, and *top* is always a substantive, in *what happened?* and *the top fell down* they are principals, but in *what branch, what one, the top branch, the top one* they are adjuncts to the principals *branch* and *one* Cf also 12 4 on 'noun-equivalents', etc

10.87. As already mentioned, substantives indicate more special notions than adjectives It is in accordance with this rule, that *the poor ones* (with its substantive *one*) is more special than *the poor.*

In consequence of this specialization, also, the combination *my dear one* (found, for instance, in Sh Tp I 2 17 Of thee my deere one; thee my daughter | Caine E 214, 253, 265 | Wells Tw 113, etc., etc.) is more expressive of feeling than *my dear,* which is now often used very loosely. (Note also *dearest* as a means of address, without or, rarer, with *one*). Another effect of the same specialization is seen in the predicative, where *a . . one* makes

the expression more definite than it would be if the adjective alone were used, as seen in such a sentence as this "The crowd was, in the main, *a well-dressed one*."

10.9. Important as is thus the rôle of the *one*-construction, it cannot be used in all cases, and in those cases in which it might be used, it is not always used consistently. It is sometimes felt as heavy and clumsy, and this feeling leads to certain expedients or tricks, by which *one* is avoided

10.91. It is a natural consequence of the origin of the prop-word from the numeral that it can replace the names of such things only as can be counted. The following sentence, found in a Swedish philologist's work, is quite un-English: "The material to be taken into consideration is the following one". This explains why *one* is not added in the following sentences, in which the adjectives refer to mass-words or to words of similar import:

I like *red wine* better than *white* | I like bathing in *salt water* better than *in fresh* | Scott A 2.316 in *fair weather* or *foul* | Henley Burns 251 he had known *good luck* and *bad* | Gissing G 200 if the *furniture* is sold, shall I be able to buy *new*? | Macaulay E 4 277 I judge of his *public conduct* by his *private*, which I have found to be void of truth and honour | Dickinson S 15 Our *private business* is intermixed with our *public* | Wilde In 99 the *creative faculty* is higher than the *critical* | Seeley E 129 *the commercial influence* works disguised under *the religious* | Ker E 89 Those ideas can be expressed in *lyric poetry*, not so well in *narrative*

Note also the use of *ditto* as a kind of substitute for *one*, as this could not be used: Di Do 102 a glance at *ancient history*, a wink or two at *modern ditto* —In Scotch *thing* is used to represent mass-words as *one* represents thing-words Aa' ve sum mair peaper, but yt's noa *syc guid-thyng* ('not so good') as that | Wad ye leyke sum black ynk, or sum *bleuw-thyng*?, Murray Sc 198

10.92. There is some disinclination to use *one* after a comparative and especially after a superlative, including such words as *first* and *next* (cf. 9 41 f.), in the first quotation it would, however, be more natural now to add *one*, and in the two following *one* might be added or omitted without much difference

Ml T 686 Is this your crowne? I, didst thou euer see *a fairer*? | Di N 63 the best link between this world and *a better* | Di Do 67 as sweet a child as I could wish to see I could not wish to see *a sweeter* | ib 26 *the elder* took *the younger* by the waist | Ru T 12 it is the duty of the upper classes to set an example to *the lower* | Kidd 66 the weaker peoples disappear before *the stronger* | Doyle NP '95 the inner wall was built of bricks *the outer* I had only caught a glimpse of once or twice | Phillpotts K 65 he began to see *a greater than* Thorndike || Swift J 49 in one of my *former* [= f letters]

The following examples, however, show *one(s)* after a comparative, and also illustrate the inconsistency in its employment

Austen P 207 *the younger ones* out before *the elder* are married! | Di Do 232 I took a very polished farewell of both ladies, which the *elder one* acknowledged in her usual manner, while *the younger*, sitting with her face addressed to the window, bent her head slightly | Conway C 121 it has, at least, not made my wife's lot *a sadder one* [thus always after *a*] | ib 136 she had passed into a state far more pitiable than *her former one*

10.931. Superlatives without *one*

Austen P 207 your younger sisters must be very young? Yes, *my youngest* is not sixteen | ib 42 *the two youngest* repaired to the lodgings | Di Do 292 two houses . . . *the first* is situated | Caine P 27 Some English miss with plenty of this world's goods and none of *the next* | Ward M 140 we may call a man a scoundrel one day and ask him to dinner *the next*.

This is especially frequent when the superlative pre-

cedes a partitive *of*: *the best* of men | *the best* of prose 5.413 | *the oldest* of friends ‖ Austen M 318 it would be *the extreme* of vanity

10.932. Note also the following familiar instances: Cowper L (often) and Doyle M 56 in *my last* [= l. letter] | Bennett W 2 280 You haven't heard *his latest* [= l. joke], I suppose?

In the following quotation *one* is perhaps necessary to show the singular number, besides, without *one* it would be taken in the abstract meaning of 'the end of' (cf to see the last of a person): Norris P 99 it was *the last one* of his unaccountable orders of the early morning

10.94. It must be considered as a survival of the old freedom to use an adjective alone, when the lighter construction without *one* is often preferred to the heavier with *one*, this is frequently the case with short familiar adjectives, especially if the two groups (the one with a substantive, and the one without) are in close proximity. In those quotations that are placed after ‖, it would probably have been more natural to use *one*

First on this side, then on *that* | it goes in at one ear and out at *the other* | the right hand is clean, and so is *the left* | the old world and *the new* | Seeley E 77 Effect of the New World on *the Old* ‖ Mi A 27 God esteems the growth of one vertuous person more then the restraint of *ten vitious* | ib 18 it is but a blank vertue, not *a pure* | Johnson R 53 both the wild beasts and *the tame* retreated to the mountains | Stevenson A 20 it is a little kingdom, but *an independent*

10.95. The construction with *one* is somewhat familiar and colloquial, this is probably the reason why the old construction *the dead* (9.23) has been preserved as being more solemn than *the dead one* would be, cf. on the other hand the familiar tone of such a group as *the little ones*. In such a sentence as Ru U 80 "The righteous man is distinguished from *the unrighteous* by his desire and hope of justice, as the true man from *the false* by his desire and

hope of truth" the expression is decidedly more emphatic than it would be, if *one* were added, but *the unrighteous* and *the false* may be taken as plurals

10.961. Where two adjectives are joined to the same substantive, the old construction *a good man and a true* (cf. ME *thirty men and two*) is now supplanted by *a good and true man* or (rarer) *a good man and a true one* as in·

Sheridan 184 'tis an old observation, and a very true one | Caine M 190 the last of their race should be a strong man and a true one.

10.962. Examples of the older construction, which is still found as a literary archaism to avoid the use of *one*

Ch A 531 *A trewe* swinker *and a good* was he | C 713 *An oold* man *and a poure* | Sh Alls IV. 5 66 *a shrewd* knaue *and an vnhappie* | Ro II 5 56 *an honest* gentleman, *And a courteous, and a kind, and a handsome, And I warrant a vertuous* | H4B V. 3 6 | Cymb IV. 2 369 | extinct in 18th c ? | Scott Iv 485 *a good* fellow *and a merry* | Tennys 295 *A gray old* wolf *and a lean* | 331 All in *a full fair* manor *and a rich* | Swinburne A 82 *many a strong* man *and a great* | Stevenson JHF 181 it was *a fine* house, and *a very rambling*

The same word-order is sometimes used in cases where the second adjective has no article: Sh R2 I 1 123 *Free* speech, *and fearelesse*, I to thee allow | Tennys 28 She has *no loyal* knight *and true* | ib 319 I will seek thee out *Some comfortable* bride *and fair* | Morris E 41 on this *thine ancient* throne *and high* | ib 53,110 | London W 48 it was *a brief* fight *and fierce*.

10.97. Sometimes the use of *one* is evaded by putting the substantive after the second instead of the first of two substantives:

Wordsworth P 3.558 mingling *playful* with *pathetic thoughts* | Lamb E 1 142 In comparing *modern* with *ancient manners* | McCarthy 2 16 in the dealings of *a strong*

with *a weak nation* [= a strong nation with a weak one].—It is better English to say: "this does not admit of *a logical*, but only of *a psychological analysis*" than ". *a logical analysis* . *a ps one*", and "when the logical deviates from the grammatical analysis" than ". . the *l. analysis* . . *the gr. one*"

10.98. This gives us the clue to a frequent phenomenon which has sometimes puzzled foreign grammarians (cf. Poutsma p. 94), namely the use of an isolated genitive case or possessive pronoun as the subject of a sentence, while its principal is placed with the predicative Instead of "Maggie's life was a troublous one" George Eliot (M 1 60) writes "Maggie's was a troublous life." Thus also

Defoe R 2.251 *mine* was *the notion* of a mad rambling boy | Keats 2 65 *His* was harsh *penance* on St. Agnes' Eve | By DJ 12.64 *Eve's* was a trifling *case* to hers | ib 11.32 Juan, *whose* was a delicate *commission* | Di D 35 *Mrs Gummidge's* was rather a fretful *disposition* | Di T 2 185 *Yours* is a long *life* to look back upon | Carlyle R 1 9 *His* was a healthy *mind* | Stevenson M 266 *Yours* has been a tragic *marriage* | Bennett W 2.300 *Hers* had not been a *life* at all.

10.99. It should finally be noted that in some cases *one* is felt to be too vague, and that a more definite substantive is preferred, as in Ru C 9: it might be as advantageous for the nation that the robber should have the spending of the money as that *the person robbed* should have spent it | Stevenson M 29 I stopped like *a man shot* (cf. 10.242)

As non-anaphoric *one* can only be used of persons, *thing* must be used in the corresponding position in other cases: Carlyle F 3 150 *the only thing clear* ('das einzige klare') is that I have again some notion of writing. Cf. 11 33

Chapter XI.
Adjectives as Principals.

11.11. The OE and ME freedom in the use of adjectives (with their adjectival inflexion) as principals has already been mentioned more than once (9.21, 10.94) This freedom has been limited very much in ModE in connexion with the developments mentioned in chapters IX and X, and none of the following constructions would be tolerated in PE.

Ch G 1067 as witnessen thise olde *wyse* [= these old wise men] | ib A 248 *riche* [= rich people] | ib B 112 he noght helpeth *needfulle* [needy people] in hir neede | More U 164 *equall* of age be sette together | Sh Tit II. 1.89 *Better* [= better men] then he haue worne Vulcans badge | Defoe P 20 the out-parishes . . . fuller also of *poor* [= poor people] || Sh R2 II. 1 129 Whom *faire* befall in heauen.

11.12. In this chapter we shall speak of those instances which have not been mentioned in 10.9 and in which it is still possible to use an adjective as a principal without either making it into a substantive or adding the substantival *one*. We have already mentioned that there is often no criterion by which to decide whether we have to do with a substantive or an adjective (9 21). That the words dealt with in this chapter are, however, adjectives, is shown by the possibility of qualifying them by means of an adverb *the really poor* as compared with *the real paupers*, thus also in the neuter. *the relatively unknown and the absolutely unknowable, the supremely beautiful*

11.2. Adjectives very often stand uninflected as principals when they go together in pairs. They have then no article in accordance with a general tendency, which is found in other languages as well, to leave out the usual 'formalities' when words are contrasted in more or less stereotyped combinations.

Examples: Sh Wiv II 1.117 He wooes both *high and low*, both *rich and poor*, both *young and old* | Sh Cor III 1 228 helpe him *young and old* | Thack P 1.60 love makes fools of all of as, *big and little* | Fox 1.149 the wonderful mixture of *high and low* | NP '12 *Old and young* marched side by side || through *thick and thin* | to *right and left* (frequent, e g. Quiller Couch M 215, London W 15; without preposition Gissing B 41 He can hit out right and left)

Thus also when one of the contrasted words is a substantive.

Lecky D 1.19 the relations between *employer and employed* | Hope R 145 the pair, *tracker and tracked*, met nobody | Page J 399 an intellectual game between *hunter and hunted*

Note that Chaucer uses *heigh and logh* in the sg form (B 1142 Deeth, that taketh of heigh and logh his rente), where now *high and low* would be taken as plural In the just mentioned cases also, the substantive is in the sg and not in the pl

Singular.

11.31. The chief living use of the adjective as a principal is with the definite article to denote a whole class (cf. 5 4), either in the sg, in which case it is neuter, or in the pl, in which case it denotes living beings *the known* = 'everything known'; *the poor* = 'all poor people' The former is especially found with abstract notions, and is, consequently, more literary than colloquial In philosophic language, this usage is to a great extent due to imitation of German.

Carlyle R 1.78 separate firmly *the known* from the *unknown*, or *misknown* | ib H 126 in prizing the blessings of the *New*, let us not be unjust to the *Old* | id Fox 2 28 it approaches the *impossible*, this task of mine | Philips L 30 you had better bow to the *impossible* | Scott A 1 150 he is fond of the *mystical* | Benson D 62 in novels there is always a touch of the *heroic* in the faithful friend |

the *supernatural* | Ru Sel 1.65 a deeper feeling for the *beautiful* | Meredith E 309 I must aim at the *highest*, to aim at the *dazzling* and *attractive* | Shaw 1 196 she has to bear with disagreeables and take the *rough* with the *smooth* | Kingsley H 355 *the greater* contains *the less*.

In other cases, the generic notion is not so salient, and we approach the concrete neuter: Norris P 128 he never did or said *the expected, the ordinary* | Caine C 131 photographs, chiefly of *the nude* and *the seminude*.

11.32. Sometimes the adjective approaches the meaning of a quality-noun (in *-ness*, etc), as in Austen M 223 all *the agreeable* of her speculation was over for that hour But English is not so free in that respect as German or Danish: "he sees the *folly* (or *foolishness*) of his action" corresponds to "er sieht *das törichte* seiner tat", "han ser *det tabelige* i sin handling"

11.33. When the neutral notion to be expressed is perfectly concrete (a real singular in the strictest sense), the rule is to add the word *thing* to the adjective

Fox 2 15 *the only thing good* [different from *the only good*] is, that people are made to feel unhappy | Hope D 59 it's the very *latest thing* | *the only thing* (or *the best thing*) to be done | *such a thing* | Di D 194 it might have been *a better and happier thing* for my brother if he had never entered into such a marriage. Cf *something*, etc 17 3

11.34. Only rarely is it in such cases still possible to use the adjective with *the* as a principal, thus especially with *the same* (which may be called a pronoun), *the like* (where it is possible to interpret *the* as the old instrumental: *þȳ*. '[something] like that'), and *the contrary*.

Marlowe F 1307 the *same* I wish to you | Di D 194 nobody can say *the same* of us | Mill in Fox 2 249 Your letter was most welcome, and the *same* may be said of certain other missives | Benson J 176 To get tired and anxious was not the *same* as losing your personality [thus very frequent] | BJo 1.69 did you ever hear *the like*? |

Goldsm 658 Was ever *the like*? | Stevenson JHF 206 I never heard *the like* of this | Garnett T 56 I should naturally have expected *the contrary*.

11.35. With a possessive we have a neutral adjective principal in a few phrases *come to one's own* (cf AV John 1 11) | Thack H 85 when rogues fall out, honest men *come by their own* | *hold one's own* | Wells N 218 [she] came up to London *on her own* [colloquial, also 'on her own hook'] || I shall *do my possible* [= my best]

11.36. We have also neutral adjective principals in a certain number of stereotyped prepositional groups: nothing *out of the common*, cf the rarer construction Caine C 2 she was taller than the common | Stevenson D 166 *in the dead* of night | Hardy L 163 her position was growing painful *in the extreme* | Quiller Couch M 54 the Milo had come *from foreign* (rare = 'from abroad', also ib 90) | *to the full*, e g Ru Sel 1 477 | Caine C 327 the moon was *at the full* | leave London *for good* | *of old* (e g GE A 66) | Kipl J 1 5 sleeping *in the open* | Hope R 103 as soon as the party came *into the open* | Di Do 215 (and frequent) it touches us *to the quick* [orig 'to the living', sc part of the body] | Caine C 19 such talk cut him to the quick | Harraden F 5 to probe her knowledge to its utmost quick | Austen M 200 to listen *in quiet* [rare] | Ridge L 250 we must get married *on the quiet* | Le Gallienne Y 191 my real name is Angelica, but they call me Angel *for short* | Hope Z 42 visit your disreputable cousin *on the sly* | Sh *of a sudden, on the sudden,* and *on a sudden*, Swift T 11 *of a sudden,* now generally *all of a sudden* | *on the whole*

11.37. In slang *hard* stands short for 'hard labour' (as a punishment) Hope D 33 Six months' 'hard' wouldn't be pleasant | Housman J 218 doing a fortnight hard for interfering with the police —*The ready* is used by Fielding 3.431 (large share of the ready) = 'ready money', 'cash'

11.38. A comparative is used as a principal in the phrases *get (have) the better of something* and *a change for the better*

Superlatives in the same way: it is all *for the best* | to *make the best of* (adverse circumstances, Merriman S 64) | if yeu get the best of port [= the best port], port will *get the best of* you [overpower you] | Ru C 55 going to church *in their best* [also common in their Sunday best] | Vachell H 258 "England *at its best*" "And *in its best*" | Hewlett Q 355 she *did her bravest* to be discreet | Macaulay H 2 206 he *breathed his last* a few days after | Mac Carthy 2 213 he had *heard the last* of the protests [not = the last protest] | Kipling J 2.20 when *the last comes to the last* | Caine S 2.85 the *worst* had *come to the worst* | not *in the least* (rarely· not *in the smallest*, once in Stevenson JHF).

In a different way (without any article)· he slept *most* of the time | BJo 1.31 heap *worst* on evil | from *first* to *last* —In *at best*, *at last*, *at least*, *at most* the definite article was originally used, and is still occasionally found, but in the ordinary form of the phrases it has disappeared from purely phonetic reasons: *at the* > *atte* > *at*, see I 2 624 and 6 36.

11.39. The neutral idea is often expressed by means of a relative clause with *what* or (after *much*, *all*) *that* instead of using the adjective as principal: Carlyle R 1 9 he never spoke of *what was disagreeable and past* | Benson J 205 she had shrunk from *what was evil* | GE Mm 233 her sense of *what was becoming* | Hawth 1.485 boys have no reverence for *what is beautiful and holy*, nor pity for *what is sad* | Di Do 104 he retained all *that was strange, and old, and thoughtful* in his character | Stevenson MB 184 bribery lay at the root of much *that was evil* in Japan

These combinations are especially useful when the adjective is supplemented by some subjunct, as in the examples from Dickens and Stevenson, also when a different time (tense) has to be indicated Bronte P 154 a clear morning, animating *what had been depressed*, tinting *what had been pale*

Plural.

11.41. An adjective is very often put in the plural (unchanged) with the definite article to denote the whole class: *the poor* as distinct from *the poor ones* (which singles out some among those just mentioned: not all aristocrats are rich, the poor ones .). Examples: AV Matth. 26 11 ye haue *the poore* alwayes with you | ib 5 3 Blessed are *the poore in spirit* | Morley M 1.153 England is a paradise for *the well-to-do*, a purgatory for *the able*, and a hell for *the poor* | Di D 13 Lazarus was raised up from *the dead* . . the churchyard with *the dead* all lying in their graves | Ru Sel 1.3 In England, *the dead* are dead to purpose | ib 1.20 for the better amusement of *the fair and idle* | ib 1 236 *the redeemed* at the judgment | Grand T XV A help to *the helpless*, a guide to *the rash and straying*, a comfort to *the comfortless*, a reproach to *the reckless*, and a warning to *the wicked* | Johnson R 83 those modes to which *the vulgar* give the names of good and evil | Scott A 1 270 the eras by which *the vulgar* compute time | Caine E 260 *the military* have received their orders

11.42. Thus very frequently *the many*, *the few*: Fox 1.195 James Mill rather hated *the ruling few* than loved *the suffering many* Carlyle calls attention to the sufferings of *the many*.

The absent may be used in this way "the absent are always at fault". But *the present* cannot be so used, partly because it might be mistaken for the sb ('gift'), partly because *present* in its local signification is always placed after its substantive, therefore the contrast to *the absent* is *those present*, *the persons (people) present*, or *everybody present* (15.62) ("Present company always excepted").

11.43. Sometimes the adjective is qualified by some addition Mered E 192 with his poor income helping *the poorer than himself* ['helping those poorer than himself' would be more natural] | Mrs Browning A 246 Fame's smallest trump Is a great ear-trumpet for *the deaf as posts*

11.44. Instead of the definite article we may have some other pronoun (in natural PE hardly any other than possessive): AV Luke 6.20 Blessed be *yee poore* (20th C. Tr Happy are you who are poor) || Bacon A 5 14 both for *our whole*, and for *our sick*, thus also 6 14, 6.30 | Yonge G 413 she went about among the other poor, teaching them the care of *their sick* | Masefield C 357 He reproached himself for having neglected *his wounded* | Kipl J 2.93 they do not kill *their weaker* for food, but for sport | Dickinson C 13 *Your poor, your drunk, your incompetent, your sick, your aged,* ride you like a nightmare || Ru U 159 *these poor* are of a race essentially different from ours

Thus also *like* after a possessive pronoun Thack S 155 they and *their like* are so utterly mean | Shaw 1 132 any man who has learnt how to treat women from you and *your like* —Here *the likes of them, of you* (cf 9 38) is by some considered as verging on vulgar language.

11.45. Sometimes we have a numeral or an indefinite adjective of number before the adjective. Sh H 5 IV. 1 315 *Fiue hunared poore* I haue in yeerely pay | Bacon A 4 30 you have *many sick* amongst you | Caine C 21 we have *no poor* in my parish.—This, however, is now generally avoided, and one says *three kind people, many healthy people*, etc

While *poor* cannot stand by itself = 'poor people', the addition of *idle*, etc, makes it possible in Ru C 27 there are *idle poor*, and *idle rich*, and there are *busy poor*, and *busy rich*

11.51. A special class consists of words denoting nationalities

Adjectives in *-sh* are used in the plural with the definite article to denote the whole nation *the English, the British, the Irish, the Welsh, the Cornish* (Fox 1 36), *the French* (ib 1 155 *the French* care most for persons, *the English* for things), *the Dutch* Thus also *the Manx* —Fox 2.195 the Swiss have their mountains, *the French* their Paris, *the English* their home Happy English!

The Spanish is perhaps tending to replace *the Spaniards* Seeley E 45 Central and South America fell principally to the Spanish and Portuguese.—Instead of *the Scotch* the form *the Scots* is often used; this may be either the pl of the sb *Scot* or the adj in its northern form, in this sense *the Scottish* is rare.

A whole class, though not the whole nation, is denoted in the same way: Swift J 187 All *the Irish in town* were there | Shelley Pr 277 the manners of *the rich English* are wholly unsupportable.

11.52. Instead of the definite article we may have another pronoun: Sh Alls II 1.20 *our French* [comprehensive of the whole nation] | John II 1 322 *our* lusty *English* || Tennys L 3 31 *We English* and Americans should all be brothers | Carlyle G 123 *We English*, especially *we Scotch*, love Burns more than any other poet | Mered H 21 none of *you English* have music in your smiles | Stevenson Dy 276 I thought *you English* like what you call a joke | Sh John II 1 214 *these French* | ib 261 all *these English* | Fox 1.100 I won't receive any of *these* rascally *English* | Wells F 162 one of *these British*.

11.53. Sometimes the adjective is used without any defining word: Sh R2 IV. 1 137 The blood of *English* shall manure the ground | Sh John V. 5 3 when *English* measure backward their owne ground | Swift J 55 we have a cargo of *Irish* coming to London | By DJ 6.34 like *Irish* at a fair | Mered T 85 the usual over-supply of touring *English* of both sexes This is now felt to be distinctly unnatural

11.54. The use of these adjectives after numerals and similar adjectives is not quite natural nowadays Fox 1 42 there are *200 English* in her king's service | ib 1 123 an order to take up all *the thirty or forty English* then in Rome | Roosevelt A 295 *six thousand British* | Farquhar B 326 *some English* that I know, are not averse | Gibbon M 216 with *several English* | Ward E 62 a good

many other English | NP '05 *other representative British* and Americans.

11.55. When individual members of the nation are designed, the plural in *-men* or *people* is now nearly always used *these two Englishmen* | all *those French people* | Ward M 127 We have had a nasty scene in the house [of Parliament] with *the Irishmen* | *three or four Manxmen.*

11.56. After *we* and *you* the plural *Englishmen*, etc., can also be used for the whole nation More U 51 *yow Englishe men* | Mi Pr 301 *We Englishmen* | Fielding T 2 187 the manly instinct of sport which is the strenght of *us Englishmen* | Conway C 217 *We Englishmen* can neither understand nor sympathize with a man of his type ! Doyle NP '95 *you Frenchmen* are living on a powder magazine. (Some people would evade the difficulty by saying *you in France*).

More U 83 and 84 uses *the englishmen* in speaking of the whole nation Shakespeare uses once *the Englishmen* and 10 times *the Frenchmen* of the whole nation, but only in the first and second parts of Henry VI, for which Shakespeare is hardly responsible, elsewhere he says *the English, the French*

11.57. Adjectives of nationality in *-ese* as well as *Swiss* are used in the same way in the plural to denote the whole nation, but as they have no plural corresponding to *Englishmen*, etc , the same form is also used in speaking of individuals· *the Andamanese* | *the Cingalese* (Lang C 16) | *the Genoese* | Review of R Apr '06 385 Few strangers, except some *Japanese*, have ventured near the territory | *the Maltese* | Ru P 1 168 the higher *Milanese* were happy | *the Piedmontese* | Defoe R 343 two young *Portuguese* gentlemen . the two Portuguese | Swift 3.376 the honest Portugueze were amazed | Mered H 247 those dear Portuguese | Norris O 458 many small farmers, ignorant Portuguese and foreigners

A Portuguese is found Defoe R 2 25; now it seems somehow to be avoided, and one says rather *a Portuguese man*

Chinese belongs to this class, though there is the alternative sb *Chinaman*, which in the sg is much more common; in the plural *Chinamen* and *Chinese* are used indiscriminately. Haggard S 79 as yellow as a Chinese | NP '06 we can refuse to engage any more Chinese.

11.58. All other names of nationalities take a plural in *-s* both when denoting the whole nation and individuals *Greeks*, *Germans*, *Italians*, *Russians*, *Turks*, etc. Sweet S 83 Belgians, Swiss, Dutchmen, and Danes. In some of these, it will be noted, the adjective is different from the sb (*Turk Turkish* | *Dane Danish* | *Spaniard Spanish*), in others they have the same form (thus all in *-an*)

Names of uncivilized peoples are often used unchanged in the plural the *Eskimo*, *Bateke*, *Batungo* (all from Westermarck M)

Half-pronominal Adjectives.

11.61. While ordinary adjectives can thus only stand alone as principals with considerable restrictions, there is much greater freedom to use in this way quantitative adjectives and adjectives which have points of similarity with pronouns (cf the use of *some*, *all*, *both*, etc ch. XVII).

Numerals: *seven* of them were unmarried, and only *two* were married

much: *much* in that book was obscure

many: Sh Sonn 10 3 thou art belou'd of *many*

more (sg) I shall have *more* to tell you when we get back | Mi PL 5 679 more in this place To utter is not safe.

more (pl). there are *more* of them behind | there are *more* than one who know of it —Outside of these combinations with *of* and *than* generally *more people*

most (sg): *most* of this is nonsense Only before *of*.

most (pl) Stevenson M 127 I am worse than *most*

(generally: most people) | Ritchie M 19 Anne, who seemed to know *most* of the people

little: *little* was said that evening

less *less* is known about Kyd than about Shakespeare.

least seems only used in this way in the proverb "*Least* said, soonest mended".

few. *few* had seen him

certain (pl) only before *of*: Carlyle in Tenn L 1.247 I have read *certain* of them [Tennyson's poems] over again | Gissing G 430 I shall throw overboard *certain* of my ambitions | ib R XI *Certain* of his reminiscences

enough (sg): he had *enough* to live on. In the same way also *sufficient* and sometimes *ample*

enough (pl) rare she will have *enough* to admire her

11.62. *such*: What are *such* as he to me? | Mi SA 1631 from *such* as nearer stood | Goldsm 659 we don't meet many *such*

the former, *the latter* (sg): frequently of persons, rarer as a neuter Pinero S 22 he married her and took her away, *the latter* greatly to my relief Cf the genitive 9 542.

the former, *the latter* (pl) rare: Hope D 61 She thinks no evil of the most attractive of women, and has a smile for the most unattractive of men *The former* may constantly be seen in her house—and *the latter* as often as many people would think desirable | Doyle S 2.10 | Haggard S 125 the flowers and trees, *the latter* of which grew singly —In the pl often *these latter* Mac Carthy 2 328 the Conservatives the professing Liberals . *These latter* would accept it

Chapter XII.

Relations between Adjunct and Principal.

12.11. The relation between an adjunct (attributive adjective) and its principal (generally a substantive) is not always so easy and simple as in *a young lady*. Here we may substitute *a lady who is young* the adjective thus may without any change in the meaning of the whole be made into a predicative after (a relative pronoun +) *is* Though this is not possible in the same way in the case of such pronominal and numeral adjectives as *this* in *this lady*, *any* in *any lady*, or *two* in *two ladies*, yet we feel that all these adjectives stand in the same relation, which we may call the direct relation, to the principal *lady* (or *ladies*)

12.12. It is different when we come to such a combination as *an early riser*, which it is quite impossible to turn into *a riser who is early* Here the adjunct is a shifted subjunct of the verb contained in the substantive *riser* : *he rises* (vb) *early* (adv) = *he is an early* (adj) *riser* (sb). In the same way the adjunct in *perfect simplicity* is a shifted subjunct of the adjective contained in the substantive *simplicity*, cf *perfectly simple* We may call these *shifted subjunct-adjuncts*

12.13. A third group contains those cases in which the adjunct qualifies only the beginning of the following word, as in *the Pacific Islanders*, derived from *the Pacific Islands*, or in *a public schoolboy*, cf *a public school*.

12.14. Fourthly we have such cases as *a sick room*, meaning not a room that is sick, but a room that has something to do with the sick, a room for the sick We may call them compositional adjuncts, because the adjective and the substantive form a kind of compound, cp Danish *et sygeværelse*, G *ein krankenzimmer*, where the form is different from what it would be if it were a direct adjunct: *et sygt værelse*, *ein krankes zimmer*

12.15. This cannot be sharply divided from a fifth class, "Other indirect adjuncts", comprising among others such combinations as *all his born days, mid-ocean,* and *half this amount.*

12.16. The freedom with which adjectives are joined to substantives in English, and especially the great extension of the third and fourth classes, are evidently due to the want of inflexion in the adjectives, which therefore are in this respect like a substantival first-part of a compound. In such a language as German or Latin the adjective would have one definite ending indicating more or less distinctly gender, number, and case, but all of these are left indefinite in English combinations like a *heavy* sleeper, the *dirty* clothes-basket, a *public* schoolboy, a *practical* joker, etc. A Latin speaker in analogous cases would hesitate where to refer the adjective, and therefore would refrain from such combinations. That there is a legitimate desire to frame them, is obvious since in German in spite of the incongruity of grammar we meet now and then with *eine reitende artilleriekaserne, der silberne kreuzbund,* etc But while an Englishman sees little difficulty with *an old and new bookseller,* a German who would feel inclined to render the same idea would at once be confronted with the difficulty of inflexion, for if he said *ein alter und neuer buchhändler,* the ending *-er* in the adjectives would connect them too intimately with the *-händler,* and there is no inflexion available to connect them with *buch-*. Such occasional formations as *ein ausgestopfter tierhändler, ein wohlriechender wasserfabrikant,* are naturally ridiculed and avoided by careful writers, though Goethe has "ein *wilder schweins*kopf" and "O sah'st du, *voller mondens*chein" and Heine (Werke, Volksausg II 19) "Beide schwatzten jetzt das gewöhnliche geschwatz von der grossen verschworung gegen thron und altar . und reichten sich mehrmals die *heiligen allianz*hande" and "ein ehemaliger *baumwollener nachtmützen*fabrikant" Sometimes also such combinations as *ein armesundergesicht* or

das bleiche armsündergesicht are resorted to, but they are felt to be clumsy and unnatural, and the absence of adjective inflexion is thus seen to be a real advantage in the structure of the English language Danish analogous instances as well as references to the literature on the subject may be found in my paper in *Dania* I 261 ff

Direct Adjuncts

12.17. This group calls for very few remarks The purpose for which the adjunct is added is generally that of specifying the principal *this man, young men, the tallest man,* etc *A vigorous attempt* is more specific than *(an) attempt* by itself. This is also the case when an adjunct is added to a proper name, though this in itself is highly specialized: *young Burns* means either a different person from *old Burns*, or if applied to the one individual shown from the situation or context, it means that man in his youth or with some emphasis laid on the fact of his being still young *Immortal Shakespeare* does not mean a different individual from *Shakespeare* but it specifies one side of the man designed by the name In other cases the adjunct does not serve to specify in the proper sense of that word, but to indicate how many individuals of the class are included *two men, many men, all men, any man, one man,* also *a man* (quantitative adjuncts) It is of course possible to join both kinds of adjuncts to the same substantive. *two young men, these two men,* etc (15 1).

Shifted Subjunct-Adjuncts

12.21. First we take instances in which the adjective used as adjunct has the same form as the adverb that would be used with the verb or adjective contained in the substantive

Sh Ro 546 the *longer liuer* (= he who lives longer, cp. R3 III 4.24 I haue been long a sleeper) | Sh H5 IV 1 6 our bad neighbour makes vs *early stirrers* | Sh Shr IV.

2.11 *Quick proceeders*, marry | Ru Sel 1 119 the *harder workers* | Thack P 2 118 one of the *hardest livers* and *hardest readers* of his time at Oxbridge | Collingwood R 272 half the seats taken by *earlier comers* | Bennett A 203 *late comers* | Austen M 408 he was always guided by the *last speaker* | Wells U 143 *first offenders* | Wells T 71 the *late-comer's* room || sold to the *highest bidder* (cf French, Augier, Les Effrontés (III 302) on livre cette arme au plus offrant) || Bacon Ess 45 Boldnesse is an *ill keeper* of promise | Ru C 47 borrowers are nearly always *ill spenders* | Hawth 1 493 *long travellers*, before whom lay a hundred miles of railroad

In the following quotation *Spanish talkers* is not = 'Spaniards talking', but = (Englishmen) able to talk Spanish Masefield C 228 He's the only one who really knows Spanish . But you could get Spanish talkers here . you sailed from London without a Spanish talker

With other endings in the substantive than *-er*

Mered E 447 he is a *hard student* (= studies hard) | Ellis EEP V. 54 a specimen written on the spot by a *long resident* || Tenn 135 his *long wooing* her

12.221. Next we have those cases in which the adverb would have had the ending *-ly*, in some of the quotations the adjective would also be possible with a substantive that contains no verb (*so virtuous a man*, etc.), in others the meaning is obviously different:

Ch B 1024 So *vertuous a lyvere* | More U 284 *vicious liuers* | ib 191 so *earnest and paynefull a follower* of vertue | Sh Cy III. 3 9 *prouder liuers* | Sh Macb I 3.70 you *imperfect speakers* | Sh Alls III 6 11 an *infinite and endlesse liar*, an *hourely promise-breaker* | Sh Err II 2.89 the *plainer dealer* | Franklin 45 I never knew a *prettier talker* | Di D 226 Mrs. Strong was a very *pretty singer* [= sang very prettily] as I knew, who often heard her singing by herself | Doyle B 158 we were both *fair runners* | Austen E 55 I am a very *slow walker* | ib 155 her aunt

was such an *eternal talker* | Brontë P 70 *an incessant and indiscreet talker* | Thack N 102 *light sleepers* | Di Do 222 I'm a *heavy sleeper* at first, and a *light one* towards morning | Doyle G 60 a very *high and strong snorer* | Ru F 89 being on the whole *infinite gainers* | a *strict observer* of the rules of etiquette | Darwin L 1 224 he was a *dreadful sufferer* from sea-sickness (not = dreadful man who suffered . .) | Trollope D 1 258 become *deep sufferers* | ib 1.182 a *probable winner* of the Derby | ib 1 276 a *fluent speaker* | GE A 10 They're *cur'ous talkers* i' this country | Bennett W 2 57 a *glib liar* | Hewlett Q 495 you and I have been *open dealers* with each other | Stevenson JHF 33 a *close observer* | Spect 88 an *universal encourager* of liberal arts | NP '12 a *wide traveller* | Hankin 3 82 I should be your *eternal debtor* | Spencer E 2.406 the *habitual sufferer* | Stevenson V 64 the *habitual liar* | Escott E 417 *repeated offenders* (Shaw P 230 they are *habitual thieves and murderers*) | Merriman V 48 she is an *impressive dresser* when she tries

A *flat denial* of her words

Defoe R 2 25 an *exceeding difficulty*

12.222. The word *stranger* is grammatically a substantive, but it signifies very much the same thing as an adjective and therefore often has an adverbial adjunct; *a perfect stranger* is not a stranger who is perfect, but one who is quite a stranger (cf. *a perfect mystery*).

Sterne 11 you and I are in a manner *perfect strangers* to each other | Fielding T 2.296 she was an *entire stranger* in that part of the world | Di Do 42 *Entire strangers* to his person had lifted his yellow cap off his head | Carlyle S 121 they were the *entirest strangers* | Stevenson C 57 *a comparative stranger* | Wells T 78 your kindness to a *total stranger*

In the same way *fool* and other substantives are treated in Di D 110 your are a *positive fool* sometimes | Ward R 280 a *precious fool* | Hope D 29 Alice was a *positive fright* | Wilde Im 11 a *dreadful invalid* | Hope D 15

her *particular friend* | NP '99 to buy a few *absolute necessaries.*

12.23. When the same substantive has one direct and one shifted adjunct, the latter must be placed nearest to the sb as in Stevenson JHF an ordinary *secret sinner* | Coleridge B 30 a young and *rapid writer* (= a young man who writes rapidly).

The adjunct may of course have a subjunct as in Ru P 1 79 my father was an *absolutely beautiful reader* of the best poetry

12.241. It is notable that adjectives indicating size (*great, small*, etc) are used as shifted equivalents of adverbs of degree (*much, little*, etc). *A great admirer of Tennyson*, cf. F *un grand admirateur de T.* Thus in: More U 51 your shepe, that were wont to be so *smal eaters*, now be become so *great deuowerers* | Sh Tw I 3 90 I am a *great eater* of beefe | Bunyan G 12 I had been a *great and grievous sinner* | Sheridan 99 I am the *greatest sufferer* | Thack S 13 he was an *enormous eater* | Ru P 1 156 he was one of the *smallest and rarest eaters* | Shaw D *50 *large and constant consumers* of pâté de foie gras

Cf *great* in *great friends* (Wilde L 158 we were *immense* friends) and *small* in Raleigh Sh 31 Mary Arden was a *small heiress* (hardly natural).

Much as rare as in Lamb E 2 VII Your long and *much talkers* hated him.

12.242. Related instances are Defoe R 2.243 I was *a considerable owner* of the ship (also 244) | Bennett W 1 295 he had been *a considerable owner* of property | Fielding 3 446 Bagshot being *a considerable winner* | Beaconsf L 219 the Cardinal was *an entire believer* in female influence, and *a considerable believer* in his influence over females | Lang C 16 *strong believers* in the mystic tree-felling || Hamerton F 2 15 a large class of *total abstainers* between meals || Defoe R 83 I was as yet but a *sorry workman* || Shelley L 708 he is *an excessive bore*

Cp., on the other hand, Stevenson M 280 we are *immensely gainers*—where we have a subjunct to the verb

12.243. The adjective *utter* is never used except as a shifted adjunct corresponding to the adverb *utterly* Shakespeare has it in three places: *utter darkness*, the *utter loss* of all the realm, to thy foul disgrace and *utter ruin* of the house of York (H4A III. 3.42, H6A V. 4.112, H6C I.1.254).

Swift T 45 his *utter detestation* of it | Macaulay E 4.15 all rights were in a state of *utter uncertainty* | Smedley F I. 216 this *utter impossibility* | Swinburne L 207 your utter disregard of discipline | Ru Sel 1 183 all other laws or limits he sets at *utter defiance* (= sets utterly at d) | Thack P 3.357 an *utter scoundrel*

Also *most utter*: Bale T 707 to hys *most vtter dampnacyon* | Haggard S 93 with a look of the *most utter tenderness* that I ever saw | Habberton Hel B 215 with the *most utter unconcern* This shows, by the way, that *utter* is no longer a comparative

Utmost has somewhat of the same character, being often found in combinations like *with the utmost care* = "very carefully indeed"

12.25. The adjective is a shifted subjunct of the adjective contained in an abstract substantive, thus especially often after *with*, because by this means the crowding of two adverbs in *-ly* is conveniently avoided: *with perfect ease*, *with absolute freedom*, *with approximate accuracy* is better than the clumsy expressions *perfectly* (sub-subjunct) *easily*, *absolutely freely*, *approximately accurately*.

Examples Di D 204 she drove on *with perfect indifference* | Thack P 255 He went into a second examination, and passed *with perfect ease* | Stevenson T the smoke, to which we owed *our comparative safety* | Wells M 50 the *entire impracticability* of Mr Galton's two suggestions Smedley F 2.40 such an *entire forgetfulness* of self | Austen P 188 I cannot say that I regret *my comparative insign-*

fiance | Ridge G 45 at the thought of their *comparative unimportance* || *a positive impossibility.*

12.261. Sometimes *comparative* and *apparent* are used as adjuncts though logically we should rather expect a subjunct to the adjective *with little comparative loss* instead of *with comparatively little loss* Peacock S 36 they had *little comparative success* | McCarthy 2 217 allegations of *slight comparative importance* || Shaw D 39 neither P's years nor B's majesty have the *smallest apparent effect* on him | McCarthy 2.305 he had at one time *no apparent chance* of succeeding

12.262. Similarly in the following examples, what would logically be the subjunct of a verb (expressed or unexpressed) is joined in the form of an adjective to some substantive: Doyle S 6.148 she had the *exact physical* [= had exactly the physical] *characteristics* which H had divined | London A 67 when I was fourteen I was Dad's *actual housekeeper* | Kipl S 61 you are thieves—*regular burglars* [cp in a different sense *regular verbs*] | Doyle S 6 197 we could dimly see the *occasional figure* of an early workman as he passed us | Roberts M 159 Seen nude, he had the figure of *a possible athlete* | Shaw D 193 treat every death as a *possible* and, under our present system, a *probable murder* | Bennett W 1 230 Cyril *the theoretic cypher* (= who theoretically was) | Doyle S 6 145 What your motives are, or *what exact part* you play in this strange business, I am not able to say | Lane Cooper, Function of Leader (1912) 1 the *precise service* which the scholar renders to the State is by no means evident

Cf *no* = 'not a' (16 74 f) and *such* in Hope D 9 I don't call her *such a bad-looking* girl [= so bad-looking] 16 46.

12.271. When no adjective form is available, the adverb itself may be used as an adjunct to the substantive, the verbal or adjectival idea of which it qualifies. Thus *often* (cf similar Danish instances, Dania I 273 f.):

More U 199 the *ofte use* myghte make the werye

therof | Sh As IV 1.19 my *often rumination* | AV 1 Timothy V 23 thine *often infirmities* | Mi SA 382 by *oft experience* | Locke Educ sect 66 and see, by *often trials,* what turn they take | Tenn 319 pang of wrench'd or broken limb —an *often chance* in these brain-stunning shocks | Carlyle S 28 is the manliest man the greatest and *oftenest laugher?*

There is an interesting example in Beaumont 4 323, which shows the close relation between the substantive in *-er* and the verb She is no *often speaker,* But when she *does,* she speaks well —In the NED *oft* and *often* here are reckoned as adjectives "very common in 16th and 17 th c , but rare after 1688"

Seldom· NED says, "Obs [as adj] exc occas with agent-n or noun of action Lamb (q) *Seldom-readers* are slow readers | NP 91 (q) to the *seldom speakers*

Soon is not used in itself as an adjective, yet we have the superlative Sh H5 III 6 120 the *soonest winner* | Sh Ant III. 4 27 make your *soonest hast*

12.272. *Almost* (cf Cicero pro Lig § 36 in hac prope æqualitate fratrum, French cette presque certitude, la presque identite, une presqu'île)· Austen S 311 the *almost impossibility* of their being already come | Thack V 304 an *almost reconciliation* | Thack P 3. 155 the *almost terror* with which she saw the black-veiled nuns | Lang T 20 thirty years had turned the *almost Jacobin* into an *almost Jacobite* | Orr Handb to Browning 317 the *almost certainty* of death

Thus also sometimes even where the verbal or adjectival character of the substantive is not clear Darwin Life 1.336 that grand subject, that *almost keystone* of the laws of creation | Saintsbury Eliz Lit 171 the *almost tragedy* of Hero | Di T 2 135 the pretty *almost-child's* head

All-but Carlyle SR 64 the *all-but Omnipotence* of early culture and nurture | Gissing R 198 the *all but certainty*

12.273. *Thorough* (which is originally an adverb, a bye-form of *through,* see I. 5 41) is now, in combinations

like *his thorough knowledge, thorough honesty, a thorough gentleman* (Beaconsf L 478), *thorough respecters of themselves* (Stevenson JHF 18) etc., felt as a real adjective (cf Thackeray S 42 a *most thorough* Snob), and a new adverb is formed in *-ly* he knows it *thoroughly*

12.274. *Less* in Byron's (Ch Har II. 66, 592) "When *less barbarians* would have cheered him less" may formally be either an adjective or an adverb, cf Ruskin F 152 as he regards the *less or more capacity*

12.28. The use of adverbs and adjectives with the verbal substantive in *-ing* offers some peculiarities, which will be treated elsewhere Dickens writes (M 347) Mark actually held him to prevent his *interference foolishly*, until his temporary heat was past. Here *interference* is constructed like *interfering*, *interference foolish* would naturally be an impossible word-order and *his foolish interference* would imply a more definite idea than is reconcilable with *prevent* (as if the adj + subst were preceded by the definite article) —Ruskin S 130 "reading *doubtfully moral* novels" is interesting, because it is = reading novels of doubtful moral

12.29. In the following quotation the adjective *unhanged* is logically a predicative connected with the subject of the verb *continue* which is contained in the substantive: Tarkington Guest of Quesnay 156 another, whose *continuance unhanged* is every hour more miraculous. Cf also Bennett A 12 her *continuance in activity* was a notable illustration of the dominion of mind over matter ! Hope In 44 *Life alone* at twenty-six is—lonely | Lamb E 2.178 a process comparable to *flaying alive* | Haggard S 214 the *burial alive* of the victims | Lang T 155 his fight, unarmed, in Guinevere's chamber, against the felon knights [Note here the commas] Cf 15 7.

Partial Adjuncts

12.3. The phenomenon that an adjective qualifies not the whole of the substantive it precedes, but only

the former part of it, is pretty frequent with derivatives and compounds. We take derivatives first.

12.311. The combination *sound sleeper* besides being an adjective + a substantive can also be analyzed as a derivative in *-er* from the combination *sound sleep*. Such derivatives are not unfrequent, a clear instance is *a Quarterly Reviewer*, which could not be analyzed as a reviewer who is quarterly, it is written as above in Henderson's Scotch Literature 361, but Huxley in Darwin's Life 2.184 writes *the 'Quarterly' reviewer* and thus takes *reviewer* more as an independent word. Further *the first-nighters* = those who go to "first-nights" at theatres. There is no such word as *nighter*.

12.312. In the following examples, which are arranged according to the endings, it will be seen that the manner of writing is very inconsistent.

NP '98 the London *cheap tripper* | Doyle S 5.107 driven out of our own house by a *practical joker* | Sheridan 284 a *close prisoner* | Caine E 258 the War Office had called up the *old-timers* of two successive years | a *natural philosopher* | Westermarck Marriage 275 the *Pacific Islanders* | McCarthy 2 121 the *Irish Home rulers* [= those in favour of Irish home rule, not necessarily Irishmen themselves | NP 09 Syndicate of *white slavers* | NP '06 the *Free Fooders* | NP '06 the *Free Staters* (= inhabitants of the Orange Free State) | *New Englanders* | the *Little Englanders* —defined by Chamberlain, see Review of Reviews Febr 1899 p 112 "the Little Englander is a man who honestly believes that the expansion of this country carries with it obligations which are out of proportion to its advantages" | book title 1905 "The Awful Dangers which surround all smokers and *intoxicating drinkers*"—a rather awkward formation from *intoxicating drink* | Peacock S 39 *a vegetable feeder*.

NP 1909 a *wireless operator*.

Escott E 418 the *Grand Jurors* [= members of the Grand Jury] | Zangwill G 212 [the Home Secretary]. I've

never been a *criminal lawyer* | Spencer A 1.475 he had himself been a *nervous sufferer*.

Matthews Amer Fut 278 a meeting packt with *Southern sympathizers* [= who sympathized with the South in the Civil War] | Shaw D 16 *general practitioners*.

Fox 2 72 into *young-ladylike* order

NP *white slavery* (= trade in 'white slaves') | Mered E 282 the *great-gunnery* talk at table

Ward E 2 44 in some sort of *elder-brotherly* fashion | Kipl M 188 it suited him to talk *special-correspondently* | By DJ 1 211 [magazines] Daily, or monthly, or *three monthly* (cf 7 5)

Di Do 29 almost with an air of *joint proprietorship* | Thack V 531 she resumed her *fine-ladyship* | ib 473 the stage of *old-fellow-hood* | Egerton K 99 vanished scenes of *small boyhood* | Thack S 128 swell into bloated *old-bachelorhood* | Harraden D 27 from girlhood into *young womanhood*

Spectator 113 *Natural historians* | Wilde In 164 a *Royal Academician* | Steadman Oxf 213 *Indian Civilians* (= candidates for the Indian civil service) | NP '09 A Remarkable *Civil Servant* The Civil Service has suffered a great loss

NP '11 as noisy as a *far Western* bar-room.

Pinero B 10 you needn't be quite so *newly-married-womanish* with *me*

Ballantyne First 156 mistakes—geographical, topographical, *natural-historical*, and otherwise | Carpenter C 70 a *fourth-dimensional* mediation | London War of Classes 183 the energy of the British merchant is being equalled by *other nationals* [= people belonging to other nations]

Hawthorne Sn 21 an exceedingly *common-sensible* way of looking at matters, cf NED with other quotations, also for *common-sensical*

Ward E 437 a piece of her *fine-ladyism* | Stevenson MP 88 *Free Churchism* | Caine C 287 *solitary old maidism* | GE A 31 Nature, that great *tragic dramatist* | Fox 1 94 an

admirable *fossil geologist* | Bellamy L 20 the *small capitalist* | Shaw J 7 a *Local Optionist* | a *political economist* | a *yellow journalist* | Sweet OET *7 the well known *low Latinist*, Mijnheer Hessels | White N 40 a *new religionist* (? Swift T 12 a *good sizeable* volume)

a *blank versifier* (NED 1746).

Darwin Desc 572 *female infanticide* (also Wells A 94 and U 181, frequent in Westermarck M)

From *general paralysis* is abstracted *the general paralytics* (e g Ellis Man 399) and from *painless dentistry* similarly *a painless dentist*, a man in San Francisco advertises himself as Painless Anderson

In Hardy L 49 "she had become *the Reverend Mrs.* Cope" the adjective *Reverend* really qualifies the "Mr" which is latent in "Mrs" (cf Mrs *John* Cope = the wife of Mr. John Cope)

A similar phenomenon with a post adjunct is found in Tenn 452 *knighthood-errant* [= *knight-errantry*]

12.313. The same substantive may have two adjuncts of different order, but the one belonging only to the first part of it must precede it immediately as in London A 93 in *approved, returned-Queenslander style*

12.314. With the use of *small cordiality* (meaning that she was *little*, i e not, *cordial*) cf the above remarks (12 241) on *great*, etc · Ward M 201 Mary greeted him with an evident coldness In spite of her *small cordiality*

12.321. With compound substantives we have similar phenomena No difficulty is presented if the adjective belongs to the whole compound (or, as we may say, to the last element of the compound as modified by the first), as in *an old clergyman, a young bookseller, a big steamboat*, etc But in other cases the adjective belongs to the first element, or, what amounts to the same thing, the first element of the compound consists of an adjective + a substantive In some cases stress shows clearly where the adjective belongs, as in *everyday speech* with half-stress on *day*, or (as Sweet points out, Transact

Philol. Soc. 6 June 1879) in *dead letter office* with full stress on *letter*, half-stress on *dead*; if *dead* qualified *office*, it would have had full stress. (Cf on unity-stress I 5.311 and 312) But in many cases of free composition, especially with long words, there is no such audible sign of the manner of composition The usual spelling will sometimes, but not always indicate it, as appears from the following examples Thackeray (P 2 2) writes "a Long Vacation tour" and thus by the artifice of a capital letter shows that *Long* qualifies *Vacation* and not *tour*; but in many cases nothing save the natural meaning to be attributed to the combination shows the grammatical relation

12.322. The following examples are loosely arranged according to the firmness of connexion; beginning with those instances in which the adjective and the first-word are closely connected, and ending with those in which the tie is stronger between the two component substantives, and in which accordingly the adjective seems to have been added to a ready-made whole No fixed boundaries are found, and in such instances as *a public schoolboy* (Wells N 67) the connexion is equally firm on both sides

Everyday speech | Beaconsf L 243 he was a *high churchman* | ib 244 I am a *free churchman* | Thack P 1 199 the news formed the subject of talk at *high-church, low-church*, and *no-church* tables | Caine C 301 *High Churchmen, Low Churchmen*, and *No Churchmen* | Carlyle S 197 two *full-length* mirrors | Thack P 1.289 an old *half-pay* officer | every system of *one-man* rule | Di Do 54 the *powdered-head* and pig-tail period | Twain Missis 112 *old-time* steamboats | Wells A 162 *long distance* electrical typesetting | ib 21 the *first class long-distance* passenger | Vachell H 39 That bruise over your eye has taken off your *painted-doll* look | Doyle S 6.24 our *black-silk* face-coverings | Macdonnell F 312 confidence in the *good-citizen* qualities of his countrymen.

Black F 43 an *all-night* club | Doyle S 1.258 an *all-night* sitting | Darwin Life 1 301 for my *some-day* work to be so called.

Stevenson JHF 38 an incessant and *old-world* kindness of disposition (The *and* shows that *old-world* is almost an independent adjective, cf. 13 31)

Bentham (quoted NED) The daily, more than the *every other day*, papers.

Holmes A 218 she leaves her *virtuous-indignation* countenance | Shaw D *50 *tame stag* hunters | ib *58 the tame-stag-hunter | Hughes T 2 208 the *elder brother* sort of state | Malory 128 he found hym selfe by a *depe welle* syde

a *mutual admiration* society | Archer A 135 the kernel of the matter lay in the *fugitive slave* question | Thack P 1 126 *fine-gentleman* airs | Hughes T 1 68 our coachman is a *cold beef* man [= prefers cold beef] | ib 69 the *bottled beer* corks

Franklin A 52 a *pale ale*house | Spectator 171 a *Common-prayer* Book (now often spelt a common Prayer-book) | a *ready-made boot* shop | *Old and New Bookseller* | *New and Second-hand Bookseller* | Ward D 1.251 the *old book*stalls | Arnold Poems 1 135 the *golden mace*-bearer | an average *private school*boy | Poe S 109 in moderate weather the fastest sailer her qualities, however, as a *rough sea*-boat were not so good | Fowler, Professor's Children 3 the *dirty clothes*-basket | Wells M 77 the *infantile death* rate | Lang T 172 a first rate *historical play*wright | *old clothes*men

A considerable shareholder (Thack H 85) must be placed with the use of *great* above 12 241

There is a peculiar expression in Swift 3 240 *his opposite party-man* (= the man of the party opposite to him)

12.323. It will be seen that mistakes in most cases are out of the question, even in such cases as *the dirty clothes-basket*, where *dirty* will immediately be referred to *clothes*, though there is nothing intrinsically impossible in the connexion of the two ideas *dirty* and

basket Not even when there are two adjuncts, one belonging to the first-word, and the other to the whole compound, as in some of the quotations, or in Stevenson D 200 the *belated baked-potato man* or in Ru Sel 1.370 no *existing highest-order art*, can any misunderstanding really arise as to the meaning of the group

12.324. The following instances of adjective + sb as first word show a gradual transition to the phrase-adjuncts (quotation adjuncts) to be considered below (14 8).

Caine M 45 I'm a *one-woman* man, but loving one is giving me eyes for all | Mered H 260 a *'no-nonsense'* fellow | NP '06 a "*No Nonsense* Cabinet", backed by a three-to-one majority | Sharp, Academy $^{17}/_{3}$ '88 mere cleverness —a quality often sneered at, probably for the "*sour grapes*" reason

12.325. A pronominal adjunct belongs to the first-word in the familiar questions *What age* person is she? *What size* gloves do you take? Thus also in *what countryman* (Sh Tw V 238, cf Abbott § 423, Defoe R 300 *what country*men they were, Spectator 112, Sh Pericl V 1.103 *what country*woman) This is also found in Danish (hvad landsmand er han?), but the corresponding combinations with other pronominal adjectives is more peculiar *this country*man (NED from 1570 Thynne, I have only found it as a rusticism in GE A 10 I'm not this countryman | ib 294 whether he was a *this country*-man; of Masefield C 297 what strange horses. Are they imported?—No, sir *This country horses*), *no country*men (NED 1708), *other country*man (NED 1856 Emerson) Thus also More U 29 certeyne of *his contrey shyppes* | Bacon Ess on Travel· he doth not change *his country manners* for those of foreign parts, and probably Ch Ros 6332 *What-euer mister* man am I

12.326. I add a few examples in which the meaning clearly shows the adjective to belong to the whole compound (to the last component):

Thack V 236 in his *big school-boy handwriting* (*big* qualifies neither *school* nor *boy* nor *hand*) | Holmes A 236 in *small school girl letters* | Quincey 81 her *sweet Madonna countenance* | Shaw M 170 in *comfortable bachelor lodgings*

12.331. Genitival compounds (compounds the first-word of which is in the genitive case) are not formally distinguished from mere (free) groups of words the first of which is in the genitive case, an adjective before such a combination may therefore belong either to the genitive word or to the compound As a rule, however, the genitive case of an adjective + substantive is avoided in all those cases in which the genitive + the following word might be mistaken as a genitive compound There is nothing to prevent such a genitive as *the stout Major's eyes*, as *eyes* cannot be *stout*, the adjective can go with *Major* only. But in speaking of the same man's wife, one would say *the wife of the stout Major*, and the combination *the stout Major's wife* would be reserved for the case in which the adjective qualifies the (Major's) *wife* (thus Thack V 250) Similarly *twelve peacocks' feathers* means twelve feathers, not all the feathers of twelve peacocks, and *many beginners' books* means many books for (or written by) beginners: on the whole genitive plurals of substantives qualified by adjectives are avoided in English

12.332. Other examples of adjectives belonging to genitival compounds Sh As III. 2 11 And how like you *this shepherds life?* | Cor V 3 27 *those doues eyes* | Austen M 219 from being the *mere gentleman's residence*, it becomes the residence of a man of education, taste [doubtful example] | Thack V 299 *that snug and complete bachelor's residence* | Thack P 1 5 written in a *great floundering boy's hand* (cf the examples above of *boy hand* in the same signification) | Tenn 125 Enoch Arden, *a rough sailor's lad* | Ward D 2 155 a *bright, untranslatable artist's language* | Ward R 2 177 that *independent exciting student's life* | Shaw D 194 a man with *faithful dog's eyes* | Gissing B 83 interrupted by a *loud visitor's knock* at the front door.

12.333. In Sh Macb II. 2.227 "with these hangmans hands" the number of the word in the genitive case shows clearly that the adjective belongs to the whole compound. But in most cases only the place of the apostrophe shows whether we have the gen sg or pl, and many inconsistencies are found in writing and printing (7.4).

12.334. We have, however, genitive compounds in which the adjective forms part of the first element: *New Year's* Eve | Malory 41 vpon *newe yeersday* | GE M 2.180 Maggie was introduced for the first time to the *young lady's* life | Stevenson JHF 179 that is only an *old wives'* tale. —Sh H8 III 1.169 "with these weak womens fears" may be doubtful.

12.335. Sometimes we have two adjectives, the first of which belongs to the whole compound and the second to the first element only.

Ml F 574 these are trifles and *mere old wiues tales* | Stevenson T 204 a *haggard, old man's smile* | Thack P 2.153 I live on *my younger brother's allowance* (not = the allowance of my younger brother, but = my allowance as a younger brother).

12.336. A possessive pronoun before a genitive may, of course, belong to it, as in *my uncle's hat* = the hat of my uncle, but as soon as there is a possibility of the combination being mistaken for a genitive compound, to which (or to the latter part of which) the possessive might belong, the *of*-combination is preferred: *the heart of her mother*, while *her mother's heart* = her heart which was a mother's heart, was like a mother's. This is sometimes puzzling, as in GE M 2.40 filled for the moment with nothing but the memory of *her child's feelings* (= those feelings she had had as a child, not those of her child).

Examples: Ch A 3169 told *his cherles tale* | ib 3917 in *his cherles termes* | Sh R3 IV 1.79 *my woman's heart* | Sh Macb I 5.48 come to *my womans brests* | Tw V. 280 in *thy womans weedes* | Meas V 358 show *your knaues*

visage | Greene F IX. 93 Hercules appears in *his lion's skin* | ib XIV. 47 in *her nun's attire* | Goldsm 646 I put on *my housewife's dress* to please you | Thack P 1 265 in *his freshman's year* | ib 1 311 he appeared in *his bachelor's gown* | Thack V *her woman's instinct* . *her woman's eyes* | Tenn 194 you look well in *your woman's dress* | Di Do 434 *her angel's face* | Ward D 2 257 *his tradesman's circumstances* . *his bookseller's profession* | Mered E 287 his chivalrous devotion to *his gentleman's word* of honour || Ru Sel 2 34 *that John Bull's manner* of yours | Swinb E 890 that I may give *this poor girl's blood* of mine

Note the singular in Mrs Browning A 236 'tis *our woman's trade* To suffer torment for another's ease

12.337. We may have two substantive genitives after one another, the first belonging to the compound made up of the second and the last substantive

Wright's ed. of Sh *As* 165 *Rosalind's woman's shape* | Thack P 2 344 the *girls' milliner's bills*

But as a rule *of* is preferred, as in Ru Sel 1 253 *the monk's visions of Fra Angelico* (= FA's monkish visions)

Compositional Adjuncts

12.41. Adjectives may be first-words in compound substantives. To the eye there is generally no difference between these cases and those in which the adjective stands in the ordinary relation of attribute to its substantive; but in the case of *a deaf-and-dumb teacher*, *dumb* would receive stronger stress if it meant a teacher for the deaf and dumb than if it meant a teacher who was so himself In "a sick room" *sick* really stands in the same relation to *room* as *dining* or *bed* in *dining-room* and *bedroom*; and it is impossible to substitute "a room that was sick"; a similar test shows that in *his married life* or *the single state* the adjective is really a first-word. But it must be admitted that in some cases it is not easy to distinguish between this and a direct adjunct.

12.42. Examples: Sh John IV 1 52 at your *sick service* | Sh Alls II. 3.118 my *sickly bed* | Swift P 140 this is my *sick dish*, when I am well, I'll have a bigger | Mered E 446 in the *sick-chamber* | Buchanan Anthony 123 he had been out making *sick calls* all the afternoon | on *sick leave* | a *lunatic asylum* | Holmes A 47 persons in *insane hospitals* | Ru Sel 1 318 *ragged schools* | Lamb E 1 157 a *blind charity* (= charity for the blind) | Lang T 88 the subtlety of the *mad scenes* [in Maud] | the *poor law* | Shaw D *39 in a *poor practice* the doctor must find cheap treatments for poor people the *poor doctor*

her *married life* | Mi PL IV 750 *wedded love* | (Di Do 496 the last night of her *maiden life*) | Ward M 455 walks with Kitty in their *engaged* or early *married days* [NB *early* stands differently from *married*] | Orr L 254 the first period of Mr Browning's *widowed life* | Stevenson V 34 goodness in marriage is a more complicated problem than mere *single virtue*.

Byron Ch H I 88 (902) *female slaughter* [female may, of course, be a subst.] | Ellis M 407 53 per cent of *male committals* were of recidivists

Lamb E 2 212 The children of the very poor have no *young times* | Grand T 90 no girl in my *young days* would have acted so outrageously | Swinb L 85 you don't look at things in a *grown-up way* | GE M I 210 *grown-up life* | (Di D 252 the first really *grown-up party* that I have ever been invited to) | Shaw J *19 as if men were Protestants by temperament and *adult choice* | Di Do 110 to fill a *junior situation*

late fee letters | Caine C 61 if we can get a *late pass*.

12.43. Franklin A 177 on our *idle days* [= the days on which we were idle] | GE A 107 his *lazy time* after dinner | Fielding T 1 285 *drunken quarrels* | Mrs Browning A 108 the *drunken oaths* | Macaulay H 2 129 within *living memory* [= the m of people still living] | Hawth 1.477 consign him to a *living tomb* | Sh Hml V. 2 367 he has my *dying voyce* | By DJ 7 27 the *missing list* [=

list of those missing after a battle] | Hardy L 29 the discomfort caused at night by the *half-sleeping sense* that a door has been left unfastened | Thack P 3 407 my *waking and sleeping thoughts* | Di Do 378 *half-waking dreams* | ib 379 her *waking grief* was part of her dream (These *-ings* might be considered as *ing*-substantives as also some of the following)

Goldsm 646 Is it one of my *well-looking days* | Defoe R 111 the 30th was my *well day* of course | Darwin L I 350 worked on all *well days*

Poe S 148 a case of *living inhumation*[1] | Byron 382 a *living grave* | id 382 Nor reach his *dying hand*—nor dead | Defoe P 51 *dead-carts* | Fielding 3 571 the *dead-warrant*, as it is called, now came down to Newgate for the execution of Heartfree (= what is now called death-warrant) | a *dead salesman* (= he who sells meat without being a butcher) | Caine E 564 the muffled drums had played the *Dead March*, cf *dead money*, *dead list*, NED dead B 6 and D 1 2

12.44. Measures are divided into *liquid measures* and *dry measures*

Thack N 301 the *Insolvent Court* [note the capital I] | McCarthy 2 105 a well-known *criminal lawyer* [might also be taken as *criminal law* + the ending *-(y)er*, cf above 12 311] | Carpenter P 41 *criminal executions* | ib 45 the jndgments of the *criminal courts* | ib 50 the *civil courts*) | the *condemned cells* [= cells for those condemned] | Di T 1 82 a species of *Condemned Hold* | Keir Hardie (book-title) The *Unemployed Problem*, 1904 | the *Foreign Office* | Sheridan 278 the ledger of the *lost and stolen office* | Bennett C 1.122 *lost and found notices*

12.45. *A Greek student* = a student of Greek Shelley L 861 Mary has been a *Greek student* several months | Carlyle F 125 one of my *German hearers* last

[1] Note the equivalent *burial alive* because *alive* cannot be preposed (12 9)

year [= one of the hearers of my lectures on G. literature] | Wister R 14 the two *Indian police* [= white men policing the Indians].

Quincey Op 24 a young and rising *American merchant*; by which I mean, that he was an Englishman who exported to the United States | Di N 427 the Brothers Cheeryble were *German-merchants* | Thack P 3.214 mercers and *ornamental dealers* | Di D 176 a little shop (it was what we used to call a *general shop*) | Thack V. 299 a small *green shop* | at *cooperative prices* [= prices of cooperative societies] | a *musical writer* [= writer on musical topics] | a *miscellaneous writer* | Gosse Mod E Lit 16 it is a *critical error* to dismiss Troilus and Cressida as a mere paraphrase [cf. a *scribal error*] | a *Great-Western train*

Collingwood R 389 'Modern Painters' had been also on the *condemned list* | *unseen translation* | Benson B 43 he underlined one of the notes with a purple *indelible pencil* | Keats 2.149 the *ripe hour* came | NP '13 he worked himself into a *white heat* | Wells L 115 He stared at her in *white astonishment* | in *red-hot agitation*.

12.46. Here we may also place *long credit* (= credit for a long period) | Galsworthy P 54 [a man charged with assault] I shall feel much safer if he gets a good *long sentence*

McCarthy 2 43 a comprehensive system of *native education*, especially *female education* | Doyle S 4 15 he was raised to *commissioned rank* | Wells L 227 I don't want a *resident post*. "Precious few *non-resident shops*" | ib 231 a *non-resident place* | ib 241 *resident vacancies*

Sh Macb I 3 84 the *insane root* [= root causing madness] | Fox 1.271 the *silent system* [in prisons]

12.47. The combination *old age* must also be analysed as a compound, of which *old* is the first-word (cf G *greisenalter*), the use of the adjective *extreme* before *old age* points to the same conclusion, as we should otherwise expect the adverbial form *extremely*

Macaulay E 4.278 He was now in *extreme old age* | Mered E 182 an extreme old age | Stevenson V 3 a cold and forlorn old age.

Other Indirect Adjuncts.

12.51. Such combinations of adjectives and substantives as those here mentioned give rise to other more or less singular grammatical combinations As *John's married life* is the equivalent of "the life of John when married" or "of married John", the adjective which from a formal point of view belongs to *life*, is felt to qualify *John*, of also *his dying wish*, *his lazy time*; this leads to other instances of adjectives which really qualify a preceding genitive instead of the substantive with which they are placed (Instead of a genitive we often have a possessive pronoun) This is particularly frequent with *sake*

Ml J 1306 for *your sweet sake* | Sh Meas V 496 for *your louelie sake* | LL V 2 766 for *your faire sakes* | Ro III 3.136, Shr II 1 61 | Shelley 82 for *its hateful sake* | Byron 640 Who covets evil For *its own bitter sake*? | Tenn 292 for *his own sweet sake* | Di Do 439 for *my old sake* [= "for old sake's sake", for the sake of our old friendship] | Swinb T 86 for *whose lost sake* dawn was as dawn of night

12.52. This gives us a clue to many passages in Elizabethan poets which have puzzled commentators:

Sh Ven 397 who sees his true-love in *her naked bed* [= naked in her bed, properly in her "naked-bed"; several similar examples in Nares s v. naked] | Ml T 2734 how haue ye spent *your absent time* from me? | Sh Oth III. 4.174 *louers absent hours*, cf without a genitive R2 II. 3 78 to take aduantage of *the absent time* | Sh LL II 1 81 *your fan approach* | Sh R2 I 3 210 *his banish'd years* [the years in which he was banished, his years of banishment] | Sh R3 II. 2 64 *our fatherless distress* | Sh As I. 3.43 dispatch you with *your safest haste* | Sh Oth I 3 260

his dear absence —Several examples (some of which are, however, doubtful) have been collected by Al. Schmidt in his Shakespeare-Lexicon p. 1415 ff. Sh. Ven. 671 "I prophecie thy death, my liuing sorrow", may perhaps be explained = my sorrow while I live, but Delius takes it = ein schmerz, der fortlebt.

A modern parallel is Di. X. 221 to keep *my tedious company* = to keep me (who am tedious) company.

12.53. Without a genitive we have in ElE. essentially similar combinations, which are to be explained from the use of adjectives as first words.

Sh. Cor. III. 3. 88 the *steepe Tarpeian death* [= death by being thrown from the steep T. rock] | Cor. III. 1. 24 they doe prank them in authoritie, Against all *noble sufferance* [= noble-sufferance, Wright paraphrases: so that none of the nobility can endure it] | As. II. 7. 132 two *weake euils*, age and hunger [= causes of weakness] | Haml. I. 5. 21 this *eternall blason* [= blazoning of eternal (infernal?) things]; further: *drowsy graue* [= grave of drowsiness], *partial slander* [= the reproach of partiality], *old wrinkles* (Merch. I. 1. 80) cf. *old age* (12. 47).

It is in imitation of this Elizabethan looseness in the use of adjectives that Tennyson has *happier chance* = chance of becoming happier, *his full tide of joy* = the full tide of his joy, etc., see Dyboski, Tennyson's Sprache u. Stil, 1907, p. 102 ff., 139.

12.54. Here must also be mentioned the idiomatic use of *born* (see NED. *born* B. 2) as in.

Di. N. 368 declaring that they never had seen such a wicked creature in all *their born days* | Caine C. 64 I never heard the like of it in all *my born days* | Barrie MO. 215 | Kipl. S. 278, etc.

12.55. The adjective *mid* is used in the same way as Latin *medius* to signify the middle *of*, thus in the compounds *midday, midnight, midsummer, midship, midway.* In free use with other sbs. (as in OE. *on midre sæ*) it is

now pretty frequent in literary style, though not used in colloquial language Sh has it only twice (Tp I 2 239 Past the mid season [of the day] | Tro II 2 104 mid-age). Milton has it pretty frequently (*mid sky, mid air, mid-heaven,* etc) The adj and sb are often hyphened Modern instances (note the use before adjectives in the two last quotations) Farquhar B 334 up to his *mid leg* | McCarthy 2 481 In the *mid career* of the Government the war broke out | ib 2 566 crazy ships which went down in *mid-ocean* | Phillpotts M 27 at this moment in *mid-afternoon* | London A 13 it was mid-afternoon | Wells T 9 he cut in on B in *mid-sentence* | Lowell 323 in the battle's *mid din* | NP '06 in the *mid-eighteenth* century | Wells A 76 it appeared first in the seventeenth century and came to its full development in the *mid-nineteenth*

12.56. Thus also *the Lower Danube* = the lower part of the Danube', *the Upper Rhine* cf on the other hand the direct adjunct in *lower* (or *upper*) *lip*

With this may be compared the use of *early* in *his early career* = 'the early part of his career' and Wells M 53 the *early Victorian* phrenologists

But English says *early* (adverb) *one morning*, where Danish and German may use the adjective *en tidlig morgen, eines fruhen morgens*

12.57. We have another kind of indirect adjunct with some arithmetical expressions *Double* in *a double rose, a double knock, a double movement*, and in Sh Hml I. 3 53 "*A double blessing* is *a double grace*" is a direct, and in *a double dealer* is a shifted adjunct, but it is differently used in the following examples, in which it is = 'twice the amount, or number, of' and may therefore be followed by the definite article etc (the NED without reason calls this usage elliptical, with prep omitted) he paid *double the sum* required | Di D 3 he was *double my mother's age* when he married | Macaulay H 2 167 his army might in a few days be swollen to *double its present numbers* | Ward E 264 my land brings me just *double what* it brought

my father [Formerly with *to*. Swift 3 191 my sallary should be *double to the usual pay*].

12.58. The word *half* presents even more complicated phenomena. (1) *Half* is a direct adjunct in such instances as Wordsw P 8 113 a *half hour's* roam | Thack N 342 There were a *half-dozen* sketches of Baden | Di D 114 at the end of the *half-year* | GE A 190 an interest which brought a *half smile* upon her lips | Shaw 2 252 with a *half laugh, half sob*, etc

(2) When *half* precedes the article, as it does regularly in *half an hour*, *half a dozen*, *half a tumblerful* (Jerome T 110), etc, it must now be considered as the adjective, but it is possible that it originated in cases in which *half* was an adverb (cf the word-order in *quite a*, etc); it seems to be a subjunct to the verb in Ch E 1428 Womman of manye scoles *half a clerk is* (Cf also Vachell H 70 you're not half such a fool as you look)

(3) But in Ch C 711 "Whan they had goon nat fully *half a myle*" we have already the modern construction with *half* belonging decidedly to the sb The same *half* may then (cp the usage with *double*) stand before another numeral, before the definite article, a demonstrative pronoun or a similar word as in Di M 463 at *half a hundred places* | Austen P 373 how could he spare *half ten thousand pounds?* | McCarthy 2.578 the Khedive held nearly *half the 400,000 original shares* || Caine C 263 shouting in *half the languages* of Europe || Ch B 4288 *halfe his cours* | Malory 156 *half his landes* | Defoe G 110 *half his naturall powers* are useless | Austen M 393 I have no time to give *half Henry's messages* | Shaw M 105 a rat with *half my brains* moves as well as I || Sh Cy I 6 168 *Halfe all mens* hearts are his | Sh Cor I 1.277 *Halfe all Cominius honors* || Philips L 45 *half England* knows it | McCarthy 2 530 trades-unions were a scare to *half society* | Austen M 85 it cannot be half a mile long, or *half half a mile* || ib 64 before *half this* was said | Kipl S 170 If *half those charges*

are true | Austen P 426 she would not say *half that remained* to be said

In another place I shall deal with the repetition of *a* (another half a crown) and the use of *the* before *half a*, etc

(4) But *half* is also a sb and as such properly requires *of* The frequency of such instances as those quoted above leads, however, to the adjectival construction even when *half* is preceded by *one* or some other adjunct showing it to be a sb. We have the three constructions, *one half* without *of*, *half* as adjective, and *one half of* within a few lines of one another in Sh Merch IV. 1 353 seaze *one halfe* his goods | ib IV. 1.370 *halfe* thy wealth | ib IV 1 381 for *one halfe of* his goods

Half is a sb in Caine C 307 the muscles of *one-half of* his face

Nineteenth-century quotations for the hybrid between the sb and adj *half* Di D 792 to spend *one half the money* it had cost | Mill L 6 *one half the great thoughts* and noble feelings which are buried in her grave | Ru P 1 151 *one-half the comfort* of a travelling carriage | Kipl S 17 as though *one-half the combe* were filled with golden fire | NP '95 *one half the world* does not know how the other half lives || Kingsley H 144 she got it for *the half what* it was worth | Tenn 507 my ships are out of gear, And *the half my men* are sick | ib 411 Even to *the half my realm* beyond the seas

12.59. The same construction is transferred to other fractions (originally substantives) Wells A 46 an area of over 2800 square miles, which is almost *a quarter that* of Belgium | Hewlett Q 321 I cannot tell you *one-quarter the shamefulness* she dared to report | Phillpotts K 101 they didn't know *a quarter* about him *what* I did | Hardy W 231 I've been here this *quarter-hour* | Hewlett Q 448 at some *quarter-mile's* distance | Tenn 363 and men brought in whole hogs and *quarter beeves* | at *a fourth their value* | Wells T M 243 the density of the moon is only *three-fifths that* of the earth

Chapter XIII.
Substantival Adjuncts.

The Problem

13.11. The question has often been asked whether *cannon* in *cannon ball* is an adjective or not See, for instance, Sayce, Introduction to the Science of Language 2.332, who says: In "cannon ball" *cannon* is as much an adjective as *black*, cf ib 1 417 "We are told that a school-inspector plucked some children a short time ago for saying that *cannon* in cannon ball was a noun instead of an adjective, the pedantry of the act was only equal to the ignorance it displays, and illustrates how often the artificial nomenclature of grammar breaks down when confronted with the real facts of language" At a meeting of the Philological Society of London, on the 1st of April 1881, the theory that *cannon* was here an adjective, was defended by Morris and Furnivall, whose reasons are not given, and attacked by Murray and Sweet As both of these latter have given their reasons, we must look at them

13.12. Murray says (Presidential Address, 1880, p 59)

"How early this position-genitive appeared in English, how precisely, it rendered the Latin inflexional genitive, may be well seen on p 159 of Dr Morris' Early English Homilies, 1st series, where *aqua maris* becomes 'see water', *aqua nivis* 'snow water', *aqua fontis* 'welle water', *aqua roris* 'deu water' School Inspectors and others who know so little of English as to take these position genitives for adjectives, may here see, that in the 12th c, when adjectives were still inflected and thus formally distinguished from nouns, it was no adjective but the simple nouns *salt, sea, snow, well,* and *dew*, that stood in their simple uninflected forms, in a genitive relation before another noun"

The only thing proved here is, that in the 12th century these words were no adjectives, but they might have used the intervening seven or eight hundred years to become adjectives Besides, it is not easy to see why Murray calls *sea* and *snow* in *sea water* and *snow water* genitives, if they are, how are we to account for the difference between *state* in *state room* and *states* in *statesman*?

13.13. Sweet (see Proceedings of Philol Soc , Apr. 1, 1881, and NEGr § 174) holds that the division into parts of speech is based on formal differences, and says, "But as the most marked formal characteristic of adjectives is comparison, and as comparison of *stone* in *stone wall* is impossible, even if the meaning of the combination allowed it, while there would be no grammatical objection to making *stony road, golden hair* into *stonier road, the most golden hair,* we must refuse to admit that assumptive nouns have any of the really distinctive features of adjectives."

Sweet here seems to prove too much, for he would not refuse the name of adjective to such words as *any, this, other, several, half, double, triangular, daily, yearly, previous,* which do not admit of comparison His test, therefore, is not infallible; and we shall see, moreover, that some "assumptive nouns" (as he calls them) can be compared (13 54, 13 71), though in most cases the meaning of the words does not admit of any comparison As, moreover, there are languages in which substantives can be compared, we must look out for some other means of deciding the question

13.14. To arrive at an answer it is not enough to show that the meaning of *a gold chain* is the same as that of *a golden chain*, nor to adduce the equivalents of other languages, Latin *catena aurea* and German *eine steinerne mauer* show nothing with regard to English *a gold chain* or *a stone wall,* any more than the Latin *aqua nivis* should have induced Murray to take *snow* in his 12th century *snow water* as a genitive. We should also beware of

judging the question off-hand after merely considering one or two self-made examples which may or may not be typical The proper way to deal with our problem evidently is to collect as many different examples as possible, and to test them not by one characteristic of adjectives, but by everything that we can find to be typical of adjectives, and—this is very important—not of adjectives in general or *in abstracto*, but of English adjectives in our present period

13.15. In order to have a name for such a word as *cannon* in *cannon ball* I shall here provisionally use the term first word, which has the advantage that it does not beg the question in any way —No one doubts that the origin of such combinations as *cannon ball* or *stone wall* is to be sought in old compounds of the same kind as G *steinmauer*, but are they still compounds in the same sense as German compounds?

In this chapter I follow the lines which I laid down in a paper read before the Philological Society of Copenhagen, on the 5th of May 1894 Unfortunately at that time I printed only the introductory part dealing with the transition of substantives to adjectives in Danish (see Dania III 80 ff) In *Growth* (1st ed 1905, 2nd ed 1912) I could give only one small page to the subject Since then similar considerations have been put forward by Kellner, *Bausteine* I 1906, and Wendt, *Syntax* 1911, cf also Bergsten, *Compound Substantives* 1911, p. 3—7

13.16. In a few cases one may feel inclined to look upon the words we are concerned with, as old adjectives in *-en* As final *-n* disappeared in ME, we may account for the form *silk* in *silk stockings* both from the old sb and from the old adjective (OE *seolocen*) with loss of *-en*, similarly with *lead* in *lead pipe* In other words, *silk* (before a sb) and *silken*, *lead* and *leaden* would then be doublets in the same way as *drunk* and *drunken*, *maid* and *maiden* *Iron* in *iron rod* may be either the sb in a compound, or the old adjective (as in OE dat pl *mid irenum gyrdum*), cf the adjectival use in Milton Lyc 111 Two massy keys . The *golden* opes, the *iron* shuts

amain. But this explanation applies only to a few cases, and in the vast majority we must start from old substantival compounds

Formal Characteristics.

13.21. *Stone wall* is written as two words, G *steinmauer* as one This of course is principally a matter of typography and should not in itself carry weight in our discussion Yet it is a symptom that the two nations look upon the combination in a different light, and we shall now see some more purely linguistic signs of the English feeling that we have *two* words and not *one* word in *cannon ball*, etc

13.22. Foremost among these must be mentioned stress As long as compounds have one strong unifying stress either on the first or on the second element *(husband, mankind)*, the two elements belong together and form one word This is the case in G *steinmauer* and Danish *stenmur*; in the latter also we have a phonetic peculiarity (want of the glottal stop found in isolated *sten*) which makes it impossible to look upon it as two words *sten mur* But in English for at least three centuries (vol I 5 33 ff) we have had a tendency to give both elements of free compounds equal (or varying) stress, which shows that to the linguistic feeling they are two words and no longer compounds of two mutually dependent elements.

13.23. Now, even if we had even stress in G *steinmauer*, we should not be able to look upon *stein* as an adjective, because it is invariable, whereas the adjective in *eine steinerne mauer* is inflected and takes *-n* in some cases Similarly in Danish, where there is moreover this difference that a substantive, also a compound one, has a postpositive definite article *(stenmur-en)*, while the adjective has a prepositive article *(den store mur)*. But in English no such differences exist. a first-word and an ordinary adjective are equally uninflected. there is there-

fore nothing on this account to hinder us from looking upon the first-word as a separate word or even from calling it an adjective.

Coordination

13.31. We now proceed to some more positive indications that first-words are felt to be parallel to real adjectives First they may be coordinated with adjectives, connected by *and* or *nor*·

Sh Hml I 4 50 the sepulchei Hath op'd his *ponderous and marble* jawes | Macb IV 1.48 you *secret, black and midnight* hags | H4A III. 1 102 the *smug and sluer* Trent | R2 V. 3.61 Thou *sheer, immaculate and silver* fountain | Oth I. 3 231 the *flinty and steel* couch of war | Swift P 39 I have rejected all *provincial and country* turns of wit | Keats 218 In *pale and silver* silence | Coleridge Anc M 111 in a *hot and copper* sky | Shelley 207 its [the bell's] *hoarse and iron* tongue | ib 255 That they might hide with *thin and rainbow* wings | id Pr 294 with *mercantile and commonplace* exactness | Quincey 19 in *arbitrary or chance* arrangements | Thack V 3 twelve *intimate and bosom* friends | ib 302 those who take *human or womankind* for a study | Di Do 9 she had taken the word [party] not in its *legal or business* acceptation | Bronte P 106 *white and taper* hands | Tennys 334 a *red and cipher* face | Ru F 128 in *savage and embryo* countries | id Sel 1 321 the slopes of *arable and vineyard* ground | Poe S 263 Marie, whose *Christian and family* name will at once arrest attention | Hawth S 24 this *commercial and Custom-House* life | Swinburne A 57 Through a *heavy and iron* furrow of sundering spears | ib 67 this *armed and iron* maidenhood | Stevenson J 39 such an *innocent and old-world* kindness | Doyle B 29 to *local and county* charities | Ward D 2.97 French *artistic and student* life | Lubbock P 43 *manual and science* teaching | Wells A 41 Both the *administrative and business* community | ib 123 by *political or business* ingenuity | ib 51 the *postal and telephone* services | Lecky D 1 100 his *personal and party*

interests | Kidd S 98 the *personal and family* history of scientific men | NED (s v *bye-bye*) a *colloquial and nursery* variant of goodbye | Butler Ess 24 in *mediæval and last century* portraiture | Gosse L 4 327 the *frail and silver* look of an old man | Archer Am 48 her *silvering or silver* hair | ib 58 *antiquated and rule-of-thumb* methods | NP '07 guard of 100 *mounted and foot* police | Bennett B 88 her *gay and butterfly* existence Cf also Sh Macb III 4 142 my *strange and self*-abuse

13.32. Equally significant with the conjunction is the comma in the following instances.

Di D 204 he had a *long, lank; skeleton* hand | GE A 101 the *lonely, bare, stone* houses | Caine E 2 the snow fell in *large, corkscrew* flakes | Caine P 97 her *tender, sweet, child* heart will break | Stedman O 123 a *shy, school-boy* feeling toward his tutor | Doyle F 29 in *brisk, business* tones | Hewlett Q 148 a *gentle, April* sky | Norris O 406 at a *small, family* hotel | Galsworthy M 179 in the *soft, Devonshire* drawl

13.33. Still more independent is the first-word when it is placed before the adjective with which it is coordinated—either with a conjunction:

Sh Cæs I 2 186 Cicero lookes with such *ferret*, and such fiery eyes | R2 III 2 166 Infusing him with *selfe* and vain conceit, cf Macb V 8 70 by selfe and violent hands | Cor III. 2 114 an *eunuch* or the virgin voice | Carlyle R 2 339 on some *Cumberland* or other matter | Black F 146 among the *evening* and weekly papers | Bleek Compar Gramm South Afr L XII the *Cape of Good Hope, Natal*, and Imperial Governments | Carpenter P 78 a list of *Prison* and Judicial Reforms | Shaw 1 96 the most dignified of the *London* and American publishers | McCarthy 2 106 he got into *money* and other difficulties | ib 540 he was a great *pulpit* and Parliamentary orator | Bellamy L 58 various literary, art, and scientific institutes | NP '92 Carpenter's *old-time*, but valuable book on Physiology | Lecky D 1 75 all national, *State, county*, and municipal

offices | Roosevelt A 87 interest in National, *State*, and Municipal affairs | Kidd S 56 the *business* and professional classes | Keane, NP '03 the tribal, *district*, or territorial gods | NP: *Tourist*, fortnightly, and Friday to Tuesday tickets | in such a *patchwork* and incomplete fashion | the *London* and provincial papers | *home* and foreign affairs.

13.34. Or else without any conjunction:

By DJ 3.72 Her orange *silk* full Turkish trowsers | Scott A 2.39 the fifty *Fairport* dirty notes | Di D 500 in the *drawing-room* middle window | Di T 2 30 past the massive *stone* outer walls | Thack P 1 200 *twopenny* old gentlewomen | Bronte Prof 275 the chambers have an *old-world*, haunted air | Carlyle R 1.225 *dandy* young fellows | Mrs Browning A 109 *household* quiet work | GE M 2 153 their unfavourable opinion of *sister* fair ones | Ru F 189 my *Gainsborough* little girl | Ru (in Collingwood 159) a *Yorkshire* young lady | Stevenson MB 65 on behalf of some *Edinburgh* fair one | Pattison Milt 87 a feeling far beyond *commonplace* filial piety | Doyle S 1.59 an *average commonplace* British tradesman | Dobson F 11 the *average* dramatic experiences | Hardy W 96 he had married a stranger instead of one of the *town* young ladies | Doyle S 5 75 Was there ever a more mild-mannered, *Sunday-school* young man? | Shaw P *17 a *Boston* young lady | Ridge L 42 the *eyeglass* young woman | Ridge B 47 *City* young men returned home | Wells Am 167 a *specimen* American mind | Lecky D 1 *30 an *iron* physical frame | Ib 1.79 a system of *wholesale*, organised, continuous plunder | Dilke Empire 40 the energy of the *United Empire* original population | Philpotts M 262 the *chance*, latter utterances of his mother | Norris O 84 in the *open air*, healthy life of the ranches | the *British South Africa* Chartered Company | a *school* Latin dictionary | a *school* Homeric grammar | an *evening* radical newspaper | his *silk* high hat | the *1892* general election | the *head* four boys

Compare also Sh Lucr 1240 for men haue *marble*, women waxen *mindes*.

Note that in "Boston young lady" we have the same position of the two attributes as in "a handsome young lady", because *young lady* is to some extent felt like one idea (15.15).

In the following examples we have two independent first-words:

Thack N 53 a rich *silk* Master of Arts gown | Ritchie Mem 241 in her black *silk* Paris dress

Use of One.

13.4. The "prop word" *one* (ch. X) was formerly restricted to pure adjectives, as in *a good one*, its use in such combinations as *a cotton one* goes a long way to show that *cotton* in *a cotton gown* is felt like an adjective and is no longer simply the first element of a compound substantive

Scott A 2 29 I carried it [the ram's horn] for mony a year, till I niffered it for *this tin ane* wi' auld George | Lamb E 1.181 pulled it [a chimney-piece] down to set up *a marble one* in its stead | Di Do 458 the Papers . one of *the Sunday ones* | Di D 78 a wig (*a second hand one* he said) | Di X 28 all top couples at last, and not *a bottom one* to help them | Thack S 172 he takes his own umbrella from the hall—*the cotton one* | Thack N 301 I tried papers too I tried *a Tory one* | Carlyle H 132 through Gustavus-Adolphus contentions onward to *French-Revolution ones* | ib 189 both the quack theory and *the allegory one* | id R 1 272 solitary dialogues on the Kent shore (far inferior to *our old Fife ones*) | id F 2 78 their egg, even if not *a wind one*, is of value simply one halfpenny | Kingsley H 167 a lady she is, but evidently *no city one* | Poe 184 The house was *a four story one* | Tennys L 2 19 the resemblance is just *a chance one* | Mulock H 1.298 no more silk gowns . I shall not look equally well in *a cotton one* | Ru Sel 2.89 most of the mountain flowers being lovelier than *the lowland ones* | Hughes T 2 74 lessons . .

particularly *the geography ones* | Mered H 341 the conference, which gradually swelled to *a family one* | Mered R 131 our gymnasium [in town] is not to be compared to *our country one* | ib 194 the autumn primroses *the spring ones* | Sweet Handb Phon § 224 between the glottis stoppage and *the mouth one* | Black P 2 42 his slight German accent was scarcely so distinct as Sheila's *Highland one* | Doyle M 137 he wanted a first rate riding horse, as neither of *the carriage ones* would suffice him | Hardy L 214 two officers . . *the head one* | Morris N 179 the cast-iron bridges had been replaced by handsome *oak and stone ones* | Ward E 4 the American girls, even *the country ones* | Hardy T 15 her lower lip had a way of thrusting the middle of *her top one* upwards | ib 88 that muslin dress . is my best *summer one* | Garnett Milt 74 the question involves *the nineteenth century one* of the pope's temporal sovereignty | Shaw 1 46 I never knew that my house was *a glass one* | Kipl P 11 Their father had made them a small play out of the big *Shakespeare one* | Barrie M 16 this is the chaff pillow you've taken out of my bed and given me your *feather one* | Caine M 173 Elm Cottage they're calling it—*the slate one* with the ould fir-tree | the question has ceased to be *a party* or personal *one* | Norris O 466 he buys himself pale blue suspenders, *silk ones* | Shaw C *22 I have made no attempt to turn an 1882 novel into *a twentieth century one*.

All these quotations are recent ones, it is hardly due to mere chance that I have none before the year 1800, for Sh Tp V 1 273 "This deny-duell, (For he's *a bastard one*)" shows nothing, as *bastard* seems to have been an adjective from the 13th c onwards (NED), and EJo 3 231 "the Centaurs though there be *a she one* there" is not exactly a case in point, as *she* is no original substantive

Use of Adverbs.

13.51. As long as the combination of two substantives is felt to be a compound substantive, it can only be preceded by an adjective like any other substantive.

If, therefore, we find an adverb as a subjunct before it, this shows that the first element is detached and felt to be analogous to an adjective This is the case in the following examples.

Sh Oth I 3 56 my particular grief Is of *so flood-gate* and o'erbearing nature | Austen M 83 I am a *very matter-of-fact,* plain spoken being | Meredith E 157 I am *perfectly matter-of-fact* | Fox 2 123 a *very matter-of-fact* man | GE L 2 15 in a *very makeshift* manner | Stevenson MP 65 looks with a *somewhat vinegar* aspect on the whole society | Shaw M 203 the introduction of *practically Manhood* Suffrage in 1884 | Pinero B 31 there was a *purely family* gathering | Murray, Athen July 29, '93 Gladstone's use [of the word cram] is the first *undoubtedly Oxford undergraduate one* that I have been able to discover | Merriman V. 258 the commerce is of *so retail* a nature that it seems to pass from hand to hand in mysterious cloth bundles [note here also the position of a] | Ellis M 3 a *fairly average* picture | ib 54 in the *somewhat bird's-eye* view we have obtained | Henderson Scottish Verse XI in the more *strictly ballad* form | Lecky D 1 *25 skill in drawing subtle distinctions is said to be *a specially Oxford* gift | ib 1 46 in *purely Government* work | ib 1 110 much *purely class* legislation, intended to support class interests | NP '93 the *somewhat zigzag* course of this narrative | NP '05 the pleasure garden run on *strictly temperance* principles | NP '03 on *merely business* grounds | NP '05 novels of *unmistakably home* growth | NP '06 the *nearly sinecure* places | NP from a too *exclusively London* standpoint | NP '12 there were no *avowedly caste* laws

13.52. The difference between "a division on *strict party lines*" and "on *strictly party lines*" is very slight indeed, in the former *strict* (as an adjunct) qualifies the compound *party lines*, in the latter *strictly* (as a subjunct) qualifies *party* But in other instances the leaving out of *-ly* would make greater havoc (*pure Government work* etc)

13.53. In the following instances it might be said, though I think not correctly, that the adverb qualifies the adjective that is part of the first-word

Wilde H 114 she has a *decidedly middle-class* mind | Black P 1 214 a *somewhat commonplace* square | Jerome T 23 some *really first-class* nectar | Merriman V 191 Looking at the question from the *strictly common-sense* point of view | Wells U 283 a lot of *very second-rate* rhetoric.

13.54. When a word can have *so* or *very* before it as in 13 51, it is no far cry to the use of *more* and *most*, and as a matter of fact we find it by no means rarely in modern English·

Austen M 222 in a *more everyday* tone | Austen P 47 a *most country-town* indifference to decorum | Mrs Carlyle L 2 239 I thought it a *most wild-goose* enterprise | Dobson F 125 the *most everyday* occurrences | Merriman S 26 a *most* refined and *nineteenth century* misfortune | Black F 2 8 a much *more matter-of fact* demeanour | Shaw P 181 the *most matter-of-fact* order | Zangwill G 244 was there ever a *more madcap* expedition than ours? | NP '05 drinking, gambling, or any of the *more scarlet* sins | the *more level* road (cf 13 82)

On the comparative in *-er* and superlative in *-est* see below, 13 71

Isolation

13.61. A first-word may also be used alone, without being followed by any "second element of the compound" This perhaps happens most easily in apposition, when the second element has just been expressed

Di X 104 his own picture—*a full length*, a very full length | Spencer F 117 to determine the national transactions, *home* and foreign | Holmes A 287 English dandyism, *schoolboy* or full grown | Roosevelt A 27 any position, whether *State* or national | Kipl J 2 37 he was a Brahmin, so *high-caste* that | Finnemore Soc Life 145 Fish,

both *sea* and *river*, fresh and salted, was an important article of diet | NP '94 the Duchess of Teck's letters, *business* and philanthropic | NP '10 the vast fleet of merchant ships, *steam* and *sail*

In the two following sentences, too, the second element is clearly understood (note the article).

GE M 2 96 a young fellow may be good-looking and yet not be *a six-foot* | Doyle S 1 28 was the photograph *a cabinet*?

13.62. In the following examples the word is used in the same purely predicative manner as an ordinary adjective:

Sh R2 I. 1 41 the more faire and *christall* is the skie | Cowper L 1 18 the roads, which are all *turnpike* | Tennys 690 my sight is *eagle* [not quite natural] | Ruskin Sel 1 320 there is never vulgarity in a whole truth, however *commonplace* | Meredith Eg 102 I am so *commonplace* that I should not be understood by you | Doyle S 1 141 the more featureless and *commonplace* a crime is, the more difficult is it to bring it home | Twain M 164 life having now become *commonplace* and *matter-of-fact* | Meredith E 496 making you hard, *matter-of-fact*, worldly, calculating | Wells T 109 it was all quite clear and *matter of fact* then | Ru Sel 1 199 things that are dead, *second-hand*, and pointless | ib 1 371 the image may be *first-rate* of its kind, but it is not *first-rate* because it is portable | Seeley E 75 states which are unsafe, insignificant, *second rate* | Wilde SM 3 To be a bit better than one's neighbour was considered excessively vulgar and *middle class* | Street A 101 my own father is quite *middle-class* in his attitude towards life | Ward R 1 60 a family that is original and *old-world* even in its way of dying | Beaconsf L 212 the Bishop was *high-church* | Thackeray P 1.218 He was *low-church*, and she never liked him | ib 2.258 our cousin was exceedingly *Low Church* | Lecky D 1. XVIII the Voluntary Schools which are chiefly *Church of England* and denominational | Ward D 1 258 she's very

High Church | Stevenson C 19 I am *Highland*, as you see | NP 93 Mr Benson seems the most *eighteenth-century* of our later candidates for Parnassus.

Cf. also NP '06: measures looked upon at one time as purely *Labour* are being passed by the Liberal Governments

13.63. Sometimes a first-word may be used alone with the definite article as a plural to designate a whole class, like the adjective in *the poor* (11 4), the absence of the ending *-s* shows that the words are no longer substantives

Wilde In 156 the sins of *the second-rate* | ib 160 whatever *the commonplace* may say against them.

13.64. I have only two (recent) examples of the use of such a word placed after *anything* and *nothing* as in *anything (nothing) easy*· Bennett A 96 I hope your mother won't give me *anything fancy* to do I'm no good at anything except plain sewing | Gissing G 67 *Nothing brutally clap-trap* about it —One may say· there is *nothing commonplace* about him

Adjectival Endings.

13.71. The comparative in *-er* and superlative in *-est* are found chiefly in some familiar words, which must be dealt with separately

Arch, from *arch knave*, *-rogue*, etc., hence with the signification 'cunning, roguish, slily saucy', *archest* in NED from M Arnold Cf also Wordsw P 5 310 see How arch his notices | Di M 8 she was the most arch and at the same time the most artless creature | Austen M 83 an arch smile

Cheap is OE subst *cēap* 'bargain', cf German *kauf* The old idiom is seen in Greene, F III. 2 we shall have hay *good cheap*, cf Dutch *goedkoop* (comparative *goedkooper*) Now *cheap* is never used as a sb, and *cheaper* and *cheapest* have long been recognized.

Chief, from French *chief*, *chief*, Lat. *caput*; in such combinations as *chief justice*, *chief mourner*, it came early to be looked upon as an adjective; *chiefer* and, more frequently, *chiefest* are used as early as 1400 (NED); examples. More U 83 the *chyefest* dowte; also 204, 207 | Greene F IV. 52 *chiefest* | Milton Vac Ex 18 thy chiefest treasure (cf also Il P 51) | Kipling L 3 her *chiefest* friend Cf. also outside the superlative BJo 1 29 and—what was *chief* —it showed not borrowed in him | Defoe P 43 men servants were *the chief* of their customers.

Choice has been in use as an adjunct from the fourteenth century, *choicest* is found, for instance, in Greene F IV 65, Marlowe T 4642, Swift T 25, Fielding T 1 79, Di N 307 the *choicest* and most resplendent waistcoasts *Choicer* is rarer NP '88 other cattle, of *choicer* breed, were carefully herded.

Coarse is probably the same word as *course* (Wedgwood) in the sense 'ordinary' (as in *of course*), *coarse (course) cloth* was distinguished from fine cloth

Dainty originally means a delicacy, from OFr *daintie* < Lat *dignitate(m)*; in Chaucer's "ful many a deyntee hors" (A 168) and More's "soo deyntye and delycate an opynyon" (U 188) we see the transition to the adjectival use *Daintier*, *daintiest* may be freely formed.

Damp, sb from 1480 in NED, adj in the sense 'slightly wet' not till the beginning of the 18th century; *damper*, *dampest* frequent

Game: a *game-cock* originally means a play-cock or sport-cock, a cock bred to fight for play, but the word being taken = 'a courageous cock' an adjective has been deduced with the meaning of 'courageous Superlative for instance in Di D 799 she gave her evidence in the *gamest* way.

Shoddy, the Enc. Dict has examples (NP 1882) of *shoddier* and *shoddiest*

Weird. OE *wierd* is a substantive and means destiny or fate, the three *weird sisters* = the Norns, Shakespeare

took the expression from Holinshed and used it in speaking of the witches in Macbeth, and only there. From that play it has entered the general language without being really understood, Todd interpreted it as 'skilled in witchcraft', but the now accepted sense is 'mystic, mysterious, unearthly' Comparison. *weirder*, *weirdest.*

Here should be mentioned also *purple* (Byron 586 billows *purpler* than the ocean's) and *square* (Bronte P 32 my own features were cast in a harsher and *squarer* mould than his | Stevenson Jekyll 153 He who can sit *squarest* on a three-legged stool, he is it who has the wealth and glory | Ellis Man 93 the dental arch is *squarer*), though in both words the adjective may be just as old as the substantive.

The following are nonce-formations of the same kind

Trollope: the *bosomest* of her husband's friends (quoted by Storm EPh 214) | Wells Am 37 the *toppest* floor | ib 125 the *bottomest* end of the scale (generally *bottommost*, which in the familiar pronunciation with [-most] is not far from *bottomest*)

13.72. The endings *-ly*, *-ty*, *-ty*, and *-ness*, which are commonly added to adjectives to form adverbs and substantives, in some instances are also joined to original first-words, most of these forms do not occur before 1800

archly (from 17th c.), *archness* (from 18th c.)

averagely

bridally (19th c.), *bridalry* (Richardson), *bridalty* (BJo, 19th c); *bridal* was originally a substantive, = OE *brid-ealu* 'bride-ale'

cheaply, *cheapness* (16th c)

chiefly (before 1400)

choicely (14th c)

commonplaceness.

coarsely (*coursely*, before 1600), *coarseness.*

daintily (14th c), *daintiness* (16th c)

damply (19th c), *dampness* (17th c)

gamely, *gameness* (Merriman V 199 gameness is not solely a British virtue)

gallowsness (GE A 61); *gallows*, also written *gallous* and thus assimilated with adjectives in *-ous*, is from *gallows-bird*, a *gallows fellow*, it means in dialects 'depraved, wicked, mischievous, saucy, spirited, smart'.

matter-of-courseness, NED from 1890

matter-of-factly, NED from 1873, also Shaw 1 234 Vivie [matter-of-factly] Goodbye | Shaw J 17

matter-of-factness NED from 1816. 1879

squarely (Doyle G 131 the squadrons which had stood squarely all day), *squareness*

weirdly (Ward D 1 216 the eyes were weirdly prominent), *weirdness* (ib 1 120 there was a weirdness about the figure)

Conclusion.

13.81. These, then, are the facts from which we are to draw our conclusions. It is noteworthy that most of the quotations showing a gradual approach to adjectivity have been found in nineteenth century authors, but Elizabethan quotations show that the tendency was already strong at that time, which is not strange, as the two chief factors in the development were already in existence, namely invariability of the adjective, and accentual separation of the two elements of (some) compounds The comparatively small number of examples from the intervening period is explicable, I think, from the prevailing classicism, which was opposed to colloquialisms, especially of a more daring character

13.82. The answer to the question we set out to investigate in this chapter "Have first-words become adjectives?" cannot be doubtful with regard to those words which can take the endings *-er*, *-est* (13.71) or *-ly*, *-ty*, *-try*, *-ness* (13.72): they have become adjectives to all intents and purposes, and are recognized as such in all dictionaries

Besides those mentioned in 13.7 we have some other words, which from the corresponding use as first-words

have become adjectives and are classed as such in many dictionaries. Some of them may have developed comparatives in *-er* and superlatives in *-est*, or derivatives in *-ly* and *-ness*, though I have no examples of them *Addle*, obsolete in the original signification 'urine', used in *addle-egg* and felt there as an adjective, which was then transferred to other combinations with the meaning 'empty, vain' *Crystal* (cf 13 62 Shakespeare); as an adjective a favourite word with Shelley. *(Ebon)*; *Level* (OFr. *livel*, ModFr *niveau*); *level ground*; this is *quite level*, doubtful whether adj in Sh 2H4 IV 4.7 euery thing lyes leuell to our wish. *Main*; BJo 1.52 the dressing is a most main attractive. *Moot*, orig. 'meeting'; *a moot point* is a point to be discussed at a meeting. *Pollard*, Di Do [p.?] some pollard willows *Proof*, originally 'test, evidence', from such combinations as *proof armour* 'armour which has been proved', *a proof ball, blade*, etc.; as an adjective 'impenetrable, able to resist', Sh Cor I. 4.25 with hearts more proofe then shields; another construction was *of proof*, as in Sh H5 III 1 18 English, whose blood is fet from fathers of warre-proofe | Dryden 5 227 Keen be my sabre, and of proof my arms | Di Do 347 armour it is of proof against conciliation *Scarlet*. *Ship-shape*

Note that in *bridal*, *crystal* as in *dainty*, *shoddy*, and in *gallows (gallous)* the accidental similarity with common adjective endings has been in favour of the transition to adjectives. The same is the case with *kindred*, originally a subst (OE **cynræden*, ME *cunrede*, *kinrede*) 'relationship', with the same ending as in *hatred*; now felt entirely as an adjective in *-ed*: *kindred souls*, etc; doubtfully so in Sh John III. 4.14 who hath read, or heard, of any kindred-action like to this?

13.83. With regard to words not thus universally recognized as adjectives, so much is certain that Modern English treats them differently from Old English or German, and that there is not a single characteristic trait of adjectives proper, with the exception of those

mentioned in 13.7, that is not shared by these first-words: inflexion (or rather flexionlessness), separation from the 'second word', use of adverbs (including *more*, *most*) before and of *one* after them. Only it must be admitted that some of these adjectival characteristics are as yet found only occasionally with first-words, especially the preceding adverb and the power to stand alone as predicatives. What we must assert is, therefore, an approximation to, rather than the full attainment of, the adjectival status This is covered in the terminology proposed in this volume, if we recognize the words in question as still being substantives, though they function as adjuncts to other substantives In *stone wall* we have a group of two words (two substantives), of which *stone* is the adjunct and *wall* the principal, while G *steinmauer* is only one word, *stein-* thus counting only as part of a word. And the development and free use of such **substantival adjuncts** forms one of the most characteristic traits of present-day English

13.84. Those English philologists who speak with regret of the loss of the power to form compound substantives in English as in German, generally overlook the fact that it is only in the free formation of *technical* compounds that English is inferior to German—an inferiority which is intimately connected with the predilection for classical or pseudo classical formations—and that there is in English a facility unknown even to German of forming free combinations of substantives, each retaining its own natural stress and pronunciation as well as its proper signification, while one is made subordinate to the other. Through this development it becomes possible to combine several adjuncts more freely than would otherwise be feasible (13 33), clumsy repetitions are avoided by means of *one* (13 4), and it becomes possible to qualify one part of the combination by placing an adverb rather than an adjective before it (13 51) The chief rôle, however, of these substantival adjuncts is that of supplementing the want in English of an adequate manner of

forming adjectives from substantives to denote the vague relations indicated by Latin *-alis*, *-anus*, etc. (Ido *-ala*, cf. Growth § 131). Therefore we see first-words used parallel to those adjectives of that class which do exist, chiefly of Latin formation, as in Archer Am 81 "an eminent *Shakespearean* critic . a very learned *Dante* scholar" Cp also *a Yorkshire man* with *Kentish man*.

The same difference is seen also with the participles *born* and *bred*, where the substantives are really subjuncts, on the one hand we have

Scott Iv 382 the other is *Yorkshire bred* | Thack V 327 I'm an honest girl though *workhouse bred* | GE Mm 95 *midland bred* souls | Hardy L 28 he was *country born* | ib 194 Both being *country born and bred*, they fancied | Ridge S 67 you're *town bred* Collingwood Ru 51 these *Paris-bred, Paris-dressed* young ladies

On the other hand

Scott Iv 366 I am *English born* | Norris O 320 a ship *American built*

13.85. The use of proper names as adjuncts was formerly more extensive than now, but is still very common

Malory 94 kynge Pellam was nyghe of *Ioseph* kynne Greene F IV. 33 to *Suffolk* side | ib V. 76 the *Sussex* Earl ib VI. 7 the *Lincoln* Earl | ib VI. 97 from *Windsor* court ib VIII 131 the *Albion* diadem | Marlowe J 2272 *Malta* streets | Sh Mids I. 1 173 the *Carthage* queen | Cæs I 1 63 *Tiber* banks | Cor I 8 8 *Coriales* walls | ib III 3 104 *Rome* gates | Swift J 23 at Molesworth's, the *Florence* envoy with Delaval, the *Portugal* Envoy | Defoe R 41 the *Portugal* captain | Darwin L 1 230 the *Portugal* laurel | Mered E 38 the *Portugal* clime | Spect 61 a little *Japan* table | Ru Sel 1 333 a *Turkey* carpet | Stevenson J 15 with a strong *Edinburgh* accent | Thack P 1 15 the whole range of *Pendennis* portraits | ib 210 some of the *Fotheringay* presents [= presents given to Miss F] | Carlyle R 1 241 these *Wordsworth* appearances in London ceased | Hamerton F 2 107 the *Tennyson* peerage | GE A 479 news of a fresh *Nelson* victory.

Shakespeare even uses the names of towns in this way with an adjective before them:

Shrew II 1.369 within *rich Pisa* walls | Ro I. 2.35 (Q 1) through *faire Verona* streets.

This is not possible nowadays, probably because of the use before substantival adjuncts of adverbial forms (13 5)

13.86. Sometimes it makes a difference whether the substantive or the derived adjective is used as an adjunct *a Turkey carpet* refers to the kind, while *a Turkish carpet* would mean any carpet found in Turkey; similarly *a Japan table* and *Japanese table* In the quotation from Swift *the Florence envoy* means the English envoy to Florence, while *the Florentine envoy* would mean an envoy from Florence The *East India docks* are found in London, while *the East Indian docks* = the docks in East India The difference between *socialist* and *socialistic* in the following quotation is not quite clear, though the latter may rather mean 'inclined to socialism' Kidd Soc Evol 208 "an examination of the *socialistic* phenomena . . . schemes loosely described as *socialist* or *socialistic*. that have nothing whatever of an essentially [note the ending] *socialist* character about them" Nor do I see why Hall Caine sometimes says *Icelandic* (P 8· four Icelandic students) and sometimes *Iceland* (ib 27 some Iceland love-songs | 38 a simple Iceland maiden | 92 in Iceland dress, etc , thus also Merriman Last Hope 316 the Iceland fisheries); the latter is less natural than *Icelandic*

13.87. As the knowledge of the Latin suffixes is now more common than in Shakespeare's time, many of his substantival adjuncts would now be supplanted by derivative adjectives, *Rome* by *Roman*, etc But even now sometimes a substantive is used where an adjective is available Professor George Hempl once told me that he always had a feeling of displeasure at "Egypt Exploration Fund", which should be *Egyptian*, but that it was formed after "Palestine Exploration Fund", which was all right

as no adjective is formed from *Palestine*. In some instances we seem to see a sb used as adjunct because its ending was mistaken for an adjective ending, as in Sh Hml III. 1 164 that suck'd the honie of his *musicke* vowes (ordinarily *music* is only subst., and *musical* adj) or Marlowe F 348 the *Affricke* shore; Shakespeare also uses *funeral* as an adj. (or .first-word) while *funereal* is unknown to him —If compounds of adjective + substantive (*commonplace, old-world, first-rate*, etc.) and compounds like *matter-of-fact* are so often used as adjuncts, this is a natural consequence of the impossibility of forming adjectives from them by means of a derivative ending

---

Chapter XIV.
Adjuncts. Continued.

Adjunct and Predicative.

14.11. As a rule words that can be used as adjuncts (pre-adjuncts) can also be used in the same form as predicatives. But in some cases there is some slight difference in form between the two employments. The accentual difference between *fourteen* with stronger stress on the first syllable as a pre-adjunct and with stronger stress on the last syllable as a predicative ('fourteen years | she is just four'teen, I. 5. 44, cf. *'overhead* wires | these wires are placed over'head) is not exactly a case in point, because the stress-shifting is not invariably occasioned by the syntactical function Compounds like *good-natured* similarly have rhythmically weaker stress on the second element when used as adjuncts than in other positions Participles with *-en* as pre-adjuncts and without *-en* in other positions (bitten : bit | beaten beat | stricken : struck | drunken . drunk | hidden hid, etc) will be dealt with in the Morphology, the distinction is in no case carried through with absolute consistency The archaic

form *olden* is only used as adjunct *(olden days, times)*, whereas *old* may be used in any position. In the pronouns we have more consistency in the (inverse) employment of the forms with and without *-n* (mine : my dog) and of those with and without *-s* (hers : her dog), see ch. XVI. A somewhat similar distinction is found in other cases, where the form with *s* is used by itself as an adverb (as a subjunct), while the form without *s* is adjunctal, thus in *homewards our homeward journey* (14.942) | *indoors · his indoor life*. And if finally we compare the use of the plural form with *s* and the corresponding form without *s* in adjunctal use. *billiards · a billiard table* | *three volumes . a three volume novel* (7.1), we see a general tendency towards the distinction : forms with *s* standing by themselves, and forms without *s* standing in close connexion with other forms.

14.12. There is a distinction which, though developed in a different way, may have been vaguely felt by the speech-instinct in a certain period as parallel to that between *mine* and *my*, namely that between *twain* and *two*. The former originally was the masculine form, OE *twegen*, while the latter is the old neuter, OE *twā*. In ElE, at any rate in Shakespeare, *twain* was never used as a pre-adjunct, but only as a principal (standing by itself) or, more rarely, as a post-adjunct, while *two* could be used in any position. *Two* soon became practically the only form used, and *twain* now is merely a poetical or archaic form.

14.13. Apart from these formal differentiations there are some adjectives that are hardly ever used predicatively, and on the other hand some that are hardly ever used as pre-adjuncts. The former class comprises some ex-comparatives (formal comparatives that cannot now be used as real comparatives, followed by *than*): *latter, former, elder*; *inner, outer, utter, upper* and the other words formed in the same way from prepositions or adverbs.

14.14. The second class comprises adjectives that cannot be freely used as pre-adjuncts With some the reason obviously is that their signification demands a complement thus *ashamed* (of something, ashamed to be seen), *exempt* (from), *content* (with), *glad* (of sth, to do sth), thus also the obsolete *fain*, *able*, *unable* (to do sth), *mindful* (of sth, to do sth). In the rare cases, however, when they are used in a more abstract signification without reference to anything particular, nothing hinders their being pre-adjuncts, as in Darwin (NED) *an ashamed person* | *exempt cases*, *exempt jurisdiction* (obs , NED) | *an able statesman* | Collins (NED) *thy mindful tears* *Glad* is used as a pre-adjunct in reference to things (*a glad summer*, not colloquial; *glad tidings*, frequent in the Bible; *glad emotions*), but not to persons (Norwegian 'en glad gut' must be rendered *a happy boy*) A pre-adjunct form of *content* is *contented*, see Morphology under *ed*

14.15. Many words beginning with *a* can only be used predicatively. This originates with such as are prepositional groups, e g *alive* (< OE *on life*), *asleep*, *awake*, *afloat*, *aswim*, *aglow* In the oldest formations of this kind we have *on* + a substantive, as, however in many cases (*asleep*, *awork*, *athirst*, etc.) the same stem is common to substantives and verbs, the resulting words were felt to be derived from the verbs, and new words of the same pattern were freely formed from nearly any short verb beginning with a consonant, and used as a kind of participle in predicative and post-adjunct positions, while the corresponding participle in *-ing* may be also used as a pre-adjunct the fire is *a-blaze* | a (the) *blazing* fire, cf also the beam is *aslant* | the *slanting* beam

The following examples will show the employment of these *a*-words (some of them are nonce-words)·

GE A 204 women's voices are always either *a-buzz* or *a-squeak* | Browning 1 518 the slave that holds John Baptist's head *a-dangle* by the hair | James T M 19 a storybook over which I had fallen *a-doze* and *a-dream* |

GE A 444 the sun . shone on the windows and made them *a-flame* with a glory beyond that of amber | Scott Iv 233 he sate with his mouth *a-gape* | Coleridge B 43 with words and images all *a-glow* | Stevenson B 101 I am yet all *a-quake* | Zangwill G 312 he felt himself all *a-quiver* | Quincey 160 before people were generally *astir* | Kipl S 121 like bees *aswarm*.

Only rarely do we find words containing *a-* < *on-* used as pre-adjuncts, *aloof* (*a* + *loof* sb. 'windward direction') is in NED exemplified only from 1608 *(aloofe abodes)* and 1642 *(an aloofe message)*, but it is found also in the 20th c. Masefield C 27 *the aloof lady* | Bennett C 1 268 Superior and *aloof persons* (also ib 1.283, 304, HL 213, 308)

14.16. Curiously enough, the averseness to pre-adjunct employment, which is easily accounted for in the case of groups containing *a* (*on*) + object, has been transferred to other words beginning with an *a-* of a different origin · *afraid*, participle of *affray* (OF *affrayer*, *effrayer* < **ex-fridare*, cf vulgar *afeerd*, as if from *on* + *fear*), *aghast* (ptc. of vb *agast* 'frighten', apprehended as = *a* + *ghost*), *averse* (< Lat *ab* + *versus*), and *alone* (< *al(l)* + *one*) In the latter case, however, the exclusively predicative employment may be due to the composition with *al* (cf. Danish *alene* and G *allein*, which also are not used as pre-adjuncts.

14.17. It is probable that the accidental identity of *a-* and the indefinite article has something to do with the disinclination to use any of these words attributively. (*An a-* was felt as a kind of awkward repetition, and *the a-* as a kind of contradiction) At any rate some of them can be used in that position when preceded by an adverb or other word, which, so to speak, hides away the *a*

Twain Mississ 105 Half a dozen *sound-asleep* steamboats where I used to see a solid mile of *wide-awake* ones | Ridge G 43 wheeling the *fast-asleep* baby | ib 283

the two *fast-asleep* servants | Darwin L 1.270 in what a *dead-and-half-alive* state I spent the few last days | Stedman Oxf 144 the *dead-alive* state of Anglicanism | Ridge S 69 this *dead and alive* 'ole | Shaw D *23 *half alive* people | ib 258 the triumphant, pampered, *intensely alive* woman.

14.18. Finally we find that some of these words develop a pre-adjunct form without *a-* (see my remarks in Festskrift til Thomsen [1894] 21, and Slettengren, Aphæretic Words in English 84) Whether *the eel is alive* and *he is alone* were actually felt as containing the indefinite article + an adjective, or whether the co-existence of such pairs of adverbs and adjectives as *aloud* : *loud, ahigh* : *high, around* : *round* led analogically to the shortening in these cases, the fact is that we get the new adjectives in *a live eel, live coals, a lone feeling,* Di D 36 a lone lorn creetur' (now generally *lonely*). Cf the illustrative passage in London W 81 there were *live* things and things not *alive* he must watch out for the *live* things The things not *alive* remained always in one place, but the *live* things moved about. (Rarer as in Shelley 100 into the plain Disgorged at length the dead and *the alive*)

Thus also from *astray* (some sheep are astray) we get a pre-adjunct form *stray* : Fielding T 4 294 a stray sheep | Thack N 271 stray papers While this is recognized, the parallel forms *slope* from *aslope* and *slant* from *aslant* are rare: Tennyson 328 the slope street | ib 329 the slope city || Whittier 436 In its slant splendour

Similarly the adjectives *pert*, and *wayward* (and vg *cute*) have developed from *apert*, *awayward* (*acute*), cf. I 9 96. Note also that *a head wind* corresponds to adverbial (and predicative) *ahead*, cf Clough 1 181 a *dead-ahead* wind [= 1 182 a strong *head* wind]

Across (the) country when used adjunctively becomes *cross-country· a cross-country ride* But this of course may be analyzed as containing the obs. prep *cross* or else the vb *cross*, cf. 14 7 But *breast-race* (race with the boats

abreast) cannot be thus analyzed Cambridge Trifles 107 if you're used to the Thames and breast-races (Not in NED)

Cf. also *bashed*, aphetic from *abashed*, a later example than those in NED is Bunyan G 127 with a bashed face.

14.19. Fijn van Draat, Anglia 36 23 f believes that the reason why words beginning with *a-* are not often used as pre-adjuncts is a purely rhythmical one "The prefix being unstrest., pre-position would lead to a clash of stresses" This at any rate can only be counted a subordinate cause, and van Draat's own examples show that the English are not afraid of these 'clashes' The above explanation covers the actual cases better than that given by van Draat He mentions *adust* (with two examples, before stressed syllables!), but this word (< Lat. ptc. *adustus*) has never been averse to the pre-adjunct position, see numerous examples in NED Thus also *alert* —Van Draat goes on "It is the same with other words that are commonly said to occur predicatively only *Content*, *exempt*, *ill* etc If all these just as *afraid* etc occur so rarely before the noun, it is due to the fact that relatively few nouns begin with an unstrest syllable" If that were the true explanation, it would be difficult to account for the very frequent use before nouns of *obscure*, *complete*, etc (cf on stress-shifting I 5 53), and especially the vast number of monosyllabic adjectives such as *great*, *big*, *good*, *hard*, *blind* etc etc As there has never been any disinclination to use these as pre-adjuncts, we must look for special (non-rhythmic) reasons in those rarer cases in which the position before a substantive is actually avoided, and I think the reasons given above will explain most difficulties

Adjectival Groups.

14.21. As already stated (14 11) most words that can be used predicatively can also be used as pre-adjuncts. Therefore we find in some cases longish groups transferred from the predicative position into pre-adjuncts in spite of the general aversion felt in English to those long group-adjuncts found so abundantly in German, and on the other hand adverbs (14 9) are also in some cases admitted as pre-adjuncts, because the use of an adverb as subjunct after such a verb as *is* or *becomes*

is not formally distinct from the use of a predicative adjective

First I give examples of group-pre adjuncts containing an adjective These are more literary than colloquial, apart from such set phrases as *good-for-nothing* and *good-enough* Hyphens are often used between the words of such groups when they are placed before their principal.

14.22. The order adjective + subjunct before the substantive is found with *enough* Carlyle S 35 fragments, picked often at *wide-enough* intervals | ib 80 in *dreary enough* humour | Masefield M 213 It's a *common enough* state of mind | Swinb L 101 we are on *good enough* terms together | Black P 2 98 It was a *pleasant enough* occupation.

Frequently, however, *enough* is placed after the substantive, although it is thus farther away from the word is qualifies. Swinb L 201 the attachment might be a *good thing enough* for him | Black P 2 198 It was a *dreary picture enough* | Di N 24 being a *well-meaning woman enough*. Note that in the last quotation it would have been very awkward to place *enough* after *well*

The same word-order is obligatory with *indeed*: *a very good dinner indeed* (or *indeed a very good dinner*), never *a very good indeed dinner*

14.23. Adjective + preposition and its object· Defoe G 71 a good man or a *good-for-nothing* man (also 85) | Thack P 2 187 a good-for-nothing fellow | GE M 1.306 a good-for-nothing son | GE Mm 227 || NP. *a ready to hand* proof | Shaw J 131 a *true to-life* tragedy | NP '11 Lip-reading taught to deaf and *hard-of-hearing* persons

Similar word-orders are found in · NP '11 a *heavier than-air* machine | NP '12 *lighter-than-air* craft

14.24. More often we have the order subjunct + adjective before the substantive as in German and Scand . Di D 766 it recalled that *so-different* time when . . | Wordsw 176 the sable orbs of his *yet-vivid* eyes | Merriman S 62 a *four-months-long* winter | NP '07 One ear is

an inch, the other nine inches long. While the *inch high* one is a deterioration . | Austen M 207 William, the *so-long-absent* and *dearly loved* brother | Ru F 86 the, alas, *almost unexceptionable* lot

14.25. Very frequently, the subjunct bears the character of a parenthetic restriction Wells A 75 considerations which point to the *by no means self-evident* proposition | NP 93 an *if possible more glaring* act of revolt | Ruskin S 151 the — *to me frightful* — discovery | Hardy W 125 she had given up the, *to him, depressing* idea of going | ib 137 the last hour of that, *to Barnet, eventful* year | Jackson Shaw 184 an *on-the whole lovable* little system | [James S 134 Chilver's now *independent as he felt it to be*, acquaintance with Mrs D].

The awkwardness of placing *to me* after the definite article is not much improved by placing it before *the* as in Carlyle R 1 53 a woman of *to me the fairest* descent.

Participial Groups

14.31. Participles with preceding subjuncts are generally a little unnatural as pre-adjuncts, except when the subjunct is an adverb of degree (including *well*) Sh Tw V 1 319 The *madly vs'd* Malvolio | Ru P 2.31 the ravage of a *just past* inundation | Kipl L 91 like a *many-times-repeated* kiss | ib 22 his *overlong-neglected* gear | Macdonald F 261 that *well-arranged* and *admirably carried-out* performance

a *well-known* author | a *much-needed* reform | that *much-abused* being, the general reader | Kipl S 215 a necessary but *somewhat neglected* factor in our humble scheme.

14.32. More frequently a group pre-adjunct consists of a participle and a subjunct that makes up a necessary part of the verbal idea (complemental subjunct): Sh Tim V 1 101 he's a *made-up*-villaine | Goldsm 658 She's all a *made-up* thing | Shaw 2.290 all this is a *made-up* case | GE Mm 225 the *piled-up* produce | Caine E 10 a *dammed-up*

stream | Ridge G 50 *laced-up* boots | GE A 89 resting his nose on his master's *stretched-out* leg | Galsworthy M 265 between her *stretched-out* arms | Shaw D 161 the *driven-out* party | Shaw J 240 a *cleaned out* gambler | Wilde P 16 the thin *beaten-out* leaf of tremulous gold | Holmes A 215 the lassitude of *tired-out* operatives | Wells V 89 the *built-out* bathroom | GE Mm 27 a *walled-in* maze | Kipl S 263 a baldish, *broken-down* captain.

Such a composite participle may be qualified by a preceding subjunct Puttenham 157 the *better brought vp* sort | Mill Fox 2 251 a *most successfully made up* party | Shaw D 194 he is a *well set up* man of fifty | Byron 556 Thy *yet unslept-off* revels | Hope Q 331 the dull and *long-drawn-out* ending of a piece | Shaw P 224 a *tightly fastened down* mouth

14.33. The old practice in all Germanic languages was to have the subjunct (even when it was a necessary complement) placed before the participle, there are some remnants of this in English, though the adverb and the participle are now written together as one word Sh R 2 II. 2 50 with *vp-lifted* armes | Stevenson Dy 29 their *upturned* faces | Sh Wint III 2 185 Thy *by-gone* fooleries Gissing R 97 a *bygone* day (but ib 88 and 128 in days *gone by*)

14.341. In the somewhat different case of a participle followed by a preposition it seems as if the adjunctal employment originated in the combination with *un-* Sh H4A III. 2.141 your *vnthought-of* Harry | Sh Wint IV 4 549 th'*vnthought-on* accident | Sh Cymb III. 3 24 rustling in *vnpayd-for* silke | Sh John II 1 560 this *vnlook'd for*, vnprepared pompe | Otway 265 thou wert born for yet *unheard of* wonders | Defoe G 60 What secret *unaccounted for* possession can it be | Hawthorne S 125 at many an *unthought-of* moment | Mill Fox 2.259 many hitherto *undreamed-of* conquests | McCarthy 2.307 in a wholly *unthought-of* quarter

14.342. The corresponding positive combinations are on the whole more frequent with a preceding subjunct than without one:

BJo 3 8 the *longed-for* sun | Williamson L 10 the poor, innocent, *sinned-against* car (from Sh Lr, where the combination is predicative) || Austen M 209 that *long-thought-of*, dearly-earned, and justly-valued blessing | Di D 161 on this happy and *long looked-for* occasion | Caine E 121 the *most talked-of* girl in Rome (ib 446)

A long group of this kind is used with humorous effect in Di L 52 a very small and *not over-particularly-taken-care-of* boy.

14.35. Sometimes we find participles followed by a preposition and its object as pre-adjuncts: Mered E 415 the formal *carved-in-wood* idol | Matthews A F 206 any of these *made-to-order* languages

14.36. With these participial groups we may historically place adjunct-groups with *ago*, which is an old participle = *agone*, as in Mrs Carlyle 3 16 photographs of *long-ago places* or people | Kipl J 2.273 the *long ago days* (also B 141) | Read K 28 a *years-ago liveliness* that had been softened into a love of sad fun.

14.37. Present participles with a subjunct are rare as pre-adjuncts Thack S 74 *Dining-out* snobs | Barrie MO 154 a *going-about* body. These of course may be (and should perhaps be) analyzed as containing the verbal substantive *dining-out* and *going-about* and not the participle

14.38. Apart from such combinations as *everlasting*, *ever-running* (Sh H 5 IV 1.293) and *never-ending* it is not customary to use present participles preceded by a subjunct. But *looking* is very often preceded by its predicative adjective. a *good-looking girl* | a *healthy-looking boy* | Fox 2 142 a *much older-looking* man. Cp. on the other hand Bennett C 1.231 the *seeming-quiet* provinces.

Infinitive Pre-adjuncts.

14.41. Infinitive pre-adjuncts (with *to*, thus connected with 14 6) are frequent in the whole ModE period, but generally on condition of being preceded by a subjunct, such as *not* or *never*, more rarely another adverb: Lyly C 293 whose deepe and *not-to-bee-conceiued* sighes | Sh Lr I 4 223 breaking forth In ranke, and *(not to be endur'd)* riots | B Jo 3.46 your eye descended on so mean, yet *not altogether to be despised,* an object | Quincey 94 the *never-enough-to-be-esteemed* General Post-office | Coleridge Sh 216 the *never to be too much valued* advantage of the theatre | Di T 1 18 As to this, his natural and *not to be alienated* inheritance | Di Do 487 when she met the *never-to-be-forgotten* look | Tenn L 3.220 on another *not-to-be-forgotten* day | Ru F 196 the *never to be enough damned* guilt | Ru P 1 173 the unabated, *never to be abated,* geological instinct | Mrs Carlyle F 4.164 unavoidable or *not to be avoided* current expenses | Hope Ch 214 the eternally-asked, *never-to-be-answered* question, why people could not mind their own business || Franklin A 82 that *hard-to-be-governed* passion of youth | Di Do 272 the *so-much-to-be-astonished* Chicken || Housman J 54 if once you admit election you must admit also the right of *the to-be-elected* one to refuse his candidature | NP '95 with respect to this — *to-be* — *celebrated* person

The reason why such combinations as those found in the last two quotations are generally avoided is probably the awkwardness of the encounter of two weak words *(the* or *a* + *to)*, especially when followed by the similarly weakly stressed *be*.

The following adjunct must be classed with the quotation adjuncts mentioned in 14 8. Archer Am 92 the "to be continued in our next" interest

14.42. Finally we have rare and hardly natural pre-adjunct groups containing infinitives in Fox 2.20 Hartley Coleridge's *about-to-be-published* poems | GE Life 4.196 an *impossible-to-be-realised* wish | Shaw Fab 7 at

every important port or inland trade centre, and at every *likely-to-be-important* port or centre | Shaw D* 59 a more *interesting-to-experiment-on* vertebrate | NP '95 among the *stated-to-be-possible* writers of these letters.

Other Group-adjuncts.

14.51. While in all the preceding group-adjuncts it was the predicative use that occasioned the use as adjuncts, this is not the case with the following instances of group-adjuncts, which are rather to be considered as extensions of the use of substantives as adjuncts (ch. XIII), compound substantives or substantival groups taking the place of simple substantives

Two substantives connected with *and* may together form an adjunct

a *cat and dog* life | a *horse and cow* doctor (somewhere in Hughes T) | Carlyle S 24 a *Cause-and-Effect* Philosophy | ib 86 *bread-and-water* wages | Dowden Sh-Primer 96 the lyrical *boy-and-girl* love of Lorenzo and Jessica | Ward R 2 188 a *boy and girl* match | Thack P 1 37 a staunch, unflinching *Church-and-King* man | ib 3 41 no *Faust and Margaret* business for me | Carlyle H 66 in a *life-and-death* war | Di Ch 32 his scanty *pepper and salt* trousers | Di Do 106 a *slipper and dogs' collar* man | Hope D 21 to be a groom — it's a *cup-and-ball* sort of life

14.52. The words connected with *and* need not be substantives

Di Sk 176 *blue and gold* curtains | Ward D 1 265 the *blue and chocolate* paper on the walls | Hardy W 84 a row of those *two-and-two* brick residences

14.53. A substantive + preposition + substantive may be used as an adjunct if they form a natural unity

a *man-of-war* man [ə mæn ə 'wɔ mən] | Swift T 21 in the *inns of court* chapel | Zangwill G 393 I'm no *breach-of-promise* lady | Ellis EEP 212 *West of England* vulgarisms | Henderson Sc Lit 27 a chronicle of *north of England*

events | Hardy L 100 the *end-of-the-age* young man | Norris O 217 at that *end-of-the-century* time (also id S 162, translation of *fin de siècle*) | Lecky D 1.*23 Gladstone had a wonderful eye — a *bird of prey* eye | a *rule of three* sum | Carpenter P 120 the *starvation-of-body and mind* system | the *City of London* School | Thack V 174 the *Sacrifice of Iphigenia* clock | Anstey V 50 with an easy *man-of-the-world* air | Mered E 461 Mrs Mountstuart's *woman-of-the-world* instances of folly | a *penny-in the-slot* machine (used by Shaw P* 26 your penny-in-the-slot heroes, who only work when you drop a motive into them) | the Lights on Vehicles Act | Thack S 160 drunkards and *five-o'-clock-in-the-morning* men | NP '87 no flash-in-the-pan legislation will benefit us | Norris O 203 a lazy, cattle-stealing, *knife-in-his-boot* Dago | Ru S 201 you can't quarrel in a *side-by-side* push — Many of these approach quotation adjuncts (14 8)

Cf also the familiar *a four to one chance* (e g Wells A 200) | *a six to one majority* (e g. Bennett W 2 326).

14.54. In many adjunct combinations of (outwardly) the same structure a preposition is omitted before the first substantive, because the sequence prep + subst. + prep + subst would not be tolerated in this place (a call *from* house to house, parties *from* Saturday to Monday).

a baker's man, making a *house-to-house* call every day | a *room-to-room* telephone | a *word-for-word* or a *line-for-line* translation | Carlyle H 18 a *face-to-face* and *heart-to-heart* inspection of the things | Saintsbury Eliz Lit 64 the *decade-by-decade*, almost *year-by-year* acquisition | NP'05 a *step by step* progress | Caine E 16 the characteristics that give the *hand-to-hand* touch with the common people | Wells A 45 an average *door to office* hour's journey of ten or a dozen miles | Hope I 126 they gave *Saturday-to-Monday* parties | ib 129 she was no mere *Saturday-to-Monday* visitor | Kipl L 18 the *hand-to-hand* nature of the battle (also ib 24) | Gissing G 129 the

day-to-day life | Shaw Ibs 12 the *1750—1850* view of the will as original sin | Mered R 35 engaged in *man-to-man* conversation

14.55. With the omission of the preposition should be compared NP '89 his *thick and thin* worshippers (who worship him *through* thick and thin) On the whole prepositions are often omitted in adjuncts or, what amounts to the same, in compounds, cf. Fox 2.22 a wild *horse-back* party of eleven (= party on h.) | *home* news (= news from home) | Lowell St 270 Dryden was always a *random* reader (read at random) | Keats 2.68 Came many a *tiptoe*, amorous cavalier (on tiptoe) | Mered E 110 your *tip-toe* curiosity | GE A 1 any *chance* comer (by chance) | *large-scale* butter-making (on a large scale)

14.56. I add a few more loose compound adjuncts· Kipl J 2 265 if you can understand that *upside down* sort of happiness | Mered H 469 an *upside-down* old despot | Thack H 9 the "true blue" light *six-inside* post-coach

Preposition with object.

14.61. A preposition with its object may be used as a pre-adjunct In *afternoon tea* we may say that it is not the combination of the preposition *after* + *noon* which is thus used, but that the ready-made substantive *afternoon* is the first-word of the compound *afternoon-tea*, but in most of the following examples no corresponding substantive exists Ward F 333 that *after-breakfast* fog | Beaconsf L 214 the *after-luncheon* expedition | Thack P 1 165 his supply of *after dinner* whisky-and-water | Scott Iv 68 those *over-sea* refinements | Wells A 223 dependent on an *over-seas* food supply | Lamb E 1 199 his *o'er-night* vapours | Wells L 26 not clearly remembering the *overnight* occurrences | Caine E 517 the men in *overall* pinafores | *overhead* wires | Norris O 356 the open, *above-board* fury of his mind | the *underground* railway | an *off-shore* wind | Di D 304 dressed in an *off-hand*, easy style || Sweet Trans. Philol Soc. '77—79, 454

the *before Alfred* remains of our language | Doyle S 2 106 smoking his *before-breakfast* pipe | Bentley T 369 my *before-bedtime* constitutional | Shaw J 264 the very old-fashioned and *behind-the-times* public school | Mered R 17 a monotonous *betweenwhiles* kind of talk The last five examples are nonce-adjuncts, while the preceding ones are every-day expressions It shoud be noted that with one exception (*behind the times*) the object has no article nor any other qualifying word.

The following two quotations show a very rare kind of pre-adjunct, the whole prepositional group being made to supply the want of a special participle· Byron 662 Unto a perishable and perishing, Even *on the very eve of perishing*, world | Ru P 2 11 he being then an ordained or *on the point of being ordained*, priest

14.62. In some cases the preposition in such combinations is preceded by an adverb; thus especially *out of* and *up to* Scott A 2. 199 *out-of-door* vocations | Fox 2 106 an *out-of-doors* party | Gissing R 223 out-of-doors coat | Lamb E 1 140 strangers and *out-of-date* kinsfolk | Hope Q 49 his doubtless *out-of-date* view | Fielding T 2 85 such *out-of-fashion* romantic nonsense | Defoe G 109 the most crooked, *out of shape* tree | NP '06 this *out-of-the-ordinary* young man | NP '06 few *out-of-Parliament* speeches | Lamb E 1 226 *out-of-place* hypocrisy | Doyle S 5 49 the poor *out-of-work* specialist | NP '07 go in for a *right-out-in-the-middle-of-the-kitchen* range || Byron DJ 12 32 Each *out-at-elbow* peer | Thack S 113 this huge, dreary, *out-at-elbows* place || Shaw P 205 the *up-to-date* Chicagoan | Amr NP '11 Dar-es-Salaam, the *up-to-the-minute* capital of German East Africa | Di Do 274 a rough and tough, and possibly an *up-to-snuff*, old vagabond || NP the costermonger retails his goods at a *next-to-nothing* profit | NP '10 *near-at-hand* spectators

14.63. Where Shakespeare had *without door* as an adjunct (Wint II 1 69 Prayse her but for this her without-dore-forme), the expression now is *outdoor*, which is formed in an different way, as *out* is not in itself used as

a preposition, the opposite is *indoor* (which also is irregular instead of *within door*) or sometimes *indoors*. Examples. Austen E 29 no *in-doors* man | Pinero B 76 a rattling good *indoor*, as well as *outdoor* wife | Ellis M 172 driving women out of healthy *out-door* avocations into unhealthy *indoor* avocations. Cf. also Stedman O 99 men invite their *out-College* friends. The leaving out of *with* in *without* may be compared with that in *drawing-room* for *withdrawing-room*

But *inside* (as in Thack P 1 308 an inside place in the coach) and *outside* (outside passengers, etc) are differently formed, as *in* and *out* do not govern *side* as their object

14.64. As *up* in *up the tree* and *down* in *down the street* must be considered as prepositions, we must class here also such combinations as Di D 510 an *upstairs* room | Thack V 123 the *upstairs* maid | Trollope D 1.284 one of the *upstairs* sofas | Ward R 2.156 in the *downstairs* room | Ward F 201 the *upstairs* door | Darwin L 1.321 It is *uphill* work writing books which cost money in publishing | a *downhill* walk | Stevenson MB 137 a vast amount of truly *down-East* calculation | Archer A 19 the huge *down-town* buildings | ib 23 the *up-town* riverside region

Along before its objects is shortened into *'long*, when the group is used as an adjunct (cf 14.18), as in Stevenson M 11 a little *'long shore* fishing

14.65. As the past participle *past* (= *passed*) has become a regular preposition, we have corresponding adjuncts consisting of *past* + its object Sh Alls II. 1.124 our *past-cure* malladie | ib IV. 3.158 what a *past-saving* slaue is this? Cf. the modern *a past-due-protest*. — A somewhat similar case is *worth while*, in which *while* is the object of the adjective, it is rarely used as a pre-adjunct: Sinclair R 244 a *worth while* play or book

14.66. Even prepositions from the classical languages are used in this way to form pre-adjuncts: Hope Q 274 *ante-marriage* days || Quincey 197 Mr *Anti-*

slavery Clarkson | Ru F 128 *anti-feminine-slavery* colleges | Spencer F 85 chairs unpleasant to sit in — *anti-caller* chairs they might be named | Wells A 167 an *anti-foreign* party | Archer A 156 the *anti-English* bias | NP '12 the *anti-suffrage* movement is not an *anti-woman* movement || the *Inter-Church* Conference | *interstate* affairs | an *inter-island* steamer | international, *inter-club*, *inter-team*, *inter-college* or *inter-school* contests (NED) || GE L 1 21 in the *pre-railroad*, *pre-telegraphic* period | Wells A 101 a bunch of *pre-Johannesburg* Transvaals | Wells A 44 the limit of the *pre-railway* city | Wells M 89 the good old *pre-board school* days | Barrie M 222 in your *pre-smoking* days || Wells U 325 a vindictively *pro-foreigner* attitude | *pro-foreign* proclivities | NP a *pro-Belgian*, or rather *pro-King Leopold* speaker

14.67. A few combinations of preposition + object may be used alone (predicatively): Ward R 2 307 she had been *off-hand* with Mrs T | Bennett W 1.151 I wish to be perfectly open and *aboveboard*. These may be said to be practically adjectives. — By the side of *off-hand* we find the anomalous formation in *-ed*: Masefield C 31 the *off-handed* ease

The adjectivification of these and connected groups is sometimes shown by a derivative in *-ness*: Ru P 2 50 their quiet *out-of-the-wayness* | Collier E 190 the *at-homeness* | Cooley Human Nat 304 a sense of congeniality and *at-homeness* | NP '98 the minuteness and *up-to-dateness* of his information | Dickinson R 87 the *worth-whileness* of life | Butler E 196 the language is in the *heart-to-heartness* of the thing

Verb with object, etc.

14.71. In 8.6 we have considered the formation of substantives from (formless) verbs plus their objects. Such substantives like any other substantives may be used as adjuncts; the oldest examples I know are *our breakbacke burdens* and *my breakneck fall*, both of them

quoted from Heywood (1556 and 1562) in the NED. In Shakespeare I have found the following examples·

Lucr 806 the *tell-tale* day | R3 IV. 4.149 these *tell-tale* women | As II 7.21 with *lack-lustre* eye | Hml IV. 7.123 this 'should' is like a *spendthrift* sigh

In some cases, it may be doubtful whether the word is a principal or an adjunct, thus Merch I 3 112 You call me misbeleeuer, *cut-throate* dog [where a comma before *dog* would be quite natural, changing *cut-throate* into a principal] | Ven 657 This *carry-tale*, dissentious jealousie (cf LL V 2 463)

14.72. In recent times, these combinations have become very frequent indeed, they evidently meet a want by offering a simple means of forming adjuncts from verbal phrases, where the ending *-ing* would be inconvenient The parallelism with that ending as used in the simple verb is seen, for instance, in Tennyson Tiresias 44 their *knowing* and *know-nothing* books . in your *know-all* chapel

Other examples Cowper L 1.81 a *tie-wig*, square-toe figure | Carlyle S 186 the leaps from raft to raft were too often of a *break-neck* character | id R 2 271 the invalid carriage was evidently a *catch-penny* humbug (in the same way *catch-penny* Goldsm NED 1759) | a *catch-cold* weather (NED) | GE M 2 152 delicious *do-nothing* days | Trollope D 1 218 those stupid *do-nothing* days | Thack N 472 such a *tell-tale* face (also id P 1.278 and very frequent) | Meredith E 286 the paternal *pat-back* order of pity (nonce-word) | Austen S 296 a short and *take-leave* call | *crack-jaw* words | Stevenson MB 227 the *slap-dash* inconsequence of Byron's Don Juan | Egerton K 44 my *want-wit* agitation | Caine C 14 this hospital nursing is going to be a *lock-jaw* business | Di Do 208 a *dreadnought* pilot-coat, and a pair of *dreadnought* pilot-trousers (in this sense obsolete) | Wells L 39 at the *wash-hand* stand.

14.73. A personal pronoun is the object (cf 8 65) in *catch'em-alive paper* ('*em* = flies) and in the nonce-formations Kipl MOP 188 he had seen rather more *help-*

yourself fighting than most men | Bennett W 1.213 a haughty *put-you-in-your-place* beauty.

The object of the verb in such combinations is a verb (infin., cf. 8 66) in: *hear-say* evidence | Sidney 1580 (NED) with *hear-say* pictures | Ru Sel 2 77 a *make-believe* light | Sully Study of Childh. 38 a kind of *make-believe* game (rarely with the sb as in NP '08 this *make-belief* legislation) *Shift* is probably the substantive, not the verb in *makeshift* (legislation, etc.)

14.74. By this adjunctal use of words consisting of verb + object English has departed from the other languages possessing the same kind of substantives (8 61). Owing to the want of inflexion in adjectives they resemble adjectives, and as a matter of fact most dictionaries recognize the more usual ones among them as adjectives *Breakneck*, which in Shakespeare's time was only a substantive meaning 'a dangerous business' is now hardly ever used except as an adjective meaning 'dangerous'. Thus also *dare-devil* as in Thack V 345 the dare-devil excitement and chances of her life *Hangdog* originally means a man who catches stray dogs to hang them, but as this occupation has disappeared, it is now used only as an adjective 'abject' (Thack P 3.386 with a hang-dog look, Ward D 3 11, etc.)

The adjectival character of these combinations is shown outwardly (1) when they take adverbs like *very*, *most*, (2) when they are able to stand alone, as predicatives, etc., and (3) when we have derivatives in *-ry*, etc. Examples of these phenomena.

(1) GE L 215 in a *very makeshift* manner | Thack S 117 in the direst and *most cutthroat* spirits | Doyle M 27 I had a *very tell-tale* face | id SF 123 It's a *most breakneck* place.

(2) Haggard S 307 the downward march was still sufficiently *break-neck* | Di N 674 Look a little brisker, man, and not so *hang-dog like* | Mered E 285 he would have been *hangdog* abject | Stevenson MP 31 there is no

feature in man *so tell-tale* as his spectacles | Kipl S 246 how you can make Latin prose much more *cock-eye* [= 'squinting'] than it is

(3) Hope R 188 (and often) *dare-devilry* | Austen M 353 *do-nothingness* | Carlyle R 1 160 *do-nothingism* | Hope In 248 there is a *thank-heaveny* atmosphere of pronounced density about Lady B. | a *catch-coldy* person (NED)

14.751. The power of forming adjuncts of this type is extended to other verbal phrases, in which there is no object, and it serves the same purpose of dispensing with participles or verbal sustantives in *-ing* As *lean-to-ing* is totally excluded, and as *leaning-to* cannot be easily used before a substantive (the only parallel I can think of is *a lying-in hospital*), the simple form *lean-to* is used as in GE M 1 37 a lean-to pig-sty, *lean-to* is thus practically a new participle Similarly *stand-up* in *a stand-up fight* (ib 1.210) is practically a verbal substantive, corresponding to *running* in *a running match*, while in *stand-up collars* (ib 1 257) it equals a present participle

Examples (I have only recent ones):

[Swift T 28 two junior *start-up* societies, cf 8 67] | 1802 (NED) that *die-away* Miss | Quincey 277 a *stand-up* fight (also GE, Shaw 2 31, C 270) | Di D 750 a little, dirty, *tumble-down* public-house (also Di N 151, GE A 9 Trollope D 2 137, Mc Carthy 2 183, etc) | Di D 154 and 493 a *turn-up* bedstead | Di Do 353 a *fly-away* bonnet | Di N 334 a *lay down* collar | ib 471 the best *button-over* jacket (not in NED) | ib 29 his *lace-up* half-boots (also Zangwill G 303, Philips L 19) | Stevenson Dy 56 a *lean-to* shed | Di Sk 486 a regular *sit-down* supper (also Merrimen V 242, etc) | Ridge L 282 and G 89 a *hand-round* supper | Norris P 50 just a *pick-up* lunch | Hardy W 6 a *sit-still* party . . . . a dancing-party was the alternative | Darwin L 1 391 What a *go-ahead* nation it is | Trollope O 208 these *stand-off* sort of fellows | Stevenson VP 84 folios full of *knockdown* arguments (also id MB 138, Mc Carthy 2 564, Caine M 425, spelt *knock-down*) | Lecky D 1 19 vote on

what is called the '*turn-about* system' These people, they will say, have had their turn; it is now the turn of the others | the *look-out* man on board | Bennett W 1.242 the new *roll-down* iron shutter | Williamson L 84 *turnover* collars | Shaw J 14* *peg-away* industry | Masefield C 189 from *turn-to* time | Herrick M 219 in their *hold-up* game.

The form *run* is probably the participle in Defoe R 2.100 the run away savage (also ib 101), but in *a run-away match* it is probably the infinitive, perhaps also in recent use as in Shaw C 14 *a runaway boy* it must rather be taken as ptc than as an infin Cf 8. 67

14.752. Austen M 41 an indolent, *stay-at-home* man (also Thack E 2.121, GE L 3,93, Stevenson JH 135, etc.) | Hope Ch 148 a *stick-in-the-mud* Tory | NP '94 any *fly-by-the-sky* scheme | Hardy F 70 poor little *come-by-chance* children (*come* might be ptc.) | *go-to-meeting* clothes.

14.76. We find the same indications of these combinations being taken as adjectives as in a previous section (14 74).

(1) Trollope O 195 the *most stay-at-home* person that I ever heard of | Doyle S 1.65 I am a *very stay-at-home* man | Carpenter LC 31 the *more go-ahead* women.

(2) Ellis Trans Philol. Soc. 1888 81 but then America is *so go-ahead* | Wells U 146 a *very go-ahead looking* little port | Ward R 1.50 Catherine is *so stand-off* (also Shaw J 54, 103) | GE M 2.243 the great buildings were as dreary and *tumble-down* as ever | Norris P 159 Laura is *so fly-away* (also London A 182).

(3) Shaw J 73 dont be too *stand-offish* | Barrie W 107 *standoffishness* | *don't-care-ism* (NED), *don't-carish* (Muret's Dict)

14.77. In one case it is not the infinitive that enters into the combination, and we see how the rarely felt want of an active participle corresponding to the (hypothetical) past tense is remedied: *a would-be critic once said* Note here that *critic* is really the predicative of *be*; the subject of the sentence is the whole group-prin-

cipal *a would-be critic*; but quite naturally *critic* comes to be looked upon as a principal, to which *would-be* is then an adjunct. Cf. Tennyson 561 She the *would-be widow wife*. When *would-be* has an adjective as predicative, it similarly fills the rôle of a subjunct, as in Wells L 297 a long rambling *would-be clever* letter. — *Should-be* is rare in this way: Couch Titania 167 The *would-be-evening*, *should-be-mourning* suit

14.78. In *mock turtle soup* we have originally the adjunct *mock-turtle* composed of the verb *mock* and its object. But in many similar combinations the object is felt to be an independent principal, and *mock* then is taken as its adjunct· Di Do 187 with a smile of *mock courtesy* | Hawthorne S 213 garments of *mock holiness* | Caine C 187 in her *mock sealskin*. Dictionaries now give *mock* as an adjective meaning 'not genuine' without exactly explaining its grammatical origin. Before an adjective it is even a kind of subjunct· Shaw 1 "12 the farfetched *mock-Scriptural* title | Bennett HL 273 he put on a *mock-rueful* smile.

The way in which *sham* from being a verb with an object becomes an adjective is exactly analogous· Congreve 267 his *sham-sickness* shan't excuse him | Fielding 3 424 from such *sham applause* | modern pun: champagne [*sham* pain] to your real friends, and real pain to your *sham* friends | Meredith E 91 they will not have real greatness above them, so they have *sham*.

14.791. We have a transitional form between the type *tell-tale face* and the quotation adjuncts to be soon treated, when an adjunct consists of an imperative sentence, that may sometimes be continued in an indicative sentence, many of the quotations belong to the jocular style

Hughes T 2.100 a dirty, bargain-driving, *buy-cheap-and-sell-dear* aristocracy | Vachell H 150 John was of the *look-before-you-leap*, the *think-before-you-speak*, sort | NP '06: a wrestling match . . in the '*catch-as-catch-can*' style | Amr

NP '12 an announcement fashioned after the *get-rich-quick* literature | Doyle NP '11 in an unctuous, *make-everything-easy* voice | NP '09 the Broadway *pay-as-you-enter* cars | Di Pw 1 100 a little man with a puffy *Say-nothing-to-me,-or-I'll-contradict-you* sort of countenance | Kipl ST 4 wan av thim lamblike, bleatin', *pick-me-up-an'-carry-me-or-I'll-die* gurls

14.792. With *give and take*, etc as adjuncts should be compared the corresponding use of such groups as substantives (§ 26). Di Do 8 a well-matched, fairly balanced *give-and-take* couple | ib 225 It's a *give-and-take* affair | Mered E 175 charming colloquy, the sweetest *give and take* rattle he had ever enjoyed with a girl. || GE Mm 54 any *hide-and-seek* course of action | Di N 270 *touch-and-go* farce | ib 106 the *cut-and-thrust* Counts in melodramatic performances | Lowell St 250 the *hop-skip-and-jump* theory of versification.

Quotation Adjuncts.

14.81. A quoted phrase, a motto or a by-word may be used as an adjunct (cf quotation substantives § 2). First I give some instances in which the quotation contains no verb.

Norris O 559 we want a *yes or no* answer | Hazell's Ann '87 Mr Bright is not what is called a "*peace-at-any-price*" man | Fox 2.15 Carlyle thinks everything conducted on the *least happiness for the greatest number* principle | Cooley, Human Nature 5 a decline of public spirit and an *every-man-for-himself* feeling | NP '12 the *two keels to one* policy | Collingwood R 58 the *'early-to-bed'* plan was impracticable | Thack P 3.129 he took the *not guilty* side of the case | Smedley F 1.45 with a "*quite at home*" kind of air | Hughes T 2 247 in a more than usually *no-business-of-yours* line | Holmes A 322 he is the real, genuine, *no-mistake* Osiris | Wells U 100 the outright *Return-to-Nature* Utopians

14.82. Next we have regular sentences with subject and verb, etc., used as quotation adjuncts, as in Lowell 329 With an *I-turn-the-crank-of-the-Universe* air | Mered H 395 Rose is spiritually self-willed; a *'she will' or 'she won't'* sort of little person | Kipl L 82 such an aggressive, cock-sure, *you-be-damned* fellow | Wells V 68 all the old *"Well, and how are we?"* note gone | Shaw D *51 using the *"youre another"* retort | NP Chemist smiling in a *won't-you-pay-up* manner | Grand T 19 Roderick Random is a kind of *king-can-do-no-wrong* young man | ib 38 their mother had a comfortable *as-it-was-in-the-beginning-is-now-and-ever-shall-be* feeling about them

14.83. While these are nonce-formations, one sentence has become permanently settled as a pre-adjunct, namely *devil-may-care,* which may even take the subjunct *rather*· Hankin 2 15 a handsome, rather devil-may-care young man

Adverbs used as adjuncts

14.9. Some (but by no means all) adverbs can be used as adjuncts before substantives This is especially the case with such short and everyday adverbs as have no corresponding adjectives, this accounts for the frequency of *then* in this employment as compared with the rarity of *now,* which has the adjective *present* to express the same notion. — With this section should be compared the shifted adjuncts mentioned in ch XII, especially 12 27.

14.91. *Adverbs of time*

Then (NED 1653 the then great design, and similar combinations, are grammatically ambiguous as *then* may be subjunct to *great*) NED 1584 the *then duke* of Northumberland | Sh Cor II 2 93 (only place in Sh) our *then Dictator* | Franklin 68 the *then state* of my mind (also 74,113) | Lamb E 2 175 the *then Drury-lane theatre* (also R 91) | By DJ 4.96 Juan's *then* ordeal | ib 7 37 | Coleridge B 44 in my *then opinion* | Di Pw 2 78 in his *then state* of

intellectual complication | Carlyle R 141 on the *then terms* | ib 170 in my *then Annandale summers* | Ru P 1 254 in my *then fashion* | Seeley E 69 In the *then condition* of the world

now· NED 1444 the saide *nowe maistur* | not Sh | BJo 3 186 your *now mistress* | Carlyle R 1 225 one child of the *now Mrs Montagu's* own | Mered E 100 Crossjay's father, the *now captain* of marines.

once. NED 1548 the *once sacrifice* | 1691 the *once generalissimo* | not Sh | By DJ 10.20 the *once thinkers* | Thack N 712 her *once-husband* | Jerome T 82 the *once Miss Ramsbotham*.

oft, often (for use with verbal substantives, see 12 271) NED 1526 thyne *often diseases* Now only in the combination *oftentimes* (e g Defoe G 66), archaic *ofttimes*, cf ME *oft(e)-sithe(s)*, e g. Ch G 1031

seldom (with verbal sbs, see 12 271) NED 1528 an exceadinge selden gyfte | Sh Sonn 52 (only place in Sh) the fine point of seldome pleasure | Twain M 107 the seldomest spectacle. Now scarcely ever found (*rare* supplies the want)

14.92. *since*, rare (NED only 1598, 1700, 1849 Froude) Ru P 2 77 my since experience

after (cf compounds like *afterthought, after-birth*, which cannot be separated from the following combinations). Sh Ro II 6.2 That after houres with sorrow chide vs not | Sh Sonn 90 And doe not drop in for an after losse | Coleridge B 51 in his after writings (also 6,45) | Di N 40 they might prove of some after use | GE L 2 234 an after sadness belonging to brief-interrupted intercourse | Ru T 161 in after life | Dobson F 5 in after years | Poe S 94 a scene which no after events have been able to efface

hereafter is not quite indubitably an adjunct in Sh H6 A II 2 10 that hereafter ages may behold what ruine happened; thus also R 3 IV 4.390. NED has some examples with verbal sbs

hitherto (quotations in NED from Mad. d'Arblay, Newman, and Green) Ru F 134 these hitherto seditions

whilom (archaic and rare) Merriman S 17 the whilom rival of Moscow (also 137)

evermore Sh Sonn 147 frantick madde with euer-more vnrest, thence probably Tennyson 298 my evermore delight Not as adj in NED

Here may also be mentioned the following compounds Sh R 2 I 2.54 thy *sometimes* brothers wife | Sh R 2 V 1 37 Good sometime(s) queene (ib V 5 75) | Norris O 60 The *one-time* writing-teacher of a young ladies' seminary | Hardy L 15 the death of the *aforetime* vicar of Gaymead | Mered H 56 an *erewhile* bondsman

14.93. *Late* in the sense 'that was recently' as in *the late Lord Mayor, his late wife* is distinct from the originally adjectival use in *late hours, of late years*, it must originate in the adverbial use, as in *John Smith, late Lord Mayor of London*, or (Spencer, NED) *Late king, now captive, late lord, now forlorne*

14.941. *Adverbs of place.*

Adverbs of place may sometimes be used as pre-adjuncts before verbal substantives implying motion or stay, though nowadays post-position is preferred (15 73) [ME Sirith 108 at his *hom come* | ib 293 til min *hom come*] | Sh R2 I 3 267 thy *home return* (Err I. 1 60) | Wint I 2 450 my *hence departure* | Mcb IV 3 133 thy *heere approach* | ib IV. 3 148 my *heere remain* in England | Scott Iv 67 the apprehended contamination of his *nearer approach*.

14.942. We have adjunct forms in *-ward* corresponding to the adverbs which generally end in *-wards* in colloquial speech, though very often in *-ward* in the written language (see Morphology on adverbial *-s*). Scott Iv 71 of a right *onward* and simple kind | Macaulay B 191 the history of his *downward* progress | Tenn 127 their little *streetward* sitting-room | ib 258 as mounts the *heaven-ward* altar-fire | ib 258 an *upward* mind | Wells A 278

the *abyssward* drift | Gosse D 196 Fine skies infatuate the *upward* gazer upon windy days | Wells T 7 his *sky-ward* stare

Straightforward is now much more frequent as a real adjective than as an adv , Mered E 358 I'm the straightforwardest of men — The adjectival character is shown most distinctly by the possibility of the formations *straightforwardly* (adv) and *straightforwardness* (sb), but the above-mentioned forms in *-ward* have not become real adjectives

14.95. *Here* in the vg *this here boy* and *there* in the (rarer) vg *that there boy* may be looked upon as a kind of subjunct to *this*, *that*, or as an adjunct to the substantive, cf the post-adjunct which is recognized, as in Sh Hml II 2 577 this player here Both are joined together vulgarly in Bennett A 49 This 'ere works 'ere

hither (very frequent, NED from 1387 on) and *thither* (less frequent): Swift P 39 the hither end of our metropolis | Huxley in Darwin L 2 179 a few years on the hither and thither side of thirty | Ru Sel 1 264 on the hither side of the table | Bridges E 47 their hither flight | Mered H 142 the hither shore

above (frequent = above-mentioned, above-written): Bronte P 11 the above letter In another sense we have post-position the Powers above (= in Heaven)

under, beneath: Sh Cor IV 5 98 all the vnder fiends (†) | Thack P 3 35 in an under tone | Ru Sel 1 106 the under mountain form | Bennett W 2 143 the under portion || Sh Timon I 1 44 this beneath world (†) — *The under-lip* will most often be looked upon as a compound; but that *under* is felt as a separate word, is seen in Poe 339 the magnificent turn of the short upper lip — the soft voluptuous slumber of the *under*

off frequent in *the off side* | the *off leader* (the horse to the right) | Kipl L 29 on the *off-chance* of another round | NP '96 the offest of off chances.

Cf. also *off and on*: Wordsw P 4 187 the off and on companion of my walk | Black F 2.276 your off and on relation with him

14.961. *Far* used to be frequently employed as an adjective, thus OE, ME, EIE; now it is hardly anything but an adverb, apart from a comparatively few fixed combinations, *the Far West* (*North*, etc), a *far horizon, the far end* ('the very end') In the Bible, Luke 15 13, where the Authorized and Revised Versions have *into a far country*, the XXth Cent Translation has *into a distant land* But apart from *a far country* (often) and *a farre land* (Deut 29 22) the AV has adjectival *far* only in Mark 13.34 *a farre iourney* Shakespeare and Milton have *far* only as an adverb Quotations: More U 27 the farre contreys | Swift 3 301 from a far place | ib 3 305 from a very far country | GE A 38 . set up his tent in a far country (biblically) | ib 192 he was seated in his far corner | ib 193 she hastened her step towards the far deal table | Ru S 199 sight of far horizon | James S 25 | Merriman S 136 | Shaw C 94 the train came into hearing in the far distance | ib 95 the far sound of the train | Gissing R 158 those far memories | Dickinson R 77 a far river.

Now the compounds *far-off* and *far-away* are preferred as adjuncts, they never occur in the AV in that employment. Sh used *far-off* in this way in his first period (Luc 1386 those farre of eyes), and Milton similarly twice in his first period We have also other similar compounds as adjuncts Ritchie M 234 in those *far-back* Roman days | Hardy F 416 to make a bargain for a *far-ahead* time.

In the comparative and superlative, *further (farther)* and *furthest (farthest)* are freely used as adjuncts, whereas the combinations with *off* are rare except as adverbs.

14.962. *Near* as an adjunct or adjective seems to be derived from the adverb (examples in NED from the 14th c. on) *a near relative*, etc In America we have an adjunct compound corresponding to those with *far* Norris O 89 the few *nearby* trees | Worth S 7 in a *near-by* town.

14.963. Though *about* cannot be used adjunctively cf. 14 1 on *a-*), *roundabout* can, as in Thackeray's *Roundabout Papers*

When Wordsworth (p 207) writes *the round ocean*, it seems to mean 'surrounding, seen all round, the ocean round us', and thus is an adjunct use of the adverb *round*

14.97. *Other adverbs as adjuncts.*

14.971. From the predicative use *I am well* it is customary in America, but not in England, to derive a pre-adjunct use all the *well passengers* | Williamson S 17 a strong, *well girl* | London A 10 the *well men* As a principal in NP (US) '10 The lame can walk with the same ease as *the well* — In a different way *well day* 12 43

14.972. While *well-to-do* is pretty frequent as a pre-adjunct (*w people*, etc), *well-off* and *ill-off* are rare in the same position, as in Barrie M 430 some *ill-off body*, though this employment is really presupposed by the use as a principal in Spencer M 73 those who are relatively *well-off* no consolation to *the ill-off*.

14.973. *Ill* was formerly extremely frequent as a pre-adjunct with all kinds of substantives, see e. g the long list in Schmidt's Sh-lex This is now obsolete, apart from the proverb *It is an ill wind that blows nobody any good* (Quincey 267 with *which* instead of *that* and without *any*; cf. Di D 205 What wind blows you here? Not an ill wind, I hope?). Poetically, *ill* is thus used in Tennyson 270 Doubt and Death, Ill brethren In ordinary prose, *ill* is now only found as an adjunct in certain fixed combinations, which are to be considered as compounds and are often written with a hyphen (especially *ill-luck*, *ill-health*, *ill-temper*, *ill-will*) I subjoin a list of quotations, giving only the substantive, unless the words are joined by a hyphen in the editions employed. Caxton R 28 lyf | Ascham S 69 men | Lyly C 289 face | Swift J 9 and 58 company | ib T 112 ill ways (= 'bad roads') Defoe P 92 language | id R 14 fate | id G 6 and R 2 133

conduct | ib 10 pilotes | Fielding T 2.2 success | ib 137 success, ill-will | ib 3.169 man | ib 4 212 stars | Lamb R 52 dream | Austen M 30 effects | ib 163 opinion | Austen P 248 consequence | Coleridge B 19 conformation of body | Di D 260 health | Thackeray N 181 fate | ib 699 the union had taken an ill turn (now frequent: do an ill turn to somebody) | ib 727 behaviour | ib 727 companion | Carlyle R 1.118 maternal ill-qualities | ib 125 diet | Poe 230 ill-looks | Stevenson MB 73 circumstance | id JHF 31 things | id A 66 an ill thing poorly done is an ill thing top and bottom | id JH 55 ill-looks | ib 73 conscience | id M 211 my ill-news | ib 238 ill-effect | Haggard C 261 ill-counsellor | Grand T 37 in ill odour | Carpenter P 60 ill-passions | Doyle S 2 220 service. - The compound character is shown by the adjective *infinite* (which before a real adjective would be *infinitely*) in Wells T 115 birds of infinite ill omen

The obsolete use of *ill* as a real adjective is also seen in the predicative use (now supplanted by *evil* or *bad*) in Caxton R 57 is he euyl or good false and ylle — In the PE *I am ill* (= 'unwell'), *ill* is an adverb, as also when it is rarely used instead of the more frequent *badly* as a subjunct to adjectives or verbs Beaconsf L 424 The Duke of Brecon would not have dined ill had he honoured this household

14.974. *So-so* is sometimes used as an adjunct in the sense 'indifferent, not quite good' By DJ 13.82 a so-so matron | Coleridge (in Campbell's ed XXX) I am a so-so chemist Cf the predicative use with *very* in Collingwood Ru 28 Mrs. Ruskin, in a letter, finds the poetry very so-so

Headlong is pretty frequent adjunctively. Kipl S 128 headlong inquisition | Wells N 45 headlong, aimless and haphazard methods

Extempore occurs in this use (in *extempore verses*, etc.) as far back as Ben Jonson (NED) In 18th c. it was

often written *extempory*, the ending being adapted to the ordinary adjective ending

14.98. The adverb *otherwise* is joined to a post-adjunct in. thoughts wise and otherwise | Thack S 70 kind souls, snobbish or otherwise | Hewlett Q 191 things of interest, moral and otherwise—and from this is deduced the rare pre-adjunct use in Jerome T 112 the wise and otherwise things they did | Ru P 2 234 the fortunate, or otherwise, meaning

Similarly, from the often quoted line in Campbell's Pleasures of Hope "like angel-visits, few and far between" (Di Do 113 glimpses few and far between, of Florence) we get the pre-adjunct in Holmes A 41 our few and far-between racing stables | Hardy L 181 such old-fashioned and far-between people

14.99. Other adverbs are not employed in this way except when they go in pairs Hardy F 264 taking an *up-and-down survey* before retiring | Wells T 47 he proclaimed himself an utter *out-and-out failure* | Doyle S 2 133 like these *out-and-out* pirates who will leave no survivor from a captured ship | NP his *out-and-out* defence of the Establishment | Archer A 25 the flashing *out-and-in* electric advertisements --Cf. *off and on* above 14 75.

Chapter XV.

Adjuncts. Concluded.

Two Adjuncts

15.11. One and the same principal may have two or more adjuncts before it. This presents no grammatical interest when they are strictly coordinated, as in Thack N 59 some *pert little satirical* monitor | Di T 1.54 a *stinking little black* court-yard

The order of the several adjuncts is naturally regulated by the order in which the ideas present themselves

to the mind of the speaker, and no general rule can therefore be established in those cases in which the adjuncts are strictly coordinated But very often different relations obtain between the several adjuncts and the principal, and then it is possible to give some rules of precedence for certain adjuncts

15.121. Adjuncts indicating quantity and number ("quantifiers") precede other adjuncts *much* red wine | *many (few, five)* black hats | *every (any)* new book | *all* short notes, etc Thus also with *double* double the amount, and *half* half this army | half an army Note the difference between *half another cup* (when one has had a whole cup, or more) and *another half-cup* (when one has had half a cup)

Besides *half a crown* we have also *a half-crown* as a compound substantive, thus also *a half-dozen* (Thack V 53.128, etc) | ib 352 *a half score times* | ib 82 in *a half-score* of walks in *a half-hundred* of corridors | Twain M 168 *a half dollar* | Hope D 90 *a half-sovereign, three half-crowns,* and a shilling | Aldrich S 59 with *a half smile* on his lip, etc —Sometimes the two expressions are blended and we get *a* put twice Black P 2 36 I shall be lying in this bed, with *a half-a-dozen* of you round about | Twain M 168 I've told you *a half a dozen* times before

15.122. This explains the tendency to place numerals before *first, last, next,* as in Spect 167 the three next pictures | Franklin 45 the two first | Sheridan 276 the four first acts | By DJ 9 61 The two first feelings | Austen M 241 the two first dances | Austen E 79 the eight first lines | Ruskin P 1 215 the two first books (also Stevenson A 33)

15.123. But there is a conflicting tendency in such cases to place the numeral last and thus connect it with the substantive (cf. the unification of plurals 5 1, especially 5 16), as in Swift T 63 the first three strollers | Kingsley H X the last four years had decided the fate of Rome | Di D 221 for the next two days | Stevenson A 34 In the next four phrases | Shaw D 220 our last four Prime Ministers —Always *the first few years*

Pedants have objected to combinations like *the three first lines* on the absurd plea that there is only one first line (as if it were not possible to speak of the first years of one's life!). Earle (Engl Prose 265) prefers the order *the first three* to *the three first*, because it is possible to say *the first twenty*, etc, whereas *the twenty first* would clash with the ordinal of 21 Sweet (NEGr § 1791) does not see the psychological reason for the two word-orders when he says: "When the two modifiers are about equally balanced, the order may vary, as in *the two first weeks, the first two weeks*" On the history of both orders see NED *first* 1e and Lounsbury SU 127 ff

15.13. A similar conflict exists with regard to the relative position of *other* and a numeral, the usual order is to place the numeral first, *the two others* (cf 17.75 on the ending *-s*) Thus Austen M 199 the pleased looks of the three others standing round him | James S 48 to join the two others

But the opposite order is frequent, even when the unification is not obvious. Sh Cymb III 3 76 he that strikes The venison first, shall be the lord o'th' feast, To him *the other two* shall minister | Franklin 47 to mention *the other two* | Scott Iv 452 three arrows . one . *the other two* | Stevenson T 140 one of *the other four* (also 142, 175, B 182) | Wells A 84 what we do not detect in *our other two* elements

Without a defining word this is no longer possible as in AV Math 4 21 he saw other two brethren (in 20th C. V he saw two other men who were also brothers), Black Ph 355 "we wished to go on to Lockerbie, so as to reach Edinburgh *in other two days*" does not seem to be natural (Scotch?) Cf 17 112 *other some*

15.14. Pronominal adjuncts generally precede other adjuncts, as in *my new dress* | *this (the) black ball* | *the same rickety chair*, etc. Note the precedence of the quantitative adjunct in *all my money* | *both your eyes*, but on the other hand *your two eyes*.

The obsolete combination in Bunyan G 11 'for these, and *other my* ungodly practices' is indefinite, while *my other practices* would be definite Thus Sh Wiv II 2 258, H4B IV. 4 53, Lr I 4 259.

15.151. In many cases the two adjuncts are not really coordinate, as one, which is then placed last, belongs closely to the substantive and forms one composite idea with it: Quincey 76 poor afflicted *human nature* | McCarthy 2.240 the Polish cause had been the political *first love* of many a man | a successful *literary career* | Galsworthy M 133 broken *wooden boxes*

Di N 44 in *high good humour* | Kingsley H 335 in *high good-humour* [notice the hyphen] | Stevenson JHF 149 a combination of great prudence and *great good luck* | Hardy F VII by *great good fortune* | Bennett W 2.321 by that *strange good fortune* | Archer A 71 gaily, humorously, and in *perfect good temper* | Masefield C 35 *extreme short sight* (*Perfect* and *extreme* here approach the function of an adjective-subjunct, cf. 15 2)

Note also the combinations with a superlative in Shaw Pur 278 with the *utmost goodhumor* [Shaw's own spelling] | Mrs Browning A 118 the *best good fortune*

15.152. This explains why such adjectives as *old*, *young*, *little* are so often placed after other adjectives, as they form one idea with the following substantive: a clever *young man* | Sh Hml IV 1 12 The vnseene good *old man* | Wells T 46 weak Cockney *young men* | Thack N 922 your orphan *little boy* | Di D 775 a mild, meek, calm *little man* (note the commas between the coordinated adjectives). When *little* and *old* come together, *little* is generally placed before *old*: *a little old man* (examples ESt 41 310).

15.16. The common Elizabethan address *good my lord*, etc, seems to have come about in the same way, *my lord* having become a kind of composite substantive comparable to the French *monsieur* Thus also in Sh Mcb III. 2 27 *Gentle my Lord.* This was then extended to similar groups. LL I 2 71 sweet my childe | ib IV 1.18 good my glasse (in addressing the mirror) | BJo 1 11 Good my saucy companion | ib 1 103 oh, good your worship.—We have an imitation of this idiom in Mrs Browning A 62 O sweet my father's sister

The word-order according to the usual rule was also found in ElE (Sh Mcb III. 4 26 I, my good lord | LL V 2 517) and is now the only natural one.

15.171. In such combinations as *how great a man*, the word-order must be explained from the fact that *how* must necessarily be placed first (like any interrogative or relative word), and that the adjective *great* is naturally attracted to *how* and therefore comes to be placed before *a* in spite of the general tendency to place this pronominal adjunct before other adjuncts. (Compare also *what a sight!*) Similarly must be explained the positions in *so great a man*, *too great a sum*, from which the same word-order has spread to other instances in which a subjunct of degree attracts an adjective and makes it precede the article Examples.

How· More U 78 Loke, with how long and tedious a tale I haue kept you | Sh Hml III. 2 380 *how unworthy a thing* you make of me | Defoe R 335 remembring *how sincere a friend* he was now to me | Poe 119 I could not help thinking *how picturesque a group* we composed.—*However*: *however dark a night.*

15.172. *So* Ch B 1024 *So vertuous a lvere* ne saugh I never | Sh Gent II 4 106 *so high a seruant* | Sh Tp III. 2 111 Is it *so braue a lasse*? | Defoe G 36 no prince ever obtain'd such an elevated character in *so short a time* | Morris N 16 the weaver, who was scarcely *so well mannered a man* as the ferryman | Hope In 42 *so young and pretty a* woman

Such is etymologically *so* + *like*, therefore *such a* belongs here; it has been so frequent for many centuries that no examples are needed (cf Sh Gent II. 4 106 below, *too*, Defoe G 36 above, *so*); also 16.46 and 16 782

As Sh Hml III 2 60 thou art eene *as iust a man* As ere my conuersation coap'd withall | Mi A 39 in *as arrant an implicit faith* | Goldsm 639 it was *as confounded a bad answer* as ever was sent

15.173. *Too*: Sh Gent II. 4 106 *Too low a mistres* for so high a seruant. Not so, sweet Lady, but *too meane a seruant* To haue a looke of such a worthy mistresse | Di N 331 You have much *too open and generous a countenance* for that

15.174. *No* before an adverb of degree in the comparative: NP '06 Bradshaw was *no less great a genius* | Collingwood P 366 a cousin of the artist, and in his way *no less remarkable a man* | Ingram Marlowe 141 *No more terrible an exposition* was ever offered

No is also used in the same way before an adjective in the comparative: Sh Merch V 1 106 no better a musitian; cf. below sub *no* 16 88.

15.175. Rarer combinations Caxton R 101 *what* [= how] *many a spyly* worde haue ye brought forth | Sh Ant V 2.236 *What poore an instrument* May do a noble deede | Ch G 648 whan a man hath *over-greet a wit* | Buchan Sir W Raleigh 77 he has *over nice a sense* of honour | Sh Meas II 2.46 You could not with *more tame a tongue* desire it | Jerome T 23 he might have asked the question in *more serious a tone* | NP '06 to make Oxford *more serviceable a part* of our educational system | Balfour NP '09 it is *far smaller a margin* than we have been accustomed to || Thack N 139 *Excellent a woman* as she is, I would not like to live in lodgings where there was a lady so addicted to playing | GE Mill 1 13 *Big a puzzle* as it was, it hadn't got the better of Riley

15.18. The conflict between the tendency to have the adjective immediately after the adverb of degree and the tendency to have the indefinite article as early as possible leads to its being placed between the two parts of a compound in Sh John IV 2 27 putting on *so new a fashion'd robe* | Sh Temp IV 1 123 *So rare a wondred* father | Goldsm 635 *as fine a spoken tailor* as ever blew | Sheridan Sc 63 (= 227) *as stern a looking rogue* as ever I saw | ib 64 *as honest a looking face* as any | Rehearsal 107 *as far a fetch'd* fancie as ever you saw

On the other hand the habit to have *a* in this way after *so*, etc., leads sometimes to the article being inserted even when *so* is preceded by some other pronoun that is generally incom-

patible with *a* More U 188 *thys* so deyntye and delycate *an* opinion | Marlowe F (1616) 1077 for *this so* rare *a* present | Wilkins P 12 to bestow *this his so* inestimable *a* jewell || More U 230 oneles they haue done *anye so* horryble *an* offence | Di Do 340 (vg) I never heerd of *any such a* article (cf 16 782) —Note also the double article in Sh R3 I 4 5 I would not spend *another such a* night | Swift T 19 there is not *another so* callous and insensible *a* member | GE M 1 74 there isn't *another such a* dropsy in the parish

Adjective-Subjuncts.

15.21. As already hinted (1 23), the first of two coordinate adjuncts sometimes tends to be subordinate to the second and thus nearly becomes a subjunct though preserving its adjective form. We term these words adjective-subjuncts

As a starting-point we take the joining together for the sake of emphasis of two epithets that mean nearly the same thing Here it matters very little whether the more descriptive one is made into an adverb *(icily cold)* or is simply placed as an adjective before the second adjective *(icy cold)* The latter construction is generally preferred, at any rate in colloquial English Examples

Di Ch 19 It is *burning hot*! It is *scalding hot* | Vachell H 244 a *blazing hot* day | Tenn L 2 117 it is *pestilent hot* | Caine C 301 he had looked *icy cold* | Bronte P 168 *stony cold* and hard | Wilde L 26 the night was *bitter cold* (cf Sh Hml I. 1.8) | Di N 314 Sir Mulberry declaring with a shiver that it was "*infernal cold*" | Wells N 206 she would have made a *shocking bad* nurse | Austen M 224 they are grown up *amazing fine* girls | Swift P 127 a *sad dirty* house | Mered H 170 with B I am *excellent good* friends | Di Do 269 *ashy pale* | Wilde D 177 his face became *ghastly pale* | Hope Z 233 a warm, *tight-fitting* woollen jersey | *snowy white.*

Wide open | *broad open* (not so frequent, Dryden 5 222 with eyes' broad open) | Di Do 81 *wide awake* . . *broad awake*, the latter also e.g Tennyson 53, Hawthorne T 50, but Hardy W 250 *broadly awake.*

Burns calls a poem "Address to the Unco Guid or the *Rigidly Righteous*", but in the poem itself he writes, "The *Rigid Righteous* is a fool, The Rigid Wise anither" (1 217)

But in a combination like *icily regular* (Tennyson 289) the former word must, of course, be a subjunct to the latter and could not be made into the adjective *icy*

15.221. It is easily seen how in such combinations the first adjective tends to become a subjunct to the second, and as it were, a mere adverb of degree. At first it can only be used as such before an adjective of related signification; but if it is used extensively in such combinations, it is by and by felt as signifying nothing else but intensification, independently of the meaning of the following adjective, and may then be used before all kinds of adjectives The development has been carried furthest in the case of the two words *very* and *pretty*

15.222. *Very* at first, like F *vrai*, OF *verai*, is an adj. meaning 'true', thus still in *the very night*, etc But already in ME we see the beginnings of the development into the present adverb, it starts from such combinations as Ch A 72 a *verray parfit gentil* knight and E 2285 a *verray trewe* wyf; where the transition is easy from 'real' to 'really' and 'in a high degree' In the 15th c *very* begins to be used generally as a subjunct before all kinds of adjectives (and adverbs) though Caxton does not seem to use it in this way, and gradually it becomes the favourite intensive, ousting *full* and *right* (see Stolfel, Int. 28 ff, Borst G 126 ff) Milton avoids the adverb *very* (Ps 6 4 is the only place where it occurs in his poetical works)

15.223. *Pretty* is not found as an adverb before an adjective in Sh, though All II 3 212 (I did thinke the . to bee a *prettie wise* fellow) shows how the transition from an adjunct-adjective to an adverb may have begun, from the end of the 17th c it becomes frequent

in the present sense of 'tolerably, fairly'. Cf. Stoffel Int 147 ff, Borst G 147

15.23. While these two words have become frankly adverbs and are now used in all styles, the following words are not recognized in the same way as regular adverbs of degree, many of them were very frequent as adjective-subjuncts in the 18th c, but are now used in this acceptation chiefly in familiar or even vulgar speech With regard to *wondrous* it must be noted that this form may represent the ME adverbial genitive *wondres*, *wonders* (Ch R 72, cf More U 253 wonders gladde) rather than an adjective formed by means of the ending *-ous*.

Examples of *wondrous* and synonyms: Sh (frequent) Mids V 1 59 wondrous strange snow | Beaumont 4.349 a goodly man? A wondrous goodly! | Mi PL V. 155 this universal Frame, Thus wondrous fair, thy self how wondrous then! | Swift T 127 it shall pass for wondrous deep, because it is wondrous dark | Browning 1.409 (archaic) little though wondrous fat | Bacon A 15 6 *wonderfull* strange (twice in Sh) | Beaumont 4 354 You are angry, *Monstrous* angry now, grievously angry (*m* twice in Sh) | Defoe R 31 it was a monstrous great one | ib 191 growing so monstrous thick | Austen S 110 a monstrous pretty girl (so often in Miss Austen) | More U 218 the wyttes ... be *maruelous* quycke | Austen S 125 Norland is a *prodigious* beautiful place, is it not? (also 127)

Uncommon, only 19th c As the quotations show, Sweet (see Storm 733) is right in saying that it is found also with educated speakers. Smedley F 1 190 she took uncommon kindly to the champagne | Thack, GE, Kipl see Borst G 122 | Ward E 279 there are some uncommon good things in it | Hope F 30 (aristocrat:) He's an uncommon fine fellow | Hope Ch 57 uncommon pretty | Hope M 54 He was uncommon seedy this morning

Extraordinary: Rehearsal (1671) 43 'tis extraordinary fine. In NED examples from 1632—1778; now very rare, except in Sc: Wilde Im 8 Bunbury's extraordinary

bad health | Barrie T 127 he is looking most extraordinar meek.

Rare, colloquial he's *a rare good* chap, cf. Storm EPh 731. — Cf also Sc *unco guid* < OE *uncuþ*, orig 'unknown'.

15.24. *Precious* (very common colloquially, but not till 19th c.) Bronte P 98 Precious little | Ward F 35 you'll be precious sorry for it | Hope Ch 49 he takes every thing so precious seriously | Shaw 1 213 society makes precious short work of the cads | Wells TM 147 life is a dream, a precious poor dream at times.

Mighty, not in Sh, but in BJo (see Borst G 88), very common in 18th and 19th c Congreve 257 mighty restless | Defoe G 125 He is mighty curious | Defoe R 160 I liv'd mighty comfortably | Fielding 3 433 it was mighty ridiculous | Austen M 196 mighty delightful | Di D 397 mighty learned | Stevenson MB 206 a mighty late hour | id M 159 mighty quick and active In Amr this is strengthened into *almighty* James A 1 79 The coffee is almighty hot

Pure (very frequent in 18th c, see Stoffel Int 14 ff with many quotations): Swift P 145 this almond pudden was pure good

Jolly, the quotation NED 1549 is a doubtful instance like the two Shakespearian passages Shr III 2 215 and R3 IV 3 43 To her go I, a jolly thriuing wooer In 19th and 20th c. extremely common, but more or less slangy, some undergraduates are said to divide things into the two classes, *jolly beastly* and *beastly jolly*. Cf Hope D 37 the jam was jolly well worth the powder | Wells T 29 a jolly queer lot | Wells U 343 I'm jolly glad anyhow | Shaw D 61 you do look jolly foolish | Galsworthy M 127 how jolly natural! | Masefield M 195 It's jolly cold, said Roger, with chattering teeth

15.25. *Terrible* Swift P 159 your ale is terrible strong | Zangwill G 43 (Amr) You're terrible ambitious | Masefield E 20 turble strong (extremely frequent in dial.) |

Austen S 135 *dreadful* low-spirited | Kipl L 244 I'm *awful* sorry [very rare instead of *awfully*].

Cruel (NED 1632): Swift J 26 yesterday was a cruel hard frost | Doyle S 5 216 (vg) and cruel bad he treated me —Still frequent in Ireland: that old fellow is cruel rich (Joyce Ir 89)

Beastly (cf *jollu*): James S 128 this beastly stuffy place

Plaguy, in Sh only once, in the possibly spurious Tro (II 3 187); extremely frequent in 18th c., in 19th vg or dial Swift J 37 Is not this a plaguy silly story? (also 22, 76 etc) | ib 139 I walked plaguy carefully | Goldsm 617 you're so plaguy shy.

Devilish. Congreve 292 you're devilish handsome | Swift P 116 he's devilish old (137) | Sheridan 275 he is devilish apt to take the merit | Thack N 303 I've been devilish annoyed about it | Stevenson JH 19 I have seen devilish little of the man | Vachell H 295 You're devilish clever

Deuced. (NED 1779) | Darwin L 1 59 I should be deuced clever | ib 2 43 feel deuced uncomfortable

Confounded: (NED 1709) | Sheridan 257 'tis confounded hard Now only *-ly*.

15.26. *Bitter* (cf *bitter cold* above 15 21) Di Do 304 (vg) bitter poor | Stevenson JHF 78 (vg) this drug is wanted bitter bad | ib 227 he was bitter poor of goods and bitter ugly of countenance

Indifferent ('to some extent', in 19th c only as an archaism)· More U 66 their fare is indyfferent good | Sh Haml III 1 123 I am my selfe indifferent honest.

Dead From combinations like *dead drunk* (Sh Oth II 3 83, Stevenson M 63), *dead tired* or *dead weary* (Kipl L 83), *dead-still* (Keats, NED), *dead-slow* (NED 1596), *dead sleepy* (Di D 15), *dead* becomes extremely common as an intensive with many adjectives, e g. Carlyle R 1.157 we were dead silent on that head | Stevenson VP 241 let a stockbroker be dead stupid about poetry | Parker R 36

it seemed dead certain | ib 36 I thought it was a dead-sure thing | Ade A 94 You're dead right there | ib 97 he was takin' it dead easy.

Stark ('stiff, strong'), in Shakespeare (besides the still usual combinations with *mad* and *naked*) also *starke spoyl'd* Shr III 2.55 Borst quotes *stark blind* from Trevisa and *sterke ded* from Caxton · Cf also Congreve 296 he's mad, stark wild | Defoe R 94 it was stark calm.

Other examples of adjective-subjuncts: Caine C 75 *real* wicked . *real* stubborn (in the mouth of an American lady, extremely common in US) | walk *double* quick; extremely frequent (military) | Sh Mcb IV. 1 83 Ill make assurance double sure | Barry T 376 (Sc) I'm *mortal* wae for her | Kipl L 177 Isn't it *thundering* good? | Swift T 65 he was *extreme* wilful | Defoe R 44 *excessive* dear | ib 46 excessive hot | id R 2.16 I was most *sensible* touch'd | ib 219 a *tolerable* good voyage | Stevenson JHF 79 (vg) *main* angry | Caine C 332 (vg) You're *bleedin'* drunk | Kipl S 59 he'll be *howling* drunk to-night | ib 260 he was *blind* squiffy [= dead drunk] when he wrote the paper | ib 168 *vile* bad | id P 121 he was *desperate* bold.

Cf also Storm EPh 728 ff., Borst G passim

15.27. The important fact about all these adjective-subjuncts is that they do not occur except before other adjectives (and transferredly before some adverbs), but not in connexion with verbs, where the *-ly*-adverb is required See for instance Swift J 132 'tis *terrible cold* It has snowed *terribly* all night; ib 94 be *plaguily* baulked, cf the above quoted instances of *plaguy*. Sh has *marvellous* and *wondrous* with adjectives and adverbs, but *marvellously* and *wondrously* with verbs. Other instances of difference between the form used with adj and that with vb may be found in Borst's quotations, e.g sub *abominable*, *abundant*, *admirable*, *amazing*, etc. Nor are these adjective-adverbs found with comparatives; note that *very better*, *pretty better* never occur, but always *much better*, *rather better*. But on the other hand, the forms in *-ly*

are of course always allowable, and in recent literary style they are even generally preferred, before adjectives, cf Swift J 141 'tis still *terribly cold*

The adjective-subjuncts treated here (15.2) are distinct from those adverbs which are identical with adjectives (as not being formed by means of the ending *-ly*); these may be used also with verbs (he walks *fast*, etc) and will be dealt with in another place. Some words (among them *wide*, *broad*) will be mentioned in both places. Sweet (§ 188) looks upon *dark* in *dark red* and *greenish* in *greenish yellow* as adverbs, I feel more inclined to call the whole combination a compound adjective.

15.28. A special class of these adjective-subjuncts is formed by *passing*, *exceeding*, because in a certain sense the following adj may be taken as the object of the participle, Sh Shr Intr I 64 It wil be pastime *passing excellent*. a passtime which passes (what may be called) excellent (cf she is *far from pretty*, where *pretty* is the object of *from*). *Passing*, and especially *exceeding*, were very frequent in this way in former centuries; nowadays they are only used as conscious archaisms (The development offers points of similarity with that of *mock*, etc , 14 78)

Examples Sh Ado II 1 84 you apprehend *passing shrewdly* | Tenn 44 I loved his beauty *passing well* || More U 33 an *excedynge rare* thynge (ib 296) | AV Matth 2.10 with *exceeding great* joy (frequent in AV and Sh) | Swift 3.347 *exceeding hot* | Defoe R 83 it rain'd *exceeding hard* (ib 167, 168, etc) | Sterne 25 *exceeding well* | Austen S 134 an *exceeding proud* woman | Thack P 1 120 a young man of such *exceeding small* means | Stevenson D 28 *exceeding intricate* (ib 302)

With verbs (ptc) we have *exceedingly*, as in AV Matth 19 25 they were exceedingly amazed | ib Mark 4.41 they feared exceedingly | Defoe R 111 I found myself exceedingly refresh'd | ib 170 I was exceedingly comforted | id R 2 33 he was exceedingly mov'd.

Therefore, *exceeding* in Wells Fm 28 *his remark amazed me exceeding* does not seem to me to be genuine.

15.29. A variant form of adjective-subjunct is found in colloquial and dialectal speech when *and* is added between the two adjectives, as in *nice and warm*, see Storm 691 ff. (oldest examples from Swift), Borst G 13 (oldest 1575 from NED *jolly*) and this work I. 2.428, where it is assumed that the sound [n] is inserted in the same way as in *messenger*; the rhythmic movement of the formulas is the same *And* of course gives a certain sense, but is generally superfluous for the sense Further examples GE M 1 35 *fine and vexed* | Bennett HL 59 I was *fine and startled* when I saw you | Twain H 1 78 when it was *good and dark* | ib 1 152 I was *good and tired* | Bennett C 1 270 It'll be *nice and hot*

New-born, newly born, etc

15.31. While the adverb *new* (OE *niwe*, ME *newe*) is quite obsolete in free employment (the last quotations in NED are from 1599 and 1615), *new* frequently enters into compounds with participles, where it may be taken as an adjective-subjunct (*new laid eggs* are *new eggs*); the meaning is sometimes 'newly, recently', sometimes 'anew, afresh' Examples [Ch E 3 a mayde were newe spoused] | More U 34 thoose *newe founde* landes | ib 239 | ib 228 that they be *newe married* to other | Ml J 527 the *new made* nunnery | Sh R2 II 1 31 a prophet *new inspired* | Sh Cy 1.5 59 *new built* | Defoe R 2 82 *new planted* | Swift T 5 a copy, which a certain wit had *new polished* | Swift 3 193 my sloop [was] *new manned* | Johnson R 120 the *new-created* earth | Austen S 69 I hope you will have *new-furnished* it [the house] | Carlyle S 6 *new-got* gold is said to burn the pockets | Kipl L 257 as warm as *new baked* bread | Bennett A 200 surprising every one by his *new-found* manliness | *new-mown* hay | *new-coined* words

Newly may of course also be used in these collocations: Bunyan G 106 my weak and *newly converted* bre-

thren | Shelley 192 some bright spirit *newly born* (cf ib 127 new-born liberty) | Thack P 2 2 the *newly-married* pair | Hardy L 92 the newly-married couple | Bennett A 198 Mr Sargent, the *newly-appointed* second minister

15.32. Parallel with *new-born* we have other combinations of adjective-subjuncts and participles Mi SA 1317 *fresh clad* | London A 135 his body was *fresh-oiled* | Austen S 297 Cleveland was a spacious, *modern built* house | Macaulay H 2 142 three ships, *foreign built* and without colours | Wells F 156 the percentage of criminals among the "*foreign-born*" is higher than that among the *native-born* | Quiller Couch M 300 a *private-owned* craft

15.33. From such participles as *new-furnished* we have by means of subtraction (back-formation) verbs like *new-furnish*; the oldest example in NED is *newe edifie* from 1442 Sh Oth IV 1 287 did the letters *new create* his fault? | Sh Tp I. 2.81 [he] new created The creatures. Or els *new form'd* 'em (cf Err III 2 39 would you create me new? is *new* here adj in complex object or adv ?) | Caine M 82 Tom was there, *new thatching* the back of the house | Gissing B 473 you've been *new-furnishing*.

Moderate sized or moderately sized.

15.34. Some vacillation is found between adjectival and adverbial forms before adjectives formed from substantives by means of the suffix *-ed* In one case we have a derivative from the compound (adjective + substantive): *blue-eyed* from *blue-eye* + *-ed*, *good-sized*, in the other a derivative (by means of *-ed*) from the substantive alone, to which is added an adverb, because the derivative is an adjective: *well mannered* = the adjective *mannered* (cf *moneyed*, *talented*, *minded*, etc) with an adverb, *well-sized* (cf. Sh Hml III 2.180 as my loue is siz'd, my feare is so). In the two main lists given below the examples are arranged alphabetically according to the sbs from which they are formed, so as to make it easy to find those instances where both formations are found I

star in each list those words which might with greater or less propriety be analyzed as real participles of actually existing verbs besides being apprehended as possessional adjectives in *-ed*; the relation between these adjectives and participles will be dealt with in Morphology, sub *-ed*

15.351. Adjectival forms (these are by far the more frequent) More U 256 stronge *bodyed* | able-bodied men | Sh TS III 2 166 this mad-*brain'd* bridegroome | Lamb E 1.136 the somewhat original *brain'd* Margaret | Collingwood R 281 a cottage . smoky *chimneyed* | Spect 389 thirteen different *coloured* hoods | Shaw P 181 a strange colored shadow | Wilde S 118 eating with different coloured spoons | Lamb R 10 a sweet *dispositioned* youth | Gissing B 122 a hard-*featured* girl | Ru Sel 1.225 another kind of garden, deep *furrowed* | Carlyle S 81 this young warm*hearted*, strong*headed* and wrong*headed* Herr Towgood | More U 256 faynte *harted* bolde harted | [Mered H 207 a large *landed* proprietor] | Sh Haml II 2 493 vnequal *matched** | good-*natured* | Thack N 717 a good-*plucked* fellow (also Vachell H 155) | Quincey 64 the high *priced* inn | Trollope D 3 130 to be thoroughly high *principled* | Swift J 204 Stella shall have a large *printed* Bible | Sh H4A IV. 2 33 more dis-honorable *ragged* then an old-fac'd ancient | Defoe G 145 the error is deep *rooted* | Ridge S 37 a decent *sized* family | Hughes T 2 2 a moderate-sized college | Wells T 13 a modest-sized frontage | Di D 470 an ordinary sized nightcap | Sh Ado II 1 355 a pleasant *spirited* lady | Shaw 1 68 a poor-spirited creature | Stevenson Underw 29 happy *starred* | Austen E 93 an easy, cheerful *tempered* man | Spect 396 a strange *windou'd* house

This form is the only one found with adjectives of colour (*white-haired*, *black-eyed*, etc , Stevenson Underw 63 a blue-behinded ape) and of course also with numerals and pronouns, in neither case is any adverb formed in *-ly*: Hardy W 156 he had been a *one-idea'd* character | NP '96 the *seven hilled* city | Kingsley H 239 some *hundred-*

wived kinglet | Ml F (1616) 830 with *sundry coloured* stones | GE A 161 she's got *thy coloured* eyes | Mered R 231 *this shaped* eye or that | Dr Sk 137 a brown-whiskered, white-hatted, *no-coated* cabman | Wells V 8 a *no-hatted,* blonde young man | Collingwood R 348 both are printed in *the same sized* paper | *many-sided* | *myriad minded* (Coleridge, of Shakespeare).

Sh Cymb III. 2 5 shows that the words in *-ed* are felt as words per se What false Italian, As poysonous *tongu d,* as *handed*

15.352. Adverbial forms. Hewlett Q 261 A hand so thinly *boned*. | Wells A 67 a variously *buttoned** mandarinate | Ru C 13 every separately *Christian-named** portion of the ruinous heap | Ru S 86 beautifully *coloured** as well as shaped | Carpenter C 69 a vast number of variously shaped* and colored* bodies | Shaw C 207 a well *conducted** and meritorious young woman | By DJ 5 14 Those servile days are not so proudly *eyed* | Sh John IV 2 144 I finde the people strangely *fantasied* | Sh Ado III 1.60 rarely *featur'd* | Ru P 2 79 a beautifully featured youth | Ward R 3 239 delicately featured | Gissing B 81 his strongly featured character | Wells F 265 less saliently featured | Bronto P 79 a little and roundly *formed** woman | Beaumont (Merm) 1 244 she is nobly-*friended* | Ru Sel 1.490 kindly *hearted* | ib 1 256 an entirely well-*intentioned* man (also Stevenson M 206, Ridge L 191) | Sh Wiv IV 4 86 well *landed* | Poe 262 the most minutely *lettered* names the over-largely lettered signs | well-*looked* (= good-looking, obsolete, see Storm 705) | GE L 2 286 a well-*mannered* Frenchman (also Morris N 16, Hope In 171, Shaw B 189, Dickinson R 18) | Hawth 1 383 uncouthly *mannered* | Shaw C 157 faultlessly dressed and impossibly mannered | Sh Cymb IV. 2 382 thou shalt be so well *master'd* | More U 210 a man cruelly *minded* towardes hymselfe | Ru T 23 a justly minded [parliament] | ib 192 eagerly-minded to go and steal | Ru S 108 the inconsistently-minded society | Ru Sel 1 490 cheerfully minded people | Spencer F 80 the judicially minded | ib 106 the

critically-minded | Sh Wiv IV 4.88 well *moned* | Williamson P 185 the handsome, slightly-*moustached* woman | Whitman 303 the well-*muscled* woman | London A 92 large men, splendidly muscled | Spenser FQ II 9.41 to see the maid So strangely *passioned* | Hope In 320 the more highly *priced* | Quincey 15 a people more highly *principled* than the Greeks | Austen M 266 being well principled and religious | Thack N 487 a most highly principled woman | Archer A 37 elegantly *proportioned* cars | Wells U 103 the room is beautifully proportioned | Stevenson T 106 strangly *shaped** | GE M 1 182 a well-*sized* man | Ru C 105 a moderately sized park (also Ru P 2.186, Hawth T 130) | Malory 102 he was passyngly wel *vysaged* | Chesterton F 187 The long, well-*windowed* rooms | Hope F 1 The park was well *wooded*

Fielding T 1 293 uses the expression "the well-wooded forest", but adds "This is an ambiguous phrase, and may mean either a forest well clothed with wood, or well stripped of it"

15.353. Adjectival and adverbial forms are sometimes found side by side Thack S 10 beautifully whiskered and empty headed | Collingwood R 224 less clear-sighted and less widely-experienced thinkers

15.36. With the participle *spoken* in active signification we also find both adjectival and (rarer) adverbial forms; *spoken* takes the place of *speeched*, which is not found

Sh Tit II 1 58 *Foule spoken* coward | Mi A 40 all *free spok'n* truth [different from *freely spoken*, which would be passive] | Thack P 3 38 that free spoken young gentleman | Goldsm 635 as *fine* a *spoken* tailor | Austen E 9 a civil, *pretty spoken* girl | Austen M 83 a *plain-spoken* being | Di N 357 you're always so *mild spoken* | id Do 317 a wonderfully *modest spoken* man | Galsworthy P 6 29 *pleasant-spoken*

Sh Gent I 2 10 a knight, *well-spoken*, neat, and fine | NP '87 an intelligent well-behaved and *nicely-spoken* lad.

Post-Adjuncts.

15.4. The usual place of the adjunct is now, and has been since the OE period, before the principal But to this rule there are a certain number of exceptions which will now be considered, though considerations of place hinder me from giving the subject anything like the full treatment found in Birger Palm's able dissertation "The Place of the Adjective Attribute in English Prose" (Lund 1911), to which the reader is referred for many details, in particular with regard to earlier periods Many of the explanations, and nearly all the examples, given below are independent of Mr. Palm's book.

Combinations like
I found *the room empty* |
I had *my boots soled* |
with *my hands full* |
after *much time spent* |
I lay, *eyes wide open*—
will not be treated here, as they do not contain principals+post-adjuncts, but "duplex" combinations (the first two containing duplex objects after a verb, the next two duplex objects after a preposition, and the fifth a duplex subjunct)—"duplex" being a better name for what I called "complex" in 1 67

15.41. Post-position of adjuncts is very frequent in groups that go back, directly or indirectly, to Norman French legal terms, such as

Sh H5 I 2 70 *heire male* | Defoe G 106 heirs male (also Scott A 2.172, Austen P 36, Symonds Shelley 53, etc.) | Scott A 1 138 *heir female* | Congreve 215 *issue male.*

Sh H5 I 2.66 *heire generall* | *heir-apparent.*

Cousin-german.

Blood royal (Sh H4A I 2 158, Scott A 2 292, Iv 176, Hewlett Q 8) | Sh R3 III. 1.164 the *Seat Royall* | Hewlett Q 216 a *chase-royal* | Shaw 1 166 a *battle royal*

Hope In 14 a *queen regnant* | Bennett B 25 is Prince Aribert a reigning Prince—what, I believe, you call in Europe, a *Prince Regnant*?

Bishop elect | the *bride elect* | *Viceroy Designate.*

The *Lords Spiritual* and the *Lords Temporal* (already Caxton R 117), cf. 15 54.

The *life-matrimonial* (Di N 1).

fee simple (Sh Alls IV 3 311 and often).

Money due | Bennett A 22 to pay *rent overdue.* But in the usual non-legal sense, *due* is a pre-adjunct: *in due time*, etc

malice prepense (e g Mered H 69) | *malice afore-thought* (e.g. Di Do 269) | *malice domestic* Sh Mcb III 2 25.

Sh H5 I 2.12 the *law Salike.*

Court-martial

Proof positive (e g. Mered H 90, Doyle S 2 16, Henderson Sc Lit 73) | *proof demonstrative* (Seeley E 140)

Finances public . . finances private (Di T 1 167); 15 54.

The *body politic*, contrasted with this also *the body domestic*, Collier E 92 Bacon E 49 and 57 *the politique body*

Ambassador Extraordinary (Hewlett Q 441) | *Postmaster General* and similar titles, in imitation thereof Scott A 1 192 one who was by profession *gossip-general* to the whole neighbourhood || *Poet Laureate*, cf Marl F 272 *conurer laureate.*

The *States General* (e g Macaulay H 2.119).

Cf. also above 2 41, where examples of the pl of such combinations are given.

15.42. French influence is responsible for the post-position of other adjectives, e.g.

the *art military* (Lamb E 1 33, Thack N 26) | the *sum total* (e g Seeley E 5) | *angels celestial* (Thack N 180) | *sign-manual* (Caine E 191) | Swift J 146 upon *occasions extraordinary* (generally preposed) | from *time immemorial* | the *devil incarnate.*

In A Bennett's books post-adjuncts are frequent, probably on account of the author's residence in France, e g C 2 7 adequate | 38 divine | 222 stately and correct | 225 acute | 227 severe and perilous | 249, 271 unique | HL 356 inconceivable

15.43. To Latin influence are due some cases of post-position, thus probably *God Omnipotent* (Sh R2 III 3 85) and *God Almighty*, further such grammatical terms as *verb passive* (e g Dr D 32), *third person plural*, etc., in some cases where the last word was in Latin an adjective, it is now in English rather to be considered a substantive (cf. *noun substantive* 2 33)

It is possible also that the word-order now found in most or all European languages *Edward the Third*, *Napoleon the Great*, etc , goes back to the Latin models, though such combinations may also have arisen independently through apposition, cf OE (*q*) *Sidroc eorl se qioncga*

15.44. Numeral adjuncts were sometimes postposed in earlier English OE *his suna tweqen* 'his two sons | Ch A 527 his *apostles twelve* (cf ib 210) In ModE this is more or less affected; Kipling. *Soldiers Three*

This is different from the post-order in *Chapter three* | *page nineteen* | in the *year nineteen* (hundred and) *ten*, where the cardinal numeral is used as an ordinal As in French (and other languages) this usage has originated from reading the numeral character as written (abbreviated): Chapter III, etc.

15.45. When an adjective is often placed after the substantive in addressing a person ('in the vocative'), the reason is that the adjective is an afterthought, and originally it might be considered an independent vocative, thus OE *Beowulf leofa* (Bw 1216) = Beowulf! thou dear one!' (this explains the weak form, which was originally a substantive, or substantivized adjective): ModE *father dear* = 'father! dear!' though now felt as belonging closely together Thus Sh Mids III. 1 87 my dearest Thisby dear (where we might put commas after *dearest* and (or) *Thisby*) | Sh Cy II 3.29 my *Lady sweet*, arise | Kipl S 237 a day of reckoning approaches, *Beetle mine* (cf 16.24) | Sh Hml IV. 1 34 *Friends both*, go joyne you with some further ayde

15.46. Another afterthought-adjunct is postposed *proper*, which means 'what may properly be so termed' and is thus a kind of stylistic limitation; in the same way we have in the last quotation *snobs pure and simple* = 'what may purely and simply be termed snobs'

By DJ 10 60 through *Prussia Proper* | Jerome T 46 before the *commencement proper* of this story | Butler Er 77 some were *snobs pure and simple*

The sense thus is distinct from that found in Pope's "The *proper study* of mankind" or "the *proper motion* of a planet", or of "a *simple fellow*", "a *simple explanation*"

15.471. An adjective is very often placed after *thing*, and especially the plural *things*, this is probably due to the analogy of *something new* etc (17 32), where the word-order is occasioned by the close coalescence of *some* and *thing* (see also Palm p 111 ff)

Sh H5 IV 1 4 There is some soule of goodnesse in *things euill* | Mch IV 3 23 all *things foule* | Wordsw P 8 559 as a *thing divine* | Ritchie M 246 *things dramatic* and *things theatrical* are often confounded together | Stevenson A 19 in *things temporal* | Holmes A 228 carefully instructed in *things temporal and spiritual* | Mered H 164 she heartily despised *things English* [thus very often with nationality adjectives] | the only *thing required* (or *needed, needful*)

In Wells V 341 "I thank God for *all things great and small* that make us what we are" we have an afterthought apposition, which should have been inserted between two commas — Ib 251 "That's *one thing clear*" of course is different from "one clear thing"

15.472. We have the same word-order pretty frequently with *matters*, especially with long adjectives Palm (p 113) is probably right in referring these phrases to French legal phraseology, though contrast (15 54) and analogy with *things* may have had their share in the development; in recent use these combinations often have a tincture of humorous style.

Ruskin U 37 all other doctrine respecting *matters political* | Gissing B 15 in *matters sartorial* he presented a high ideal | Kipl S 264 a cheerful babel of *matters personal, provincial and imperial*

15.473. The combination *no man living* resembles *no one living*; *no man* is a kind of compound pronoun like *something* Thus also Stevenson JHF 134 "*no man morally sane* could have been guilty of that crime", and similarly (cf. 15 63) Kipl S 276 *no Sikh living.*

After *man* we also find adjectives indicating physical or psychical deficiencies, especially after *as* or *like* This should have been noted above, 10.242

Behn 337 he grew *like a man distracted* (also ib 340) | Di Do 287 *like a man entranced* | Wells V 284 he dropped his chin *like a man shot*

15.481. When participles have become completely adjectives, they are generally placed before the substantive at a *given* point | a *well-known* writer | an *interesting* remark, etc When the verbal character of the participle is present to the mind of the speaker or writer, especially when the time of the action and (or) the agent is thought of, there is a greater inclination to place it after the substantive, and this order is also found from rhetorical reasons, where the verbal character is not very prominent, e.g. Johnson R 57 my heart bounded like that of a *prisoner escaped* | Spencer F 152 the bias of *those concerned* had vitiated the *conclusions drawn* | Stevenson V 142 even this is not a *good unmixed*

15.482. There are some standing phrases in which the participle is always placed after the sb Thack H 81 she and they were *at daggers drawn* (the old phrase was *at daggers* [gen.] *drawing*) | *a gentleman born* (NED Richardson) | Bronte P 47 we are *reformers born* | Stevenson D 10 the *detective born and bred* | Housman J 219 Does he know? No more than the *babe unborn* | Lamb R 4 happy was Rosamund, though a *girl grown* (cp a grown-up girl) | for

three days running | Kingsley H 179 his faith had fallen asleep *for the time being* (also Di Do 192, Kipl J 2.195, etc.). *Born* may also be preposed: a born poet

15.483. Adjectives in *-able, -ible* may be classed with participles, they are not unfrequently placed after the substantive Thack N 265 her fingers glittered with *rings innumerable*

15.49. Poets sometimes for metrical reasons place an adjective after its substantive, where ordinary prose prefers the opposite order, some of their phrases have become household quotations and may consequently be used even by people who do not know their poetic origin:

Sh H5 IV 1 267 in stead of *homage sweet* | Mi PL 1 63 No light, but rather *darkness visible* | ib 686 in *vision beatific* | ib 737 the *orders bright* | ib 2 560 *foreknowledge absolute* | ib 628 Gorgons and Hydras, and *Chimeras dire* | Pope 261 the Dean invite who never mentions Hell to *ears polite* (hence e g Di D 309 what the unmentionable to ears polite do you think I want) | Shelley 457 A divine presence in a *place divine* | By DJ 7 84 *things immortal* to immortal men | Bridges E 161 Athena *mistress good* of them that know.

Two adjuncts are sometimes in poetry placed one before and one after the substantive This is pretty frequent in Milton, e g. PL 1 733 many a *towred* structure high | ib 5 5 *temperat* vapors bland | Gray Elegy gem of *purest* ray *serene* Cp. from prose the word-order *no man living* (15 473) and *the best style possible* (15.63), in *all day long* the last word is perhaps not an adjective

15.51. Post-order is often rendered desirable or necessary if the adjunct is accompanied by subjuncts, especially if these consist of long groups. The adjunct with its additions is then often felt as an abbreviation of a relative clause and takes the same place as this would have: *a nook merely monastic* == 'a nook which is merely monastic'. Examples with adjectives:

Sh As III 2 440 to liue in a *nooke meerly monastick* | Austen S 314 he replied with an expressive smile, and a *voice perfectly calm* | Di N 400 with a *petulance not unnatural in her unhappy circumstances* | Di X 4 *people new to the business* | Seeley E 131 on the *plan then usual* | Ru S 3 They never seek an *education good in itself* | Ru 1 192 a *painter otherwise mean or selfish* | Gosse P 41 It was a time of *controversy so acrid that we can hardly realise the bitterness of it* | McCarthy 2 141 the only *proposition* in the bill *not absolutely farcical and absurd* | Stevenson V 130 an *interruption too brief and isolated to attract much notice* | Tenn L 1 191 a *man every way prosperous and talented* | Kipl S 146 the only *masters senior to us* | ib 264 *a mantelpiece ten feet high* | a *sight worth seeing* —Thus also dramatic authors, *such as Pinero or Bernard Shaw*

Here also belong combinations with *likely* + infinitive, as in Swift J 159 it is a fine girl, *likely to live* | GE A 97 She was the last person *likely to be* in the house Swinb L 211 in a way *likely to injure* others

15.52. Participles with subjuncts of various sorts are in the same way very frequently placed as post-adjuncts In Do 62 in a *state almost amounting to consternation* || More U 234 to *people so instruct and institute* very fewe [lawes] do suffice | ib 244 reuenge *iniuries before to them done* | Sh Hml I 4 16 It is a *custome More honour'd in the breach*, then the obseruance | ib IV 3.9 *diseases desperate growne*, By desperate appliance are releeued | Johnson R 88 like a *man not unaccustomed to the forms of courts* | GE A 362 the neglected beard of a *man just risen from a sick-bed* | ib 209 an old *gentleman turned eighty* | Shaw 1 172 a young *fellow, not long turned twenty*, with a charming voice | Macaulay E 4 7 his duties were of a *kind ill suited to his ardent and daring character* | Birrell Ob 10 *No one at all acquainted with his writings* can fail to remember it

Corresponding pre-adjuncts see 14 3

Combinations of participle + preposition are often

used as post-adjuncts: Sidney A 63 Our tragedies, and comedies (not without cause *cried out against*) | Sh Lr III. 2.59 a man, more *sinn'd against*, then sinning | Sh R2 I. 3.155 A heauy sentence . And all *vnlook'd for* from your Highnesse mouth | Sh Tw V. 318 I leaue my duty a little *vnthought of* | Sh LLL IV 2.139 the person *written vnto* | Swift T 73 by a long digression *unsought for* Spencer A 1.395 sympathy for the person *smiled at* or the person *smiled with* | Wells F 88 the state is something *escaped from* | Stevenson M 182 I espied some papers *written upon* with pencil

15.53. The length of the group also accounts for postposition in the case of two adjectives being coordinated (often contrasted) by means of a conjunction Cowper L 1 187 to have broken through all *obligations divine and human* | Macaulay E 4 7 he expressed his feelings in *language softer and more pensive* than we should have expected | Kipl L 21 after *arrangements financial and political* | Ward M 123 a *laugh musical but malicious* | Ward F 32 *Calculations quick and anxious* passed through the young wife's brain.

15.54. Even when two contrasted adjuncts belong to separate substantives, they are often thrown after their substantives for the sake of emphasis, as in Sterne 22 in the *body national* as in the *body natural* | Di Do 178 he not only rose next morning, like a *giant refreshed*, but conducted himself, at breakfast, like a *giant refreshing* | Di D 503 a *crust well-earned* was sweeter far than a *feast inherited* | Thack S 47 After *Snobs Military*, *Snobs Clerical* suggest themselves [but ib in the superscription. *Clerical Snobs*] | Fox 2.225 people care so much more for the *person doing* than for the *thing done* | Hardy W 66 the *deed accomplished* was not like the *deed projected* | Caine E 418 in the world's view a *woman souled* is a *woman spoiled* | Benson D 260 a whited sepulchre is no better than a *sepulchre unwhitened* | Kipl S 79 *Boys neglected* were

boys lost.—Cp also Ru C 9 the *robber* . . . the *person robbed.*

15.55. The frequent contrast between *past* and *to come* may have been instrumental in making post-order of the former habitual:

Bacon A 14.17 wee forgot both *dangers past*, and *feares to come* | Sh John IV. 3 51 All *murders past* | Spect 583 I have been for five *years last past* courted by a gentleman | ib 584 for these ten *years past* | GE S 14 in the *night last past.*

Thus also post-position is very frequent, though not compulsory, with *last, next,* and *previous*·

Stevenson M 28 the wreck of *February last* | id V 32 what happened *last November* might surely happen *February next* (Scotch?).

Semi-Predicative Post-Adjuncts.

15.61. In 15 51 above mention was made of the fact that many post-adjuncts are felt as abbreviations of relative clauses, 'as *that is* (*are, was*, etc) might easily be added without changing the sense This will account for a modern tendency to use any kind of words or groups that are appropriate in the predicative, as post-adjuncts The connexion between adjunct and principal is then somewhat looser than in other cases, and very often approaches what grammarians term 'apposition'. Among adjuncts of this kind we find not only adjectives, but also substantives (substantive groups 15 71) and adverbs (adverbial groups 15 73) and infinitives (15 8).

15.62. *Present* is placed before the substantive when it refers to time· *the present occasion* | *his present occupation* | *the present writer* (= 'I, who am now writing') But when it refers to space and means 'who is (or was) at this (or that) place', it is generally used in the predicative: I was not present at his marriage Hence it is used in that sense as a semi-predicative post adjunct *the members*

present voted for the measure | Austen P 65 in any other *person present*; hence also it is impossible to use the plural form *the present* in this sense instead of *those present*. This distinction is not old; Ch E 80 "in his *last present* was al his thought" refers to time and would now be *his present last* In Peele D 481 "Behold *things present* and record *things past*; But *things to come* . . ." we have the word-order peculiar to contrasts (15.54).

15.63. Very often an adjective like *possible*, which only implies a limitation of another adjunct (generally a superlative) is placed after the substantive (thus producing a word-order analogous to that mentioned in 15.48): in the best style *possible* (= the best style that is possible; also: in the best possible style) | the only person *visible* | Stevenson T 47 the toughest old salts *imaginable* | the earliest document *extant*

15.64. From such cases of 'apposition' as By DJ 3.51 *He enter'd in the house no more his home* we are led easily to the following instances of a possessive pronoun with *own* or without, but then with some subjunct, as a post-adjunct: Quincey 72 some needy Frenchman living in a country *not his own* | Macaulay B 211 he had paid the penalty of faults *not his own* | Macaulay E 4.12 every separate member began to move with an energy *all its own* | Froude C 1.375 little tea-parties over which she presided with a grace *all her own* | Wells V 82 each [feminine experience] had had a quality *all its own* || Carlyle S 81 waste not the time *yet ours* | Tennyson 411 when you yield your flower of life To one *more fitly yours* | ib 99 O my Amy, *mine no more* | Ward E. 191 two statues glorified by the moonlight into a grace and poetry *not theirs by day* | London W 114 he gave them the trail as a privilege *indubitably theirs*

15.65. The words "in apposition" in the following sentences are also to be considered as semi-predicative post-adjuncts. Carlyle F 3.206 It was a head *all cheeks, jaw, and no brow* | By DJ 11.57 With poets *almost cler-*

gymen, or wholly —Cf. also Ker E 147 one of the earliest poems of a type *something between the song and the moral poem* | Bennett C 1.272 A power *not himself* drew Edwin to the edge of the pavement.

15.66. From the predicative use in *he is fifteen* = 'he is 15 years old', we get post-adjuncts like the following. Quincey 45 as a solitary act of observation in *a boy not fifteen* | Vachell H 288 *men forty* were not likely to work in that boyish fashion (misprint for *of forty*?).

15.67. In the often quoted line from Campbell's Pleasures of Hope, "Like angel-visits, few and far between" the latter words, though not a post-adjunct in the original context, are now often taken as such (cf. 14.98). In the following instances the post-order seems referable to such constructions as "sounds there were (few or) none" Quincey 244 and *sounds few or none* fretted the quiet | Harrison R 68 in spite of the indignation of *architects and critics not a few* | Henley Burns 234 He had *faults and failings not a few*. Cf *none* 16 631

15.68. The combination of a substantive with the indefinite article followed by a superlative with the definite article, is easily understood if we expand the post-adjunct into a whole clause *a subject which is the most painful* Examples. Fielding 3 423 fear, *a passion the most repugnant* to greatness | Franklin 145 it formed *a scene the most resembling* our ideas of hell that could well be imagin'd | Byron DJ 3 51 *A thing* to human feelings *the most trying* | Scott Iv 175 *an argument the most persuasive* to their minds | Quincey 75 In Somersetshire, which is *a county the most ill-watered* of all in England | Austen S 183 treating their disengagement as *a deliverance the most real, a blessing the most important* | Di N 253 The storm had given way to *a calm the most profound* | GE A 263 Adam reopened the subject in *a way the least difficult* for him to answer | Thack N 397 Miss E chose to appear in *a toilette the very grandest and finest* which she had ever assumed | Lang T 183 The Revenge keeps green the me-

moiy of *an exploit the most marvellous* in the annals of English seamen

We have parallel instances, in which the substantive, though indefinite, does not admit the indefinite article, thus especially in the plural. Quincey 3 under the mere coercion of *pain the severest* | Scott Iv 85 upon *accusations the most absurd and groundless* | Di Do 72 under *circumstances* and in *combinations the most completely foreign* to its purpose

15.69. A somewhat similar use of a definite post-adjunct after a substantive with the indefinite article is seen in the following quotations (*the opposite to commonplace* = 'not at all c') Bronte P 21 [a man] of *an appearance the opposite to common place* | ib 56 with *an air the reverse of civil* | Ru Sel 1 217 *facts the direct reverse* of those represented.

15.71. A peculiar kind of descriptive substantival group post-adjuncts has developed in recent times from the predicative use (which will be discussed in a future chapter) in "when he was my age | what colour are his eyes," etc Examples

Thack V 309 an old gentleman held *a boy* in his arms *about the age* of little Rawdon | GE A 190 many a *man twice his age* | Swinb L 199 the usual boy's weakness for *women twice his age* | Austen E 156 her *eyes, a deep grey*, with dark eyelashes, had . . | Merriman S 14 the dirt rubs off and leaves *the hand quite a good colour* | ib 14 This is an Englishman You never see *fingers this shape* in Russia | Twain M 22 many *towns the size of ours* were burned | Hardy F 407 it left a *hole the size of a wafer* | Gissing R 191 nowhere could I discern *a cloud the size of a man's hand* | Mered R 42 a rope thick enough for a couple of *men his size and weight.*

15.72. In the following quotations the post-adjuncts are originally detached first-words of compounds (cf 13, especially 13.64 and 13.82): Bradley M 175 a large number of *words originally slang* | Alden U 47 paupers in re-

ceipt of *relief, indoor and outdoor*, . . . | Jackson S 57 an accomplished *public speaker, both indoor and open-air* | Stevenson M 124 the *house next door* should fly on fire.

15.73. We now come to adverbial semi-predicative post-adjuncts, as in Sh R2 IV. 1.188 [two buckets, filling one another, The emptier euer dancing in the ayre, The other downe, vnseene, and full of water] *That bucket downe*, and full of teares am I = 'that bucket, which is down and full . . .' From such combinations as *the house here, the man in the street*, etc., the transition is gradual to the following: Caine E 186 One of the parties *already there* might serve | Carlyle S 20 a thing commendable, indeed, but natural, indispensable, and *there* of course | Di N 508 he looked very fiercely at a sparrow *hard by* | By DJ 5 79 After the manner *then in fashion there* | Quincey 100 with elements *only yet perhaps in the earliest stages of development* | Phillpotts K 49 a valet *out of employment* [cf an out-of-work labourer 14 62] | the latest thing *out* | Austen M 42 A girl *not out* [= not introduced to society] has always the same sort of dress | ib 43 girls not out | Caine C 124 he was an idol *out for an airing*

15.74. Thus frequently *out* followed by a participle: Caine C 148 the streets were thronged with little family groups *out shopping* | Chesterton B 184 the sensations of a schoolboy *out fishing* [*out fishing* originally *out a (on) fishing* with the verbid substantive].

15.75. From *he was out hunting* we get the following very free use of *out hunting* added to a substantive, it can hardly be called a post-adjunct as it is really connected with another (not expressed) subject Harrison R 202 there was . . . no fear of *a fall out hunting*, for he could not sit a hack, cf Ru P 1 289 no fear of my *breaking my neck out hunting*

Another free addition of *out* is found in the colloquial phrase *her day* (Monday, evening, etc) *out* = 'the day when she (the servant) is allowed to go out'. Bennett HL 108 It was Florrie's *afternoon out* | Stockton R 41 it was our boarder's *night out* | ib 84 this is his *afternoon out* Cf. *life alone* 12 29 —Cp. also Kipl P 160 their very *first day out* [= the first day they were out], my men complained

15.76. Other prepositional and adverbial groups as post-adjuncts: Austen M 42 one does not like to see a girl of eighteen so immediately *up to everything* | Stevenson JHF 133 it began to grow into a thing *of course* | Hope In 35 the only thing *for it* was to be amused | Ru T 46 to submit to a passage of Scripture *not to their fancy* | Hawth S 103 something outlandish, unearthly, or *at variance* with ordinary fashions | Hope M 32 an individual *hard-up* is a pathetic sight —*A thing of course* is not exactly on the same footing as *a man of honour*.

In some cases it seems easier to use a group as a post-adjunct if it is accompanied by a subjunct, than when standing alone; thus in Macaulay H 2.170 they showed their hostility in a way *very little to their honour* —where the combination *a way to their honour* would not in itself be tolerated

15.77. As *I am off* = *I am going off*, and *he was back (home)* = *he was (had) come back (home)*, we have a corresponding use of these adverbs as post-adjuncts; thus also *not long from* = 'having come recently from': Black F 2 119 He was like a schoolboy *off for holidays* | Caine C 227 I feel like a sailor *home from sea* | ib 391 people *home from the races* were going into taverns | Caine E 506 a young officer, *home for his Easter holidays*, stepped out of the train | Caine P 18 A young sailor named Hans Thomsen, lately *home from a voyage*, was . . . | Chesterton B 44 the affectionate indulgence of a circle of maiden aunts towards a boy *home for the holidays* | Caine C 299 Lady Ure, *back from the honeymoon*, received the guests | Kipl P 53 my own men-at-arms, *not six months in England* | Doyle S 118 a very young man *straight from the University* | Besant First 6 it was sold to Rice, then a young man, *not long from Cambridge*, and just called to the bar Cf the predicative use in Doyle S 4.103 he is more than a private, and *is not long from India*.

Infinitive Post-Adjuncts.

15.8. Among semi-predicative post-adjuncts special mention must be made of infinitives with *to* The infinitive may be active or passive in form, but the former in some instances has an active, in others a passive signification Some instances of infinitive post-adjuncts after *one* have already been given in 10.522.

15.81. The infinitive with *to* denotes simple futurity and stands as a kind of future participle. This is found with few verbs only, most frequently with *to come*, which is often contrasted with *past* and *present*; on the other hand it is not possible to say, for instance, *the girl to laugh* meaning 'the girl who will (or is going to) laugh' Examples Sh H4A 1 3 171 in *time to come* | Bacon A 14 17 wee forgot both dangers past, and *feares to come* | Bunyan G 148 that I might escape the *wrath to come* | Wordsw P 6 242 with us in the past, The present, with us in the *times to come* (cf ib 9 169, 14 110) | Haggard S 183 what proportions of *fact*, past, present, or *to come* | Hewlett Q 252 towards a *day-to-come* of insult || Ru Sel 1 41 in the olden *days* of travelling, now *to return no more* | McCarthy 2 547 one central university to which existing colleges and *colleges to exist hereafter* might affiliate themselves | Ritchie M 156 for the first time I heard the name of this good *friend-to-be* | Bennett A 76 she dreamed impossibly of a *spirituality never to be hers.*

The phrase *kingdom-come* = 'life after death', which is now used as a variant of *the kingdom to come*, is taken from the Lord's Prayer, where of course *come* is the subjunctive Thackeray E 2 124 parsons frightened us with kingdom come | Bennett B 214 you never know when you mayn't be in kingdom come | Phillpotts K 105 helping the poor lady to Kingdom Come

15.821. The infinitive means 'that is to, that might, would, or should . .', thus especially after words implying what is proper or typical· Sh Tp II. 1 314 'twas *a din to fright* a monsters eare | Austen P 352 she is not *the kind of girl to do* such a thing | Austen M 14 their

schemes were sometimes of *a nature to make* a third very useful | ib 24 *the very age* of all others *to need* most attention and care | Macaulay E 4 45 Clive was *not a man to do* anything by halves (thus also ib 4.291, Hope Q 95, Caine C 416) | Di D 565 they must be made of *stuff to stand* wear and tear | Di X 55 a cheap funeral . I don't know of *anybody to go* to it | Harraden S 94 you are not *the type of man to be generous* to women | Swinb L 23 *the sort of boy* always *to do decently well* under any circumstances (also ib 251) | Hope Ch 226 she, and she alone, was *the woman to be his* | GE Mm 237 Poor mamma indeed was *an object to touch* any creature | Quiller Couch M 66 Naturally that would be *the explanation to occur* to you | Stevenson V 96 there are not many *Dr Johnsons, to set forth* upon their first voyage at 64

15.822. *The first to come, and the last to leave* means 'the first that comes (came)', etc . Austen P 190 Elizabeth had been the *first to listen* and to pity, *the first to be admired*

After *something, anything, nothing* the infinitive can often be paraphrased by means of 'that can, or may': Austen M 80 whether we may not find *something to employ* us here | ib 195 certain of seeing *something to pain* me | GE Mm 45 I beg your pardon if I have said *anything to hurt* you

Similarly very often after *there is*. Wordsw 109 A maid whom *there were none to praise* And very few to love | Poe 105 *there was much* in the recluse *to excite* interest | Haggard S 13 *there is nothing* in this paper *to make* me change my mind | Wilde P 73 For pity and terror *there is nothing* in the entire cycle of Greek tragedy *to touch* it | Hope D 56 *there isn't a girl* in London *to touch* her.

15.823. After *with*, the infinitive approaches the function of a present participle (and is coordinated with one in the first quotation), though it implies rather some kind of duty: Di Do 68 with this notable *attendant to pull him* along, and Florence always walking by his side,

he went down . . . | Hope D 26 a pensive sigh, with a *glance* at Archie's photograph *to follow*.

15.83. A frequent phrase is *That has nothing to do with*, thus in Sh Ven 638 Beautie hath naught to do with such foule fiends | Mi C 122 what hath night to do with sleep? | Mi PR 2.389 And with my hunger what hast thou to do? | Di N 299 not because that had anything to do with the plot | ib 695 that has nothing to do with his blustering just now | Hardy L 44 Can it have anything to do with his not writing to me | Shaw C 213 I dont quite see what that has to do with it

This is still very frequent (e.g. Di Do 193, Ru Sel 1 261, Doyle S 1 153, 5 197, 6 56, Shaw 1 229, Harraden D 240), also with *got*, as in Hope D 107 I don't see what that's got to do with it But in recent use we find also *is*, *was*, instead of *has*, *had*. Perhaps this may have started with the rapid pronunciation of *has* [s] *(what's that to do with me?)* which was interpreted as the homonymous *'s* = *is*, at any rate it is now extremely frequent in colloquial English (I hope it has been nothing to do with your health? | Would that be anything to do with the floods?) and not unfrequent in recent books, e g Jerrold C 53 Besides, what I have had *is nothing to do* with it | Merriman S 160 This *is nothing to do* with your life | Zangwill G 134 What *was it to do* with him that he could see no way | Doyle S 6 164 if *it was to do* with money | Hope D 37 it *was nothing to do* with Hilary.

As *to do with* here = 'connected with', this group is also found as an independent post-adjunct without any preceding verb (only after *everything, anything, nothing*?): Harraden D 233 interested in *everything to do* with the stage | Phillpotts M 176 he understood oak minding and *everything to do* with it | Ward M 436 she seemed to shrink with horror from *everything to do* with Verona | Galsworthy C 62 Horace does so dislike *anything to do* with the papers | Galsworthy M 192 very obscure, *everything to do* with origins!

15.841. A passive signification is sometimes found in an infinitive post-adjunct in spite of the active form This is a survival from the time when the infinitive (like other verbid substantives) was indifferent to the distinction between active and passive. The passive sense is frequent when the infinitive is connected with a preceding adjective. *the proper (correct, decent) thing to do.* Hope Q 201 it was *the handsome* thing *to do.*

15.842. Without an adjective the infinitive often has nearly the same signification *he is not a man to know* (Di D 396, Philips L 45) = 'a proper man to know, a man worth knowing' | Butler N 166 The *thing to say* about me just now is that my humour is forced.—Thus also in the following instances, where the verb is followed by a preposition More U 140 anye numbre *to speake of* | Barrie MO 201 I have no pain to speak of | Stevenson V 37 a young lady eats nothing to speak of ! Trollope D 1 81 Nothing to speak of is so apt to grow into that which has to be spoken of || James S 94 It wasn't a thing *to talk about*—it was only a thing *to feel* || Di D 339 I doubted if she were quite the sort of woman *to confide in* || Collingwood R 73 Turner was not a man *to make an intimate of*, all at once

15.843. In the following quotations, too, the infin. has a passive signification, though not exactly the same as in the preceding examples Austen M 7 we shall probably see *much to wish altered* in her | Di N 311 keeping it up till *everything to drink* was disposed of | Wells M 49 but that is a *question to consider* later | Benson D 25 what he wanted in a wife was *someone to love*

15.851. After *have* the infinitive frequently has the passive sense, as in Mi PL 2.415 he had *much to see* | McCarthy 2.555 he had a very hard *task to perform* | Doyle S 2.236 the brisk manner of a woman who has had *her own way to make* in the world

These cases, in which the substantive is clearly the object of *have*, sometimes approach in meaning those in

which the infinitive after *have to* has its own object The difference between *I have something to tell you* and *I have to [I must] tell you something* is not always very well marked, note however Trollope's phrase that some authors *write because they have to tell a story rather than because they have a story to tell* The distinction is effaced when the object precedes, thus when it is an interrogative pronoun (as in Sh Cy IV 2 124 What haue we to loose? or Mi PL 1.567 Awaiting what command thir mighty chief Had to impose), and also sometimes in poetic diction (as in Mi PL 2 920 Pondering his voyage for no narrow frith He had to cross)

15.852. The passive signification is also found after *with* (= 'having') Di Do 2 married to a lady *with no heart to give him* | Wells N 519 You've left me *with nothing to do*—and after *there is*: Parker R 87 it was not you alone that had to be considered There were your *friends to consider* | Ellis N 155 if there is *fault to find* in the construction of Ibsen's prose dramas it lies in their richness of material | James S 29 There are *things to puzzle out* || Shaw 2.149 when there is *money to give*, he gives it: when there is *money to refuse*, I refuse it [= 'when we have to give money', different from 'when we have money to give'].

In Hope Q 79 *Mary had pleaded letters to write* the meaning also is passive: 'letters that were to be written, letters that she had to write'.

15.86. Sometimes we find two coordinated infinitives, of which one has an active and the other a passive sense Defoe G 60 Of what use is it to man that he has *a tongue to speak* [= to speak with, with which he can speak], that he has *books to read* [= which can be read by him] | Di D 443 there is *nobody to blame* for this,—*nobody to answer* for it.

15.871. The passive infinitive is found as post-adjunct in many cases, the last three quotations show it as a kind of future participle contrasted with the ordinary

past participle· Bacon A 3.23 a peece of crimson velvett *to be presented* to the officer | Bunyan G 146 There is an endless kingdom *to be inhabited,* and everlasting life *to be given us* . There are crowns of glory to be given us | Defoe R 145 the baking part was the next thing *to be consider'd* | Johnson R 117 she saw nothing more *to be tried* | Scott A 2 10 of all confidents *to be selected* as the depositary of love affairs, Oldbuck seems the most extraordinary | Shelley L 953 an imagination *not to be restrained* | ib 709 It is a nose once seen *never to be forgotten* | Ru Sel 1 287 in a way *not to be forgotten* | Ru T 90 a higher legal authority *presently to be defined* | Williamson S 193 it almost made up for everything endured and still *to be endured* | Galsworthy C 132 a difficulty felt by others in times past, and *to be felt* again in times to come | Saintsbury Cbr H Engl. Lit 3 295 in the way mentioned above, and *to be described* below

The adjunctal character is clearly seen from the use of the subjunct *the most* in Wilde P 92 "one of the things in history *the most* to be regretted", and from the juxtaposition of the infinitive and a relative adjunct-clause in Austen M 193 there was nothing more to be said, or that could be said to any purpose This also shows us the difference between the construction here considered and *nothing more was to be said,* parallel to the above distinction between *he had nothing more to say* and *he had to say nothing more*

15.872. The same employment of an infinitive of a verbal phrase Austen P 202 she saw much *to be pleased with* | Di Do 233 a variety of little matters *to be gone through* | Chesterton B 80 her father was in truth not a man *to be treated with* | Bennett C 1 205 houses *to be lived in.*

15.88. While we have in Di Do 78 "the conclusion that Dombey was *a man to be known,* and that J. B. was *the boy to make his acquaintance*" a clear specimen of the difference between the active and the passive infinitive,

in other instances the two are found in close juxtaposition with no appreciable difference; in the second quotation it is probably the subjunct *at once* that causes the passive turn to be chosen: Di N 656 the wayfarer sees with each returning sun some new obstacle *to surmount*, some new light *to be attained* | Carpenter P 61 one of the very first and most practical things *to do*, and *to be done* at once, is to turn the Prisons into Industrial Asylums | Shaw D 110 Bohemians who have no position *to lose* and no career *to be closed* | Ward E 20 there was so *much to see* at Florence No—pardon me!—there is *nothing to be seen* at Florence

15.89. Combinations of *about to* with infinitives (active and passive) are employed as post-adjuncts. Bronte P 6 conjectures concerning the meeting *about to take place* | Ru T 194 a remnant of one [a fleet], *about to be put up* to auction | McCarthy 2 92 no one could have had the slightest foreboding of anything *about to happen* | Caine P 237 he stood by the stove with drooping head like a prisoner *about to receive* his sentence | Hope In 57 She did not realise that she, now or *about to be* a social power, was to do . .

15.9. Clause adjuncts are always placed after their principals, for examples see 1.84 A full treatment of relative clauses will be given in a future instalment of this work.

Chapter XVI.
Functions of the Pronouns.

16.11. It will be the object of this chapter to examine which pronouns and which pronominal forms can be used as principals, which as adjuncts, and which as subjuncts (cf 1.72) This question is very simple with regard to some pronouns, while with others it presents very complicated problems

Personal Pronouns.

16.12. The personal pronouns *I (me), we (us), thou (thee), ye, you, he (him), she (her), they (them)* are only used as principals.

16.13. *Them,* however, occurs in vulgar speech as an adjunct, corresponding to standard *those* This word *them*, which can hardly be called a 'personal pronoun', is used without any regard to the case of the substantive it is added to. NED *them* 5 has examples as far back as 1596. Sh does not seem to know it, but Bunyan writes G 24 he should speak *them* words. Recent examples: Di Ch 73 *them gentlefolks* will search and search | Thack V 251 shave off *them mustachios* | ib 498 *them grapes* are sour | Hardy L 192 all *them miles* | Shaw C 193 one of *them smashers*

Possessive Pronouns.

16.211. The difference between *mine (thine)* and *my (thy)* was at first purely phonetic. In OE the pronouns had everywhere the *n*-sound, but in ME the *n* began to disappear before a consonant while it was retained before a vowel (and *h*). When the word stood alone (as a principal), *n* was retained partly because of the stronger emphasis, partly because the word had vocalic endings in many cases (OE *mīne, mīnum*, etc., ME *mine*)

Examples of the difference according to the first sound of the following substantive are Ch T (from Kittredge) 461 *my* dere hert, allas *myn* hele and hewe | 1560 *myn* herte ayens *my* lust | 566 *thi* synne and *thyn* offence. (Before a consonant *myn* is sometimes found, thus regularly in MS C of Troilus) —From Caxton R 18 *my* formest feet, *my* chekes and *myn* eeris.—From Marlowe F 337 To slay *mine* enemies, and ayde *my* friends | 284 of *mine* owne accord | 285 *my* conjuring | 491 I cut *mine* arm, and with *my* proper blood Assure *my* soul | 594 *thine* eie

. . *thy* heart (Ml has the forms without *n* before *h*. F 594 thy heart | T 2086 my husband).

16.212. From the end of the 16th c. the forms *my, thy* were, however, analogically extended to those cases in which they serve as adjuncts before a vowel (and *h*) Shakespeare is not so consistent as Marlowe; we have very often *n* before a vowel, thus in *mine own* (all instances in Lr, all but one in Mids), though *my own* is by no means rare. Tp I 2 25 my art, 28 mine art | Hml I. 3.68 Giue euery man *thine eare*, but few *thy voyce* | I. 5 40 O *my prophetick* soule *mine uncle* In many cases the old editions disagree, thus in Lr I. 1 155 F thine enemies, Q thy | I 1.167 F thine allegiance, Q thy | I. 4 160 thine ass, Q thy. These and other similar instances might be interpreted as showing that the actors said *thy*, even when the book had *thine*, or else the shorthand writers, to whom the quartos are due, made no distinction between the two forms in their notes —Before *h* we have once *mine heart* (Meas IV 3.157) and regularly *mine host* (except only H4A IV 2 50 my host), Wiv IV. 5 19 *thine host*. Before other words beginning with *h* Sh always has *my*.

Al Schmidt (Sh-lex) tries to establish the rule that if the pronoun was stressed *my, thy* were preferred before a vowel, but otherwise *mine, thine*, he cites H6B II 1 31 Why, Suffolk, England knows *thine* insolence. And *thý* ambition, Gloster But this rule cannot be maintained in all cases, though it seems to be supported by R2 I 3.242—5 And in the sentence *mý* owne life destroyed . . I was too strict to make *mine* ówne away But you gaue leaue to *mý* unwilling tong (The accents show the verse ictus, not sense emphasis)

16.213. In Milton's poetry there is a certain number of forms with *n* before a vowel, especially before *own, eye, ear*; his inconsistency in the use is shown in SA 217—8 Then of *thine* own tribe fairer, or as fair, At least of *thy* own nation, and as noble Bunyan sometimes has *mine* before vowels (G 10 mine end, mine own; 31 mine ears; 35 mine eyes; 42 mine eye), also 10 mine hand, but e.g.

31 my ears. Swift seems to have *mine* only before *eyes* (3.292, 3.334) and in the vulgar *mine arse* (J 57, 61); but before all other words with vowels and *h* he uses the form *my* Pope has generally *my* in all cases, but once *mine* and once *thine* before *eye(s)* and twice *thine* before *ears*. Before *eye* the old form with *n* thus seems to have had more vitality than in other cases, probably to avoid the ill-sounding repetition of the diphthong [ai] Another survival of the old form is *mine host* (*h* was formerly mute, I. 2.943), which is used archaically by Scott (e.g A 1.21), Thack (N 177), etc Other archaisms are found occasionally in 19th c. poets, thus Tennyson 38 Like *mine* own life | 39 *mine* eyes | 39 *thine* arms entwine *My* other dearer life (which shows how artificial it is) | Swinb SbS 84 *thine* heart . . *thine* eyes, etc

16.22. In ordinary prose, since the beginning of the 18th c , the form *my* has been the only natural form of the pronoun used as an adjunct

My thus can never stand alone. The only exception is the use as an exclamation, which is an instance of aposiopesis, the speaker breaking off before saying some such word as *God*: Caine C 37 *My!* he has caught it | Twain M 87 *My*, what a race I've had!

16.231. The chief use of *mine (thine)* in ModE is as a principal, generally anaphoric, as in Sh Tp I 2 302 subject to no sight but *thine*, and *mine* | his fortune is greater than either yours or *mine*. A good example of the difference between *my* and *mine* is Page J 120 You are *all mine* [*all* subjunct = altogether, *mine* principal], and *my all* [*my* adjunct, *all* principal]

On *mine was the notion* . = my notion was one . . see 10 98

16.232. In some cases *mine* is not anaphoric, but stands independently = 'my people', but only after the corresponding personal pronoun:

[Ch B 3070 wronges that ye have doon agayn me and myne] | Caxton R 56 that we and owris may abyde

in honour and worship | Sh R3 II. 1.24 so thriue I, and mine | Barrie M 436 what he did for me and mine that day | Kipl B 146 | Bridges E 160 from thee and thine | Tenn L 2 247 I am grateful for the enquiring after myself and mine.

Milton uses the possessive pronoun in the same sense without any preceding personal pronoun: SA 291 Mee easily indeed mine may neglect | ib 1169 thine. This is now contrary to English idiom, but may have been more usual in former times, cf. More U 269 Christ instytuted amonge hys all thynges commen

In dialects *come to mine* is used = 'come to my house' Ellis EEP V 249, 261

16.233. *Mine* may sometimes stand = 'my task, my turn': Sh Meas II. 2 12 Goe to, let that be mine | Wordsworth P 13.12 'tis mine To speak

16.24. Besides, *mine* may be used as a kind of adjunct after the substantive in addressing some one affectionately: Ch T 2 1714 Come, *nece myn* | Sh Tp V. 1.75 You *brother mine* | Tw II 3 40 O *Mistris mine*, where are you roming? | Shelley Epips 383 *Lady mine* | id L 2.885 *Dearest mine* | Rossetti 83 Fair *Jenny mine* (ib 85) | Wells N 476 Oh! *Husband mine*, believe me!—*Mine* might here perhaps be explained as not being properly an adjunct to the preceding word, but as originally an independent address, and therefore necessarily a principal: *Lady mine* = *Lady! mine!* Cf. 15.45

Cf also the cases of semi-predicative post-adjuncts (15.64) as Tenn 99 O my Amy, *mine* no more.

16.25. When a principal is preceded by two possessives joined by means of *and (or)*, the former may take either the form *mine* or *my* (rarer):

Dekker S 9 *thine* and my owne tormentor | Sh Ado V. 1 249 upon *mine* and my masters false accusation | Hml V. 2.341 *Mine* and my fathers death come not upon thee | Cy V. 5 230 | Mi SA 808 *Mine* and love's prisoner | Mi PL 10.180 between *thine* and her seed | Goldsm 619 without

mine or her aunt's consent | By 586 Like *mine* or any other subject's breath | Shelley L 952 both for *mine* and Mary's health | Tenn L 3.36 *Mine* and my wife's love to the Duchess.

[Mi PL 8.637 *thine* and of all thy sons The weal or woe.]

Whitman L 87 all the belongings of *my* or your body or of any one's body.

Nowadays the difficulty is generally avoided, either by the use of *my own* (Thack P 3 34 I will not forget my own or her honour), or by some transposition (Sh Wint V. 1.167 my arrivall, and my wifes | Lamb E 1.141 to my utter astonishment and her own | Quincey 83 both on his own account and mine | Shaw 2 66 you are very solicitous about my happiness and his), or by *of* (Hardy T 411 For the sake of me and my husband)—Sh Tp III 3 93 "his and *mine* lou'd darling" is abnormal

16.26. On the analogy of *my* · *mine* the other possessives developed forms in *n* used as principals, though these forms have never ceased to be vulgar: Wallis 1653 mentions *hern*, *ourn*, *yourn* with the addition "barbarice"; Cooper 1685 similarly *ourn*, *yourn*, *hern*, *theirn* "quidam malè"; Pegge 1803 *hisn*, *hern*, *ourn*, *yourn*. Alford p. 211 gives the rime "He that prigs what isn't *his'n*, When he's cotched, is sent to prison. She that prigs what isn't *her'n*, At the threadmill takes a turn". Thus Di Do 16 *your'n* | Thenks 50 that there gel o' *yaun* [= girl of yours] | Ridge S 13 a shirt like *yourn* | ib 86 why don't they learn a decent language, like *ourn*? | Masefield W 58 *yourn* (: burn).

In Scotch we have the form *mines* as a principal, formed on the analogy of *yours*, etc Murray D 192 gives as examples "aa'll gi'ye yoors, quhan ye bryng mey meynes | meynes is the bæst æfter aa" Thus Stevenson C 69 neither your affair nor mine's But in id U XVI it seems used as a plural form · For the sürest friends are the auldest friends, And the maist o' mines hae left me.

16.27. No distinction corresponding to that between *my* and *mine* is made in Standard English with *his* and

its (just as a genitive like *John's* is used both before a substantive and alone). But the possessives ending in *-r* have developed a special form in *-s* used as a principal: *yours* (sometimes written *your's*), *ours*, *hers*, *theirs*. The *s* here is the genitive mark added superfluously (as in Danish *deres*, *jeres*, *eders*, Dan vg. or colloquial *vores*). The form without *s* was used as late as 1550 in Bale L 1475 eternall dampnacyon is *youre* (riming with *deuoure*) On the beginning of the form in *s* see Morris's ed. of Ayenbite p 54. Chaucer has both forms. In ElE the usage is exactly as now

16.281. Examples of the ordinary anaphoric use of the forms in *-s*: Sh Merch IV. 1 96 Let their beds Be made as soft as *yours* . The slaues are *ours*. Examples of the rarer non-anaphoric use Sh Meas V. 1 543 What's mine is *yours*, and what is *yours* is mine | R3 II 1.33 [he] Doth cherish you, and *yours*. . . When I am cold in loue to you or *yours*.

Thus also *he and his*

More U 157 whatsoeuer he and hys haue neade of | Caine P 261 He and his have robbed me of my daughters.

16.282. *Theirs* = their task (cf. 16.233): Tennyson 222 *Their's* not to make reply, *Their's* not to reason why. *Their's* but to do and die [thus printed, but it should be rather *Theirs* without an apostrophe, with *is* understood]

Theirs as a semi-predicative post-adjunct see 15.64.

16.283. A special case is found where, as in the following instances, *ours* or *theirs* really defines the *we* or *they* contained in the possessive pronoun.

Dickinson S 83 that is our task and our privilege, ours of the new generation | Browning 1 424 Show me then shaping, Theirs who most studied man | Swinb SbS 49 And the wrong of the old world straightway Pass from the face of her fame Hers, whom we turn to and cry on, Italy, mother of men

16.29. In the cases corresponding to those in 16 25, we have the same hesitation between both forms, though those without *s* are now found more often than *my*.

Sh Cymb V. 5.186 By *hers*, and mine adultery | Tp II. 1 253 In *yours* and my discharge | Cor V 6 4 In *theirs* and in the commons eares | Peele D 427 *ours* and Jacobs God | Cowper L 1.378 from *yours* and my uncle's opinion | Thack E 2.144 to represent *yours* and her very humble servant | Darwin L 2 308 without Lyell's, *yours*, Huxley's and Carpenter's and

Cowper L 1 27 I shall not cease to be *their* and your affectionate friend | Lamb E 1.110 between *our* and their fathers | Carlyle S 71 to cut *your* and each other's throat | GE L 3.112 I enter into *your* and Cara's furniture-adjusting labours (also 4.18, 4 167, 266) | Bennett W 2 203 *her* and Sophia's old bedroom | Archer NP '06 to criticize *their*, and the President's position

Examples in which the difficulty is evaded in the same ways as in 16.25

Carlyle H 97 Turn away *your own* and others' face | Thack P 2 103 trifle with *your own* and others' hearts || Malory 92 *your* enemy and myn | Marl J 969 For *your* sake and his owne | Austen S 250 to request *her* company and her sister's | Austen M 377 I am at *your* service and Henry's | Thack P 2 229 as becomes one of *your* name and my own | GE M 2 324 I measured *your* love and his by my own | Wells T 10 she had made *her* point of view and Filmer's plain enough || Thack V 372 For the expenses *of herself* and her little boy | Di N 561 my regard for the feelings *of yourself* and your daughter | Ward R 2.297 the shortest way to the pockets *of you* and me

It is rare to find *their* separated from the substantive by a prepositional group as in Mrs Browning A 21 their, in brief, potential faculty.

Demonstrative Pronouns.

16.31. *This* and *that* are originally neuter forms, OE *þis*, *þæt* corresponding to masc. *þes*, *se* and fem. *þeos*, *seo* But in ME these forms were extended to the other genders, both when the words were used as adjuncts to substantives and as principals; the other forms originally corresponding to *that* were gradually weakened into the 'definite article' *the*, while *that* retained more of the old demonstrative force. While in the adjunctal function the plural forms *these* and *those* correspond exactly to the singulars *this* and *that*, the same cannot be said with regard to the same forms used as principals, for here *this* and *that* can no longer be used in speaking of persons, while *these* and *those* can. The sg of *those who* is not *that who* (which is not used), but *he who (she who)*, similarly there is no sg *that present* corresponding to the pl *those present*

We shall first consider the anaphoric use of *that (those)* and then the independent use of *that (those)* and *this (these)*.

16.321. *That (those)* is often used anaphorically followed by a participle or adjective, though there is now a tendency to substitute *the one* (10 51 ff): Sh Lucr 1589 Foretell new stormes to *those alreadie spent* ! Mi A 33 a servitude like *that impos'd* by the Philistines | Scott Iv 59 respecting language, I willingly hold communion in *that spoken* by my grandmother | GE A 115 She's at another gate now—*that leading* into Fir-tree Grove | Ru T & T 19 any system of business, broadly contrary to *that now established* by custom | McCarthy 2.611 Another secret engagement was *that entered into* with Turkey | Parker R 5 there was no material for defence save *that offered* by the prosecution | Harrison NP '01 the whole educational machinery must be at least tenfold that of the United Kingdom. *That open to women* must be at least twentyfold greater than with us | NP conditions may vary from *those*

known, and even from those that presented themselves at the time.

16.322. Anaphoric *that* (and *those*) is very frequent before *of*:

Cowper L 1 51 No law ever did effect what he has ascribed to *that of Moses* | Johnson R 126 your dress and *that of your servants* | Scott Iv 153 more moved by the Templar's dangerous situation than he had been by *that of his rival* | Macaulay B 205 His temper was *that of a slave* | Thack S 169 let his fate and *that of his poor wife* be remembered | Di Do 447 the old woman's face was anxious and expectant, *that of her daughter* was expectant, too, but in a less degree | Thack N 202 Here will be your place, and here *that of your young friend* | Stevenson D 82 give this letter with your own hands into *those of Miss Fonblanque*.

This combination is especially useful where from one reason or another no genitive in *s* can be used.

Quincey 78 the silence was more profound than *that of midnight* | Austen M 57 whatever may contribute to its own amusement or *that of others* | ib 228 of less moment in his eyes than in *those of any other person in the house* | Di N 504 the wall dividing their garden from *that of the next cottage* | GE A 444 with a glory beyond *that of amber or amethyst* | Barrie T 323 This idea that his fate was bound up with *that of the plant* | McCarthy 2.292 unwilling to take on him the burden of such an office as *that of Prime-minister* | Waid M 457 the difference between my life and *that of other men I know* | Stevenson D 186 the case is but a flea-bite to *that of him who should be linked to an explosive bomb* | Haggard S 153 the face before me was *that of a young woman of thirty years*.

16.323. Anaphoric *that* before other prepositions. Shelley 720 And pity from thee more dear Than *that from another* | id Pr 273 the fountains of Rome . . . *That in the Piazza Navona* is composed . . | Austen M 67 the pain of her mind had been much beyond *that in her head* |

Scott Iv 79 Gurth sleeps in the cell on your right, as the Jew in *that to your left* | Di N 444 the best time-keeper in London . (for Tim held the fabled goodness of *that at the Horse Guards* to be a pleasant fiction) | Haggard S 133 one of the tables, *that to the left* | Hawth S 110 she could have accomplished a much longer journey than *that before her*

Thus also before the prepositional infinitive: Wordsw P 9.109 history the past and *that to come.*

16.324. Though examples of anaphoric *that* followed by *which* are by no means rare, they are now felt to be somewhat stiff and in some cases even un-English. In such a sentence as "Have you seen my knife—I mean that which I bought yesterday, not the old one" the only natural expression is "the one I bought". Examples of *that which*:

AV Luke 15 4 if he loose one of them [sheep] . goe after that which is lost [20th c. the lost sheep] | Sh Merch V 1.185 what ring gaue you, my lord? Not that, I hope, which you receiu'd of me | Shelley Pr 295 a different scene is this from that on which you made the chief character of our Drama | Scott Iv 47 he caused one of his attendants to mount his own led horse, and give that upon which he had hitherto ridden to the stranger | Di N 565 drawing his chair nearer to that on which Nicholas was seated | Thack E 1.42 he lay in the lonely chamber next to that which the Father used to occupy | GE A 330 the face was sadly different from that which had smiled | Macaulay E 4 137 a bloody and unsparing persecution, like that which put down the Albigenses | Seeley E 74 a problem substantially similar to that which our old colonial system could not solve | Carpenter C 83 the truest truth is that which is the expression of the deepest feeling | McCarthy 2 626 The measure had exactly the opposite effect from that which was intended | Doyle S 6.167 Taking the forms he carefully examined that which was uppermost.

16.325. An anaphoric *that* before a relative clause without any pronoun is now extremely rare:

Sh Oth III. 3.309 What handkerchiefe! Why, that the Moore first gaue to Desdemona; That which so often you did bid me steale | Fielding 3.602 he wears a ring in his nose, somewhat resembling that we ring our pigs with | Defoe R 130 I took another way to come back than that I went | Di N 261 It was a harder day's journey than that they had already performed

16.33. Next we come to the non-anaphoric use of the demonstrative pronouns, as already hinted, the two numbers are not exactly parallel.

In the sg *this* and *that* in speaking of persons have perhaps at no time been very frequent, now at any rate they are very rare, and the quotation from Browning sounds quite un-English:

Malory 215 [*q* Baldwin § 90] Brewnor desyred euer worship, and *thys* desyreth brede | Sh H5 IV. 4.78 they are both hang'd, and so would *this* be, if hee dorst steale any thing aduenturously (cf. Franz § 313) | Tw V 153 and then thou art As great as *that* [= he whom] thou fear'st | Alls III 5 81 Hee, *that* [= the man, the one] with the plume 'tis a most gallant fellow | Defoe G 94 Elder and younger share the goods of fate, *This* all the brains inherits, *that* th'estate | Browning 2.256 *this* rends his hair Because his child is taken to God's breast, *That* gnashes teeth and raves at loss of trash.

In the two last quotations, *this* and *that* are used in contrast instead of the more natural *this man* and *that man* In Sh Tw it is possible that *that* should be taken as neuter, as in the words immediately preceding: Be *that* [= that which; what] thou know'st thou art.

16.341. In OE, where the forms of the neuter were different from those of the masculine and feminine genders, we find neutral forms employed in such sentences as Apoll 25 þis heo is | Beow 11 þæt wæs god cyning |

Andreas 1722 þæt is æðele cyning. In the same way ModE *this* and *that* must be considered neutral rather than personal in "This is *my* brother John" (cf Mi SA 115 This, this is he) and in "Is that you?" (e g Ridge G 167, Herrick M 336), where *that* is a more emphatic *it*: Di N 41 Is *that* you, Hannah? *It* is I, Miss La Creevy. This was formerly used very extensively, see e.g Sh Meas I. 4.6 Who's that which cals? [now rather Who is it that calls] | Err III 1 61 Who is that at the doore that keeps all this noise? Thus also in the appreciative formula: Do come at once, *that's a good girl* | Sh Tp 1.2 299 F [I will discharge thee]. That's my noble master | Di D 217 I am so glad to be here. That's a fine fellow! | Poe 117 Come now! that's a fine fellow

16.342. *That* is undoubtedly neutral in *that'll do* | *that's it* | don't talk *like that* | Dickinson S 122 we don't dress like that now etc. Also in *and that*, which serves to add a supplementary description: Sh H4A III 3.5 Ile repent, and that suddenly | Hml III 2 33 players that I haue heard others praise, and that highly | Bronte P 127 None of the Belgian girls would have retained one position, and that a reflective one, for the same length of time | Ru P 2.80 I had only yet once seen her, and that six years ago, when still a child

Note the pl in Sh H8 I. 2 18 I am solicited not by a few, And *those* of true condition

16.343. Note also the recent restrictive or wondering *at that* (corresponding to German *und noch dazu*, Dan. *endda*) as in.

Shaw D 172 they become old bachelors, and rather savage ones at that | ib 210 a bachelor, and a precious green one at that | Chesterton F 125 I'm afraid I've come on business, and rather jumpy business at that | London W 169 they had hair instead of fur, and a few had very little hair at that | Collier E 418 The only thing that produces leisure is work, and hard, painful work at that | Worth S 272 and the nigger will be lynched—probably

the wrong nigger at that | NP'11 Why should they confess? And both of them at that!

This usage, according to NED, is originally American and 'prob. extended from *dear at that, cheap at that (price)*'.

16.344. A neutral *that* serves to repeat a predicative, or a participle or infinitive of a verb mentioned before; in many cases the less emphatic *so* would now be preferred.

Sh Wiv IV. 5.60 was there a wise woman with thee? I, *that* there was | Caine S 1.94 are they coming? *That* they are | Hope Z 85 afraid for himself he was not—no man ever saw him *that* || Sh As I. 3.97 the Duke hath banish'd me his daughter. *That* he hath not | Tp V. 1.294 trim it handsomely I, *that* I will | Di Do 41 "the children will go half wild to see you Polly, *that* they will" *That* they did, if one may judge from the noise they made | Di D 479 it was not that he had lost his good looks, or his old bearing of a gentleman—for *that* he had not || Hope R 167 they asked one another what brought his Majesty abroad at such an hour—and *that* in Strelsau when all the world thought he was at Zenda | Ru F 5 I should be ashamed if there were anything in Fors which had not been said before,—and *that* a thousand times.

In the following quotation the same *that* seemingly stands for a plural substantive:

Mill Fox 2.277 the book can never be liked by any but students, and I do not want them to spoil themselves by becoming *that* on my account [becoming students]

16.351. The use of *that* as an independent neuter before a participle or infinitive (= that which is) is completely obsolete. Sh Lucr 1256 not *that deuour'd*, but that which doth deuour, is worthie blame | Sh Tp III. 2 106 *that most deeply to consider* is the beautie of his daughter (now: the thing most . .).

16.352. But before a relative clause *that* is very often used as an independent neuter; *that which* expresses very nearly the same thing as *what*, which is now more generally used; if there is any difference, *what* is a little more indefinite and thus approaches the signification of *whatever* Examples of *that which*:

AV Luke 16.12 if ye haue not bene faithful *in that which* is another mans who shall giue you *that which* is your owne? [20th c · if you have proved untrustworthy *with what* belongs to another who will give you what belongs to us] | ib 16 15 *that which* is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God [20th c. *what* accounts for much with men .] | Defoe P.7 *that which* encouraged them was, that the city was healthy | Byron 631 Remorse of *that which* was—and hope of that which cometh not | Wordsworth 257 *what* delights the sense is false and weak The wise man, I affirm, can find no rest In *that which* perishes . love betters *what* is best | Wilde P 107 *that which* is the keynote of romantic art was to him the proper basis of natural life | Merriman S 64 Never tell a woman *that which* is not interesting enough to magnify into a secret.

Sometimes *that which* is chosen because *what* would be taken as an interrogative Moulton Sh 8 the ordinary reader has little idea of *that which* is the sense of my argument—the degree of regularity

16.353. This independent neuter *that* may be followed by the relative *that*, in speaking, though not in writing, the two pronouns are easily distinguished [ðæt ðət]

Sh Wiv I 1 218 I shall doe *that that* is reason | ib II. 2 216 Pursuing *that that* flies, and flying *what* pursues || Hope D 52 it's just *that that* makes stories like yours so infernally uninteresting | Hope Z 171 it's not only *that*, sir, *that* keeps him away | Stevenson M 282 it was partly *that that* brought me down

It will be noticed, however, that in the modern instances *that* is more emphatic than in the old ones.

16.354. Instead of *that which* we sometimes find *that what* or *what . . that* (in the latter case *that* only adds emphasis to *what*):

Burns 2.30 *That what* is not sense must be nonsense | Shaw P 95 *What* man could, *that* we did.

16.355. *That* before a relative clause is often used in an indefinite sense approaching to 'something', especially after *there is*:

Sh Hml I. 2.85 But I haue that within, which passeth show | Sh Tp I 2 359 thy vild race . had that in't, which good natures could not abide to be with | Scott Iv 423 here is that will pay for horse and man | Di N 750 There was that in her manner which prepared Nicholas for what was coming | Hardy L 199 there was that in the look of Mop's one dark eye which said . . | Merriman S 217 perhaps he did understand, for there was that in her eyes that made her meaning clear.

When *that* is used in Elizabethan English (and earlier, e g Ch B 3958) where now we should say *what*, the natural feeling nowadays would take it as the demonstrative pronoun with relative omitted, thus stressing *that* [ðæt], but the metre in some passages seems to show that it was, or might be, the weak-stressed relative pronoun [ðət], see the next two examples[1]. Greene F 2.13 Bacon, we hear that long we have suspected | Sh As III 2.77 I earne that I eate· get that I weare | Wint III 3 5 The heauens with that we haue in hand are angry (see other ex Sh-lex. p. 1196) | AV Exod 3 14 I am that I am.

16.36. *This* is frequently used neutrally. this is not true | this is all I have to say | will this do? | hold the glass like this, etc. Sh Hml I 3 78 This aboue all.

[1] In this case it would be a parallel to *that = he that* hand some is that handsome does

to thine own selfe be true. It is = 'this place': I shall *leave this* to-morrow | Austen M 69 the roads *between this* and Sotherton, or = 'this time, this moment' (after a preposition): *before this* | *after this* | Sh Ado I. 1.3 He is very neere *by this* | Di Do 101 *between this* and breakfast. In letters, especially commercial ones, *this* = 'this letter': this is to inform you | when you receive this, etc.

16.371. *Those* = 'those persons' is very often used as a principal, followed by an adjective (participle), a relative clause, or an adverbial adjunct: *those present*, e.g. Hewlett Q 213 | Ridge S 122 she wished to punish only *those responsible* | Phillpotts M 85 a breakfast long remembered by *those fortunate enough* to attend it | Quincèy 20 1 was amongst *those specially invited* to the festival | Kidd S 16 amongst *those openly rejecting* the dogmas | Swinburne L 11 all *those interested* in social reform || Sh Err III 1.48 who are *those at the gate*? | Mcb II 3 106 *Those of his chamber*, as it seem'd, had don't | Defoe G 7 for the sake of *those yet in the cradle* or perhaps not born | Scott Iv 89 *those of thy tribe* give nothing for nothing | Carlyle R 1.230 a sage who was venerated by *those about me* | Fox 1.253 I was enabled to speak to all *those in power that* I wanted to see | Kidd S 178 a party composed of *those lower in* the social scale.

16.372. *Those* is frequent before a relative clause in the indefinite sense of 'some' (corresponding to *that*, above 16 355): *there are those that* will repeat anything they hear | Hewlett Q 17 *There be those that* laugh at danger there, as well as *those who* weep.

16.373. *These* = 'these persons' needs no exemplification. Sh Tp II. 2 91 These are deuils.

16.38. *This* and *that* as adjuncts (*this ring, that tree*, etc.) are extremely frequent and have been so in all periods of the language.

16.391. In the extremely frequent combinations *this much* and *that much* (= as much as this, that) *this* and *that* may be taken as adjuncts, cf. the rare plural in

Sh Cæs IV. 1.1 *These many* then shall die. But the speech instinct, at any rate of vulgar speakers, interprets *this* and *that* here as subjuncts to *much*, and vulgar speech in consequence employs *this* and *that* = 'so' also before other adjectives and adverbs *This moche* is found as early as Caxton R 87, but the rest of my examples are recent. (*This long* in Sh Per II Prol. 40 is probably a misprint for *thus long*, which is the reading of the folios)

16.392. Examples of *this much*. Shelley Pr 91 This much is certain | By DJ 5 98 This much however I may add | Poe 258 they are right in this much | Ru C 37 we have this much of plain Christianity preached to us | Stevenson M 281 I will say this much more | Dickinson S 83 This much we hold to be established | Ru T 169, Art of E 288 | Swinburne L 263 (prose) | Wells A 98, T 36, Am 167 | Kipl J 2.27, etc.

This before adjunctal *much* is not quite so frequent: Scott Iv 375 to take this much burden upon me | Gissing B 478 to whom he owed this much courtesy | Swinb L 224 there is this much reason in it [By DJ 16.107 this much good].

16.393. *That much*. Ru C 49 I should be sorry to take that much of consolation from you Hardy L 30 That much I casually heard | McCarthy 2.539 | Kipl L 103, 105, 124, J 2.51 | Caine E 411 | Hardy F 93 | Shaw C 170, etc.

That before adjunctal *much*: Spencer E 40 to know these realities is to have that much science.

16.394. *This* as a subjunct before other words (vulgar): Twain H 1.140 we hadn't ever been *this rich* before. Only Amr?

16.395. *That* in the same way is much more frequent (in the speech of vulgar people):

Scott A 2.43 I am nae *that book learned*, at least I'm no that muckle in practice | Ward F 3 I'm *that stiff* | Caine M 14 I'm *that sleepy* . . I'm sleeping *that light* it's shocking | Shaw C 232 his feelings are *that easily touched* | Kipl

L 235, 244 | Hardy W 26 | Ward E 218, 230 | Quiller Couch M 81 | Haggard S 50 | Norris P 69, etc

Sometimes subjunctal *that* is found outside of the speech of vulgar persons, thus Ward D 1.322, 2.30, 2.83 Shaw 2 135 | London C 146 And so long as men continue to live in this competitive society *that long* will the scab continue to exist

16.41. I do not know whether *yon*, *yond* and *yonder* are ever used as principals They are all of them used as adjuncts in Shakespeare and later (Bunyan G 148 yonder gate); now only in poetry. though *yon* is also colloquial in Scotland and the North of England

All three forms are also used as subjuncts; in this employment *yonder* is the form generally preferred (thus in Sh, where *yon* is only found once as a subjunct, R2 III. 3 91, and here the folio has *yond*) *Thither and yon* is used by Meredith (H 79), *hither and yon* by Kipling (P 39, 74)

16.42. *The* is usual as an adjunct ('the definite article'); it cannot be used as a principal.

But the same form is used as a subjunct, especially before a comparative This is developed from the OE *þȳ* the instrumental case of the neuter *þæt* to indicate the difference Examples: *the* longer, *the* better | *the* more haste, *the* less speed | Di Do 2 standing on tiptoe, *the* better to hide her face | Mill L 117 society will be little *the* better for their genius See O Johnsen, ESt 44.212 ff

The use of *the* is transferred from a comparative to a superlative, as in Trollope D 1.255 it would be so much the best Other examples will be given elsewhere

16.43. Very likely *the* in the combination *the like* is the same subjunctal *þȳ*, as the ordinary article *the* does not seem completely to explain the usage More U 248 to doo *the lyke* | Bacon A 25 with divers *others the like* orders' and advises | Spect 93 with many *other the like* curious remarks | Swift 3 207 these and *the like* impending dangers [indefinite = some, like that] | ib 338 At other

times *the like* battles had been fought between the Yahoos | Goldsm 612 Was ever *the like*? | Carlyle S 32 None of those bell-girdles . . . or *other the like* phenomena | Di Do 344 and doing *the like* himself. Cf. 11.34.

On *them* = 'those' (adjunct) see 16.13.

16.44. *Self* is now only a principal (on the substantival use see 8.43), and the old use as an adjunct = 'same' is completely obsolete: Marl F 561 in one selfe place | Sh (frequent) Merch I. 1.148 To shoote another arrow that selfe way Which you did shoot the first

16.45. *Such* is used both as a principal and as an adjunct: Mi SA 1631 from such as nearer stood | Sh Hml III. 2.335 such answers as I can make, you shal command | don't be in such a hurry!

Such is almost a subjunct (= 'so') before another adjunct Sh Hml I. 4.43 Thou com'st in *such a questionable* shape [= so q. a shape] That I will speake to thee | Hope D 8 I don't call her *such a bad-looking* girl [= so bad-l. a girl] While in the sg both *so long a sermon* and *such a long sermon* may be said, in the pl the latter form is always preferred *such long sermons* (2.22).

Interrogative and Relative Pronouns.

16.51. *Who* can only stand as a principal

16.52. *What* is extremely frequent as a principal (neuter) What does it all mean? | I took what I could

As an adjunct it goes back at least to early ME: Ancrene Riwle 280 hwat turn | ib 406 hwat fleschs; it is frequent in ModE, e g Sh Cæs I 3 42 what night is this? | Ven 343 What a sight it was! | ib 1075 what treasure hast thou lost, What face remains alive.

A Scotch by-form is *whatten* Stevenson M 19 Whatten fish?

What from being a kind of loose object with verbs becomes a kind of subjunct 'to what extent'; cp. the similar development with *nothing*:

Sh Ven 1077 What canst thou boast Of things long since? | Tp I. 1.17 what cares these roarers for the name

of King? | Ro I 5 57 what dares the slaue Come hither? | Defoe G 65 And what am I the better for all this saving? Scott A 2.4 What could I hinder him? | Doyle NP '95 you will not ask what better off I was.

Cf the use in *what if, what though,* and especially in *what with, what between,* etc.

16.53. *Which* is used both as a principal and as an adjunct either Sunday or Monday, I don't know *which* | *Which day* did you say?

If *that* [ðət], *as, but* can be termed relative pronouns, they can only be called principals in that capacity

Other Pronouns.

None

16.61. Both *none* and *no* go back to OE *nān* (< *ne* + *ān* 'one'), the old distinction being the same as the old distinction between *mine* and *my* (16.2), *none* being used before a vowel, while the final *n* disappeared before a consonant This rule is still given by Hart 1569. Early ModE examples of this adjunctal *none* before a vowel are Caxton R 83 by none other luste | ib 96 it was none otherwyse | More U 77 none end | ib 87 to none effect | ib 123 none other, also 140, 183, 254 Sh has one isolated instance H8 IV 1 33 *of none effect*, and the same phrase occurs in the AV of the Bible (Matth 15 6, Mark 7 13) and from thence used by Macaulay (H 4 217) and other recent writers *None other* also survived to some extent after *no* had otherwise been established also before vowels Bunyan G 42 thoughts . . *none others* but such blasphemous ones | Swift 1713 (NED) *none other disease* | AV Deut 5 7 (often quoted) Thou shalt haue *none other gods* before me (Prayerb. but me) | Southey 1827 (NED) *none other Lord*, cf below 16 623

16.621. In ModE the usual distinction between *no* and *none* is that between an adjunct and a primary word, in the same way as between *my* and *mine*. But there are

some cases in which it is not easy to draw the line between adjunct and principal

16.622. In a few Shakespearian passages it may be doubtful whether *none* is to be considered as a principal with a following substantive in apposition or as a survival of the old adjunctal use of *none* before a consonant: Cy I. 4 103 Your Italy containes none so accomplish'd a courtier | John III 4.151 that none so small aduantage shall step forth (In both instances before *so*, cf. *none such* below). Cf. also Cy I 6.57, where it is probably correct to place a comma between *none* and *a stranger*.

16.623. In the following instances of *none other* (without a sb) *none* must be considered the principal, to which *other* is added as an adjunct, though of course the old use of *none* before a vowel may have contributed to the usage:

Lyly C 277 it becommeth the sonne of Philip to be *none other* than Alexander is | Poe *(q)* Our hope was, at best, a forlorn one, but we had *none other* | Williamson S 114 She was not alone, but for a second or two I saw no one else There was *none other* except her beautiful face in the world

None others in the following quotation is odd and a little affected: Allen W 57 On these terms it shall be, and upon none others

The natural form now is *no other*, not only when followed by a substantive, but also when standing alone, in which case *other* is the principal:

Allen W 59 other women have fallen: *no other* has voluntarily risen as I propose to do | Haggard S 105 in front of the prison stood *no other* than our friend B | GE M 1 133 The startling object was *no other* than little Lucy || Hardy L 97 they could do *no other* than smile at the accident [= nothing else, 16 9].

16.624. In Sh H8 V. 153 "I sweare he is truehearted, and a soule None better in my Kingdome" *none*

better must be regarded as a new sentence (without a verb) added loosely to *a soule* (as if after a dash): *none* thus is the subject; cf. Sh Merch III 1.28 You knew, *none so well,* none so well as you, of my daughters flight | Ch A 48 And therto hadde he riden *(no man ferre)* As wel in Cristendom as hethenesse | More U 76 he could play a part in that play, *no man better*, and frequent constructions like "He knows her, no one better"

16.631. *None* is used as a post-adjunct (for emphasis): Ch T 3 499 in *storye noon* | Sh Tp V 167 heere haue I few attendants, And *subiects none* abroad | ib II 1 151 riches, pouerty, And *vse of seruice, none* | Mi PL 11 669 and *refuge none* was found | Mi PR 4 184 *Other donation none* thou canst produce | Wordsw P 14.50 *encroachment none* was there | Bridges E 91 where lovers walk'd are *lovers none* to find.—This now is decidedly poetical.

16.632. Shelley's verse (p 72) *Yet sound to me none came,* may serve as a transition to the very frequent employment (even in prose) of *none* at the end of a sentence (especially after the verbs *be* and *have*) as a kind of adjunct at a distance belonging to a word placed emphatically in the beginning of the sentence Ch A 773 *confort* ne *mirth* is *noon* | ib F 249 swich a wonder *thing* . . herde they neuer *non* (other ex. in Chaucer are A 680, B 1020, 1898, Parl 437, etc , with the indefinite article before the sb A 754) | Mal 51 *vytaille* they wanted *none* | ib 126 | More U 222 *other goodnes* in them is *none* | Sh Err I. 1.76 *other meanes* was *none* | Sh Tw III. 4 262 *satisfaction* can be *none* but by pangs | Hml I. 2 216 | Cy IV 2.228 | Bacon A 33 11 *Horse-men* he had *none* | Mi PL 4.704 *Other creature* here, Beast, bird, insect, or worm, durst enter *none* | Defoe R 144 *linnen* I had *none* left | Wordsw P 8.202 *nook* is there *none* | Quincey 95 *further business* I had *none* to detain me in Chester (ib 122) | ib 26 *Bad tempers* there were *none* amongst us | Shelley 90 that *ill* might *none* betide him | Di D 304 *throat* she had *none*,

waist she had *none*; *legs* she had *none*, worth mentioning | Gissing B 41 *Paternal relatives* Godwin had as good as *none* | Ru Sel 1.287 *of mother's teaching*, we hear *of none*.

16.64. Very frequently *none* is anaphoric, in some of the following examples added for emphasis immediately after a sb preceded by *no*, Sh Phoen 47 loue hath *reason*, reason *none* | Tp II. 1.166 no *marrying*? *None* | Ado IV. 1.41 would you not sweare . . . that she were a *maide* . But she is *none* || Mcb IV 3.60 there's no *bottome*, *none*, In my voluptuousnesse | Scott A 2.138 I meant them no *affront*—*none* | Ru Sel 2 276 men will fight for any *cause*, or for *none*.

16.651. An anaphoric *none* may take an adjective after it:

Sh R3 IV. 4 458 what *newes* with you? *None good*, my liege, nor *none so bad*, but well may be reported [fol None, good my liege, .] | Stevenson JHF 92 This glass has seen some strange *things*.—And surely *none stranger* than itself

16.652. As a post-adjunct after *none*, *such* is particularly frequent (cp the word-order in *many such*)

More U 224 they cause none suche to dye | Sh Oth IV 2.124 [He call'd her whore] I am none such | Haggard S 96 none such can have been made in the country fight for hundreds of years.

To explain *none such* where *no such* might have been expected, Einenkel (Indefinitum § 40) speaks of influence from Fr *nulle telle*, but I fail to see why that phrase should be better rendered by *none such* than by *no such*, or why English people should think of French in expressing so simple a notion.

Nonesuch is also used as a substantive, see NED 1590 this paragon, this nonesuch, 1745 a nonesuch; and (obsolete) as an adjective 'unrivalled' 1715 all none-such men A variant of this is now spelt *nonsuch* and pronounced [nɔnsʌtʃ] as if containing the Latin *non*, see NED for examples (1895 As for your Prince, . . he's not a nonsuch) —Compare also the plant-name *none-so-pretty* (pl see 2.58)

16.66. *None* is now regularly followed by an verb in the plural (6.42), and *no one* is to some extent to be

looked upon as a singular of *none* Still there is this difference that *none* may be used both of persons and things, while *no one* is used only of persons. (I am not here speaking of adjunctal *no one* which can be placed before names of things as well) In the following two quotations *no one* and *none* are used in close succession for the sake of variety. Spect 6 *No one* ever took him for a fool, but *none*, except his intimate friends, know he has a great deal of wit | Ward M 284 That *none* of us can do. *No one* can satisfy his intelligence | Doyle S 2 52 I have *no one* to turn to—*none* Thus also *nobody* and *none* in Galsworthy M 141 *Nobody* gave him anything, *none* should touch his property

On the other hand *not one* is more emphatic than either *none* or *no one* Austen P 206 "Do you draw?" "No, not at all" "What, *none* of you?" "*Not one*" | Hewlett Q 354 there is *none*, no, *not one*, in whom I can trust

16.67. As an independent neuter, = nothing, *none* is rare

Sh As II 7 88 forbeare, and eate no more [Jaques] Why, I haue eate *none* yet

16.681. *None of* is used not only in a partitive sense, but also in a great many instances where the partitive sense is obscured or even totally wanting, *none of* being simply an emphatic *not*. The partitive sense is still more or less clear in the following sentences:

Sh R3 I. 1 47 that fault is none of yours | Wint II. 3.92 this brat is none of mine | ib IV 4 710 she being none of your flesh | As III 3 56 that is the dowry of his wife, 'tis none of his own getting | Tw V 342 you can say none of this | Bunyan G 110 that was none of my work | GE M 2 175 men of the right habits: none o' your flashy fellows, but such as are to be depended on | GE A 87 The kitchen had had none of her attention that day | Ward E 276 I gave you none of my time | McCarthy 2 652 Trollope has none of Thackeray's genius;

none of his fancy or feeling; none of his genuine creative power | Hardy L 215 But none of this lasted long | Haggard S 83 the cave was none of Nature's handiwork

Thus also in the usual phrase Defoe R 275 *it was none of my business* (similarly id R 2.299, Ruskin Sel 1 490, Lowell St 300, Stevenson JHF 173, etc).

16.682. No partitive sense is possible in these quotations.

BJo 1.25 it was none of his word | BJo 3.212 it was none of his plot | Bunyan G 115 it is none of our custom | Congreve 245 he shall be none of my husband | Congreve 275 I was none of her man | Defoe R 318 they were none of his prisoners [he had no prisoners] | Fielding T 3 9 do not I know Mrs Fitzpatrick very well, and don't I see that the lady is none of her [= is not at all she] | Richardson (in Flugel) yield you must, or be none of our child | = no child of ours, note the sg *child*]

16.683. The frequent phrase *I'll none of* or (now more often) *I'll have none of* . is found both with and without a partitive sense Ml F 401 [take your gridirons againe] Truly Ile none of them | Sh Mcb V 3.47 Throw physicke to the dogs, Ile none of it | Sh Tp IV. 1.248 put some lime vpon your fingers . I will haue none on't | Sh Merch III 2 102 thou gaudie gold I will none of thee | Dryden 5 407 I'll none of that || Sh H4B III 2 271 I will none of you [cf Ile no more of you Tw I. 5 45] | Tw I 3 102 Shee'l none o'th Count | Scott A 1 253 I ll none of Hector McIntyre | Hope R 34 they were for carrying me to a hospital I would have none of it | Haggard S 146 [Christ] came poor and lowly, and they would have none of him.

None of is often used alone in the sense I (we, she, etc) will have none of . None of your cheek, please! | None of your tricks! | Di Do 90 She was dry and sandy with working in the graves of deceased languages None of your live languages for Miss Blimber

16.684. A partitive construction is always possible, when *none of* is followed by a superlative (*none of the brightest* = 'not at all bright'). Fielding T 1.144 the parson's face, which of itself was none of the brightest | Scott Iv 48 Aymer, whose nerves were none of the strongest | Lamb 2.216 his tooth, which is none of the bluntest.

16.691. *None* as a subjunct, meaning 'not', is developed from the use of *none* = 'nothing' in the same way as so many words for 'not' in many languages have originally been neuter (primary) pronouns (thus *not* itself = *nought, nothing* below 17 37; Scandinavian *ikke*, Latin *non* < *ne oenum* 'not one thing'; *nihil*, etc.) As a subjunct with a verb, in which case it may be considered a kind of object or indication of measure, *none* is obsolete except perhaps in Scotland and America, cf the Scotch and American *some* and *any* 17.17:

Defoe R 27 we lay still all night; I say still, for we *slept none* | ib 182 I *slept none* that night | Scott (NED) you will *quarrel nane* with Captain C

Boswell (see I. XXXII) corrected his (Scotch) *we spoke none* into *we had no conversation*

16.692. *None* as a subjunct is particularly frequent before *the* + a comparative and before *too*, not quite so frequent before *so*; in these cases it indicates the difference (cf *all the better, little the worse*). Curiously enough, this usage does not seem to have been at all frequent before the 19th century It may have developed on the analogy of *any* in the same position, which in itself is due to *no* (below 17.16); and we thus have a curious example of cross-analogies between negative and positive words

None the + comparative. Defoe G 50 I am *none the less* obliged to you | Hardy T 118 the baby was dying—quietly and painlessly, but *none the less* surely | Doyle S 1.57, 4 96 | Di Do 81 they all got on very well; *none the worse* on account of the Major taking charge of the whole conversation

16.693. From such instances, the following use of *none the* before a superlative seems to have developed. In the first quotation, *none* may be taken as the substantival pronoun (= no intention, not the least), but this is hardly possible in the second·

Stevenson B 41 I have *none the least* intention to offend | Hawth T 125 the old man's eyesight was *none the sharpest* [cp. *none of* with a superlative 16.684]

16.694. *None too*. Di D 737 I was *none too soon* | Hope In 301 *none too gently* | Hope C 255 I was *none too sure* of it | Hope R 24 interrupted the station-master, *none too politely* | Harraden S 29 a little danseuse, *none too quiet* in her manners | Parker R 16 *none too able.*

None so: GE A 4 he's *none so fond* o' your dissenters I'm *none so fond* o' Josh Tod's ale | GE M 1 62 he's *none so full* now, the Floss isn't | Hope C 150 he found this *none so easy* | Morris N 166 when the waters are out it's *none so pleasant* | Bennett A 156 I'm *none so set up* with the idea mysen

In George Eliot's dialectal speech, the subjunct *none* is also found in other instances M 1 5 He's *none frightened* at them | ib 1 46 she's *none drownded* | ib 2.303 he'll *none* go away —Thus also in Arnold Bennett, e.g. A 88 It's *none my business* | 232 I'm *none for* marriage | 242 it's *none thy place.*

No.

16.71. ModE *no* represents two words which were distinct in OE, the pronoun *nān* (see 16.51), and the adverb *nā* (< *ne* + *ā* 'always') The latter is an emphatic negative, stronger than the simple *ne*. It became the ordinary negative in Scotch and in Northern dialects, where it became enclitic after verbal forms (*canna, dinna,* etc.). In Standard English, its sphere was more circumscribed, though it was extended in some ways through a confusion with the pronominal *no*: in some combinations it is hard to tell which word we have

16.72. *No* evidently corresponds to OE *nān*, when it is used as an adjunct before a substantive: Sh Shr I. 1.39 *No profit* growes, where is *no pleasure* tane

This *no* may be logically analyzed as containing two elements, a negative subjunct and a (positive) adjunct Hence it is the equivalent of *not* + *any* or *a*, and in many cases in which *no* is preferred in literary style, *not any* is used in everyday conversation. *He has no money* = *He hasn't got any money.*

16.73. With regard to *no* and *not a* before a substantive, Stoffel (St. 77 ff.) has tried to establish a definite distinction, which seems to me somewhat fanciful (What Stoffel says on English stress, is not always to the point). In most cases in which we find *not a*, we might just as well say *not a single (not one)*, or *not even a* In the first three examples we have *no* alternating with *not a*

Defoe G 67 their geographers had *not a globe*, their seamen *not a compass* (by the way they had *no ships*), even their physitians had *no books* | Stevenson M 35 *no planks, no iron, not a sign* of any wreck | ib 229 'you are *no human being*. No, boy'—shaking his stick at him—'you are *not a human being*'

Defoe R 2 232 All this while they fired *not a gun* | Swift 3 267 their language, wherof I understood *not a syllable* | Di N 578 But *not a word* said Newton | Wells TM 20 He said *not a word* | Kipl L 80 Dick had listened and replied *not a word* | Di T 2 179 speaking so low that *not a sound* was heard | also Hope Z 123, Stevenson M 64

Fielding 3.578 He therefore hesitated *not a moment* The justice lost *not a moment* in using his utmost endeavours | Hope R 125 the dominant impulse was to waste *not a moment* in proclaiming the crime.

[Di D 261 Mr Wickfield said *not one word* | Benson D 85 Lady C. has positively got *not one musical footman*]

16.74. In many cases, the negative is attracted to some substantive and thus takes the adjunctal form *no*.

though it belongs logically to the verb. Thus, in the first quotation below, the speaker does not want to say that he *is ashamed* (as in "I am ashamed to have no information to offer you"), but that he *is not ashamed* to tell his name:

Goldsmith 622 I *am ashamed* to tell my name to *no* man | Di D 568 I *was troubled* by *no* doubt of her being very pretty | ib 578 I *deigned* to make him *no* reply | Conway C 187 I *turned aside* to visit *no* objects of interest | Stevenson M 238 I *shall recognise* him for *no* son of mine | Thack E 1 261 he had made up his mind to *continue* at *no* woman's apron-strings *longer* | Macaulay E 4.58 *Come* to *no* terms, defend your city to the last

Sh Tw I. 5 5 hee that is well hang'de in this world, *need* to feare *no* colours | Congreve 264 you *need* make *no* great doubt of that | Stevenson JHF 50 he *need* labour under *no* alarm for his safety | Shaw C 39 you *need* have *no* fear

Defoe R 81 they *should be* in *no* condition to defend themselves | also R 2 117, Fielding T 4.239 | Bennett C 2.322 he *was* in *no* condition to sleep | Kipl S 176 Beetle *was* in *no* case to answer | Gissing B 213 *I'm* in *no* mood for society | also Haggard S 8

16.751. When *no* is placed before a substantive which has already an adjunct, the signification differs, according as it is the substantive or the adjective which is negatived In the former case, which needs no exemplification, *no ordinary boy* means 'no boy of the ordinary type' (no ordinary boy hates cricket) In the second case, as in "H is no ordinary boy", it means 'a boy of an extraordinary type'. (Compare the cases of subjuncts shifted into adjuncts mentioned in 12.2.)

This second use of *no* before an adjunct is particularly frequent in English, because it serves to avoid the combination *a not*, which is felt to be more clumsy than the corresponding combinations in Danish or German Another way of avoiding it is by a transposition as in

Aldrich S 78 Now Margaret was *not an unusual* mixture of timidity and daring | Bennett W 1.223 he regarded him as *not an ordinary* boy.

Examples of *no*·

Defoe R 2.372 We sail'd from Arch-Angel the 20 th of August, and after *no extraordinary bad voyage*, arriv'd in the Elbe the 13th of September [= after a voyage which was not bad] | Sh Mids III 1.157 I am a spirit of *no common rate* | Austen P 427 it was an evening of *no common delight* to them all | Wordsw 481 he, too, [the throstle] is *no mean preacher* | Scott A 2 24 he held *no ordinary influence* over his sentiments | ib 1.302 such a question would lead to an answer of *no limited length* | Di N 220 several gentlemen with *no very musical voices* | Di Do 349 he went on in *no improved humour* | Di D 200 it would require a painter, and *no common painter* too, to depict my aunt's face | Philips L 64 the seed that I intend to sow at *no very distant date* | Doyle S 6.178 he looked up with *no very pleased expression* | Hope R 79 that council of war was held under *no common circumstances* | Stevenson JHF 19 being a man of *no scientific passions* he added

16.752. This is especially frequent with *small (little)* and *great*·

Mi S 1261 with *no small profit* daily to my owners | Di N 42 Regarding with *no small curiosity* all the preparations | Thack P 1 86 Bows was a singular wild man of *no small talents* and humour | Fielding T 1 134 with *no little degree* of inveteracy | Poe S 79 in *no little degree* | with *no great result* | Di Do 136 at *no great distance* | Macaulay E 4 3 a plain man of *no great tact* or capacity.

16.753. Before a superlative the same *no* is rare; I once heard a lady say. "I have no the least idea", which I take to be a blending of two constructions "I have no idea" and "I have not the least idea", the superlative rising to the speaker's consciousness after *no* had already been uttered Similarly in Trollope D 2.18 speak-

ing with *no slightest* twang | Bennett W 2.197 his efforts had *no smallest* chance of success | id C 1.126 No sound! *No slightest* sound!

16.76. *No* + an adjective may be preceded by *the*, *a*, or a possessive pronoun. Though this cannot be separated from the constructions just mentioned, the defining word seems to show that *no* is taken by the speech-instinct as the adverb; the NED (which does not mention *a* before the combination and has no quotations later than 1647) says that it is now only found with *no small* or *little*, it quotes *by his no niggardishe nature* from Mulcaster 1581 I have noted the following instances from the last two centuries·

Fielding T 3.192 to *the no small terror* of Partridge | Franklin 157 to *my no small mortification* | Hughes T 2.123 they appeared in the bar, to *the no small astonishment* of its occupants | Archer A 26 to *the no small delectation* of a little crowd || less natural. Jerome First 231 at *a no inconsiderable* yearly *loss* | Payn S 1 at *a no distant date.*

16.77. Before quantitative *little* (neuter or adv) and *few* the occurrence of *no* may be (partly) due to the frequency of the combinations *a little* and *a few*, as *no* is felt to be the negative equivalent of the indefinite article The NED does not exemplify this usage, and it is therefore impossible to see whether it takes *no* as the adverb or the pronominal adjective:

Poe S 43 it added no little to the natural ferocity of his countenance | Hughes T 2 272 in his secret soul he was no little pleased | ib 297 wondering no little at the strange mixture | RoR Dec 99.593 he was no little of a poet || Mi S 1400 no few of them | Wordsw P 6.46 tender dreams, no few of which have since been realized | Philips L 280 there are no few moments in a voyage more dangerous than those | Kipl P 80 he bought much gold, and no few elephants' teeth.

16.781. In *no* before a numeral adjective as in Sh All III. 6.12 the owner of no one good qualitie | Cor II.

1 20 he's poore in no one fault, but stor'd with **all** | no two clocks ever agree | Gissing G 100 of the cleverness there could be no two opinions—we should be inclined to see the adverb, if it were not for the parallel use of *any*: he has not any one good quality | do any two clocks ever agree? Cf. 5 166.

In "it is *no good* trying to deceive him", which means '(of) no use', *no* is not the adverb (as in "it is *not good*"), but an adjunct to the substantival *good* (9 6)

16.782. Before *such* we see the transition from what is certainly adjunctal *no* to what is felt to be the adverb as shown by *a*·

Sh Ant III 3 44 *no such thing* (very frequent nowadays) | Cowper L 1 9 it is *no such easy thing* | Di D 19 (vg) nobody never went and hinted *no such a thing* | ib 126 (vg) there's *no such a thing* | Mered H 451 Evan displayed *no such a presence*

16.783. In *no otherwise* we may now either take *no* as a subjunct to the adverb *otherwise*, or as an adjunct to the (substantive) *wise*, the latter evidently is the original construction:

Sh H6A 1.3.10 we doe no otherwise then wee are will'd | Defoe G 18 | Fielding T 1 41 | ib 3 213 the guide who was no otherwise concerned than for his horses | Carlyle S 82 into its own body if no otherwise | Ru Sel 1.305 he can see, and do, no otherwise than as the dream directs | Dickinson S 57 all ought to have happened just so and no otherwise.

16.79. Sometimes *no* is combined with a substantive in such a way that it means the opposite of what the substantive in itself means, or what is now more often expressed by preposing the Latin *non* (cf *non-occurrence*, *non-attention*, etc) We see an approach to this in sentences like —

Di D 533 Do you set a watch upon Miss W., and make her home *no home* | Stevenson D 16 this street, whose name I have forgotten, is *no thoroughfare*.

But the coalescence is not completed unless we have the possibility of using the plural as in Dickens Do 53 "the dullest of *No Thoroughfares*" (2 58) or of using one of the articles or a similar word before *no*·

Defoe G 90 make our gentleman curse *their no-education* | Carlyle H 40 such irrational supercilious *no-love at all* is perhaps still worse | Hardie S 100 set free from the non-productive work which now occupies them, or *the no work* as the case may be | Galsworthy C 278 D'you mean to say that wasn't *a no-ball*? [from the umpire's call in cricket] He bowled me with a *no-ball* He's a rank *no-baller*.

16.81. We now come to some uses of *no*, in which it undoubtedly corresponds to OE adv. *nā* Thus when it is used as an answer. Are you ill? *No.*

A special case is found in exclamatory questions· Di D 459 "I am not living with him at present" "*No*?" "No" | Hope C 257 "I don't know what you mean" "*No*?" said I | Zangwill G 160 "I don't see anything valuable in your evidence" "*No!*"

16.821. The same *no* is very frequent in the second part of a disjunctive question; here in certain cases *not* may also be used. We consider first direct questions

Sh Ado I. 1 30 is Signior Mountanto return'd from the warres, *or no*? | H5 I 1 71 Doth his maiestie Incline to it, *or no*? | LL II 1.211 Is she wedded, *or no*? | Browning 2.131 Shall I be saved or no? | Hardy L 139 and have I done it *or no*?—The ordinary way of expressing this is now by means of . *or not,* or by repeating the verb: have I done it, *or haven't I*?

16.822. In indirect questions (clause-principals, cf 1 84) this is more frequent, at any rate in PE, generally after *whether*:

More U 100 *whether* that be a philosophers part, *or no*, I can not tell | Sh Err IV. 1.60 Good sir say, *whe'r* you'l answer me, *or no* | Defoe R 319 and tell me, *whether* he thought they might be trusted *or no* | ib 2 167 *whether*

she said any thing *or no* we could not tell | Swift J 81 I care not *whether* you have *or no* a better | Seeley E 273 the test of the vitality of a State consists in ascertaining *whether or no* the government rests upon a solid basis | Haggard S 159 it was a question of *whether or no* she were worth it

Also after *if* (rarer):

Sh Hml III. 1 35 [we may gather] *If't* be th'affliction of his loue, *or no* | Marlowe T 2126 See, se, Anippe, *if* they breathe *or no*

The confusion of *nā* and *nān* began as soon as final *n* was dropped in some cases in the latter word, in Chaucer we find some instances of *whether (wherso) or noon*, where *noon* evidently takes the place of adv *no*, thus F 778 (*goon* inf.), LGW (Prol B) 291 (*echoon*), MP 6 81 (· *noon*), E 1741 and in prose B 2273, 2407, I 962 ff. It is noteworthy that sometimes *none* might make sense, as in LGW Now whether was that a wonder thing or noon. This *none*, however, seems soon to have disappeared.

16.823. Next, we have the same *or no* used in alternative conditional sentences, indicating indifference (clause-subjuncts, 1 84), with *whether*:

Sh Tp III 1 86 Ile be your servant *Whether* you will *or no* | Swift J 5 I will send it, *whether* MD writes *or no* | Defoe P 90 people would go in at all times, *whether* the minister was officiating *or no* | Fielding 3.499 I shall die *whether* I am afraid *or no* | Hawthorne 1.363 *Whether or no* it were entirely owing to that, she still acted under a certain reserve | Ward F 172 she would go to London —*whether* he liked it *or no* | Darwin L 2.82 you do not understand my notions (*whether or no* worth anything) | ib 83 *whether or no* my book may be wretched, you have done your best to make it less wretched | Di N 668 it might be a lucky guess or a hap-hazard accusation, and *whether or no*, he had clearly no key to the mystery.

The same with *if*:

Mrs Browning A 154 to hold and move them *if* they will or no,

and without any conjunction (rare):

Sh Tw I. 5.163 hee'l speake with you, *will you, or no* | Ru P 2.302 I went out, determined to have my walk, *get wet or no.*

16.824. We have the pronominal adjunct *no* in other expressions of alternatives (chiefly elliptical):

Di N 303 never, of all divine creatures, *actresses or no actresses*, did I see a diviner one | Di Do 361 he'd have him out, *Doctor or no Doctor* [= whether he were Doctor or no] | GE M 1.96 you've had your five per cent, *kin or no kin* | Mrs Browning A 203 we'll save her—*child or no child* [= whether she has a child or no] | Black Ph 34 she proposed that we should set out, *rain or no rain* | Shaw 1.24 if the matter is not to be regarded as settled, *family or no family, promise or no promise*, let us break it off | Kipl J 2 275 *son or no son*, come back for I love thee | Bennett B 224 I will never rest till you are dead, *police or no police.*

Here *not* is rare Quincey 279 the whole story is a bounce of his own ... *Bounce or not bounce*, however, certain it is that . .

16.825. Where in such cases, the substantive is not repeated, the form *none* is used, or else *not*:

Hawthorne 1.294 She scowls dreadfully, *reason or none*, out of pure ugliness of temper | Hardy W 188 Darton would have had you, *Helena or none* [= whether H had been there or not] | ib 193 However, *sarcasm or none*, there was the answer | id F 102 business must be carried on, *introductions or none* | Mered E 173 *headache or none*, Colonel D must be thinking strangely of her || Shaw 1.180 What harm are they doing you? Well, *harm or not*, I dont like it | Conway C 156 Was he Pauline's brother? *Brother or not*, I would unmask him. *Brother or not*, he was answerable for everything.

16.826. From these alternatives, we sometimes get *no* used where we should rather expect *not*:

Green H 65 But *forgotten or no*, Northumbria had done its work | Lawrence Allitt. Verse 34 another question

which is affected by the *existence or no* of the inner cæsura

16.83. *No* before a comparative represents the OE adverb *nā* (cf Boethius, quoted NED, *na beteran*), and thus enters into competition with *not*. But to the actual speech-instinct this *no* seems to be only an application of the pronoun *no* (OE *nān*), as shown by the use of *any* as its positive counterpart: *no more = not any more.*

The distinction between *not* and *no* with comparatives has been investigated in C Stoffel's Studies in English 1894, p. 87 ff., from which I take some of the following remarks Stoffel is not right, when on p 89 he says that *not* is added to the verb and pronounced *n't* in such sentences as "The picture is not more startling than true | this speech was not more impertinent to me than surprising to Sir Clement", etc Stoffel overlooks that such combinations are exclusively literary and would not occur in ordinary everyday speech In reading, *not* would here be pronounced with a full vowel. Besides, some of his distinctions seem too subtle and are rarely observed even by accurate writers

16.841. *No more* without *than* (expressed or understood) equals *no longer*, implying cessation: he is no more (no longer) ill = 'he has been ill, but is not ill now' It often is = 'never again' (in the future), as in Shelley 480 He will awake no more, oh, never more!

16.842. *No more than* generally means 'as little as' · *He is no more wounded than you* = you are not wounded, nor is he. Thus very clearly in the following quotations

Sh Gent II 3 11 he is a stone, a very pibble stone, and has no more pitty in him then a dogge | Fielding T 3 145 I am no more afraid than another man | Johnson R 96 you are no more successful in private houses, than I have been in courts | Di D 45 Miss Murdstone kept the keys, and my mother had no more to do with them than I had | ib 145 a middle-aged person with no more hair upon his head than there is upon an egg | Fox 1 89 he, no more than his father, admires the present system | Pinero Ir 169 I'm no more content with

the present condition of affairs than you are.—Than I am? I'm not aware that I have expressed any special discontent | Shaw D *31 the rank and file of doctors are no more scientific than their tailors; or their tailors are no less scientific than they.

16.843. Hence also the frequent *no more* (without *than*) in the beginning of a sentence, generally followed by inverted word-order (i e verb before subject), which is an equivalent of *nor* or *neither*: Sh Wiv II. 1.7 you are not yong, no more am I | Di Do 67 he is not ugly. No more was my uncle's Betsy | Hope D 9 She didn't think he was coming then. No more did I | Hope Ch 175 nobody thought them ill-used. No more they were, he supposed.

16.844. Sometimes the distinction between *no more* and *not more* is clear enough; thus before a numeral. *no more than three* = 'three only'; *not more than three* = 'three at most'. Stoffel gives a quotation from Gibbon "The victorious emperor remained at Rome not more than three months" and comments on it in the following way: "This means that he remained three months *at most*, if the author had written "no more than three months", this form of expression would have implied that the author thought this a brief period, and "no more than three months" would be equivalent to 'three months *only*'. Now, 'three months at most' puts before us a question of *fact*; 'three months *only*' introduces a personal element, viz the speaker's *opinion* that three months is a short time."

The gospel is not more true than what I tell you [both are true], the gospel is no more true than what I tell you [both are lies]. What I tell you is true; the gospel is not more true—here *no more true* (without *than*) would be understood as in 16 841 and thus would state the absurdity that the gospel, which once was true, has ceased to be so.

16.845. *Not more* in the same way is found in Sh Hml III. 1.51 The harlots cheeke beautied with plaist'ring art Is not more ugly to the thing that helpes it, Then is my deede, to my most painted word | Austen M 32 a heavy young man with not more than common sense | Benson W 92 The pity is that conversation is not more recognised as a definite accomplishment [it should be more recognized; different from *no more*].

16.846. In some cases *no more than* is used where according to Stoffel's rules *not more* would be more correct, as it is not equivalent to *as little as*, thus in Di Do 166 "if I do my duty, I do what I ought, and do no more than all the rest" [all the rest do their duty, and I do as much, but not more]. This is also the case in Sheridan 221 I should be very sorry to hear that anything had happened to him —No more than I should, I assure you.

16.85. *No less (than)* = as much (as):

More U 250 they doo no lesse pytye the basse sorte | Sh As I 1.116 she is at the courte, and no lesse beloued of her uncle, then his owne daughter | Fielding T 3 57 to the no less vehement remonstrance of Mrs Whitefield | Di D 579 I could do no less than reply Stedman Victor Poets 184 a no less interesting conjecture Wilde P 13 in the sphere of thought no less than [= as much as] in the sphere of time, motion is no more [= exists no longer]

"He paid no less than twenty pounds" implies astonishment at the greatness of the amount "You must pay not less than twenty pounds" = £ 20 at the very least, but it would be well if you could pay more. Examples of *not less than* in this sense: Macaulay E 4.140 the deism of Robespierre was not less hostile to the Catholic faith than the atheism of Clootz | Seeley E 241 there are not less than fifty millions of Mussulmans in India [= possibly more]

But examples of *not less than* = 'no less than, as

much as', are by no means rare. To those adduced by Stoffel I may add:

Stevenson D 139 horrible was the society with which we warred, but our own means were not less horrible | Caine P 269 Helga appeared to be not less excited than Oscar himself

No fewer than = 'as many as'·

Scott Iv 76 no fewer than six candelabras | McCarthy 2.593 no fewer than 12000 persons had been killed.

16.86. Similarly *no bigger than* = 'as small as', *no wiser than* = 'as foolish as', *no better than* = 'as bad (or as badly, ill) as', etc .

Ml F(1616) 884 the earth appear'd to me *No bigger* then my hand in quantity | Defoe G 66 they desire to be *no wiser* than they are | Thack V 41 he could sing *no better* than an owl | Kingsley H 259 a man *no worse*, even if *no better*, than themselves | Hope Ch 132 if he comes back *no better*, send me a line | Sh Tp 1.1 50 I'le warrant him for drowning, though the ship were *no stronger* than a nutt-shell

Cf also *no sooner . . than* (formerly *no sooner . . but*)

Sh Tro I 2.85 "Hector is not a better man then Troylus : if Pandarus had said: *is no better a man than T*, he would have spoken slightingly of both.

But *no darker* in the following sentence is not = 'as light', we therefore should have expected *not darker*.

Ru Sel 1.417 a given shade, as dark as, with due reference to other things, you can have it, but no darker.

16.87. *More* in the cases mentioned above is either an adjunct or a subjunct; but *more* by itself may also be used as a principal, and is so (with *no* as an adjunct), when *no more* = 'nothing more, nothing else':

Sh H4A II. 4.312 no more of that, Hall, and thou louest me | Mi PL IV. 637 God is thy law, thou mine· to know no more Is womans happiest knowledge and her praise | Parker R 5 he had done no more than formally plead not guilty

Cf. *no other* (17 77) and *no better* in Caxton R 80 *we desire no better*, which might still be said.

16.88. Stoffel rightly remarks (p. 94) that in "No worse dauber than he ever spoiled good canvas" *no* is an indefinite pronoun, modifying *dauber* (in my own terminology: an adjunct to *dauber*), but in Sh Ant II 2 31 "Octauia, whose beauty claimes No worse a husband then the best of men" *no* is an adverb modifying *worse* (a subjunct to *worse*), in the former case we may therefore transpose the comparative (no dauber worse than he), and in the second the indefinite article is placed between *worse* and the sb (cf. too bad a husband, so bad a husband). Further examples to illustrate the position of the article with the adverbial *no* (cf 15 17):

Sh Merch V. 1.106 the nightingale . . would be thought *No better a musitian* then the wren | As I. 3 126 Ile haue *no worse a name* then Joues owne page | Swift T 127 upon *no wiser a reason* than because it is dark | Defoe G 121 I need *no better a testimoniall* | ib 199 I would desire *no better a stock* of learning | Spect 113 to *no greater a perfection* | Thack P 1 254 Mr. Buck, the tutor, was *no better a scholar* than many a fifth-form boy | Stevenson B 263 Dick caught the eye of *no less a person* than Will Lawless || Lecky D 1 95 Even the better class, however they may grumble, . . prefer a bad candidate of their own party to *a* (probably *no better*) candidate of the other party

In the plural, the indefinite article is, of course, dropped:

McCarthy 2 454 among those were *no less eminent persons* than Mr Gladstone and Lord Hartington [where, of course, it would be absurd to analyze: were no persons less eminent than Mr. G]

16.89. Before *the* preceding a comparative the use of *no* corresponding to *any* (17 16) is no longer found OE *nā þȳ lǣs* was continued in the form *natheless* in the North, it is found e.g Scott Iv 299, By DJ 5.104, but

is completely obsolete So is also the form *notheless*, the last example of which in the NED dates from 1606. Instead of these we now have *none the less* (16 692) and *not the less*, as in Austen M 2 a husband disabled for active service, but not the less equal to company | Quincey 30 not the less he held himself to be a layman (also 55, 73, 214, etc) | By DJ 12 62 | Bennett W 2 15 it was not the less tragically serious It should be noted that *less* here retains more of its original signification than in *nathless* and *none the less*, which (like *nevertheless*) have become synonymous with 'however, still, all the same'

Chapter XVII.

Functions of the Pronouns. Concluded.

Some and Any.

17.111. Here we have only one form of each word corresponding to the two forms *none* and *no*. We shall first consider the use of these two pronouns as principals The distinction between *some* and *any* will be dealt with elsewhere

As a principal *some* is very frequent in the plural. In the anaphorical function it stands both for persons and things (There are not many apples on the tree, still there are some), but in the independent use it stands only for persons (More U 266 Some worshyp for God the sunne; some the mone | Some are wise, and some are otherwise) It is especially frequent before *of* some of us | some of these apples

17.112. *Other some* was formerly used where now *some others* would be said; a few examples are given by Halliwell; in Sh we find Meas III. 2 94 some say he is with the Emperor of Russia; other some he is in Rome | Mids I 1.226 How happy some ore [= over] othersome

can be. He has also *some other* in the pl, Err IV. 3.4. Milton has *some other* in the sg (= someone else): SA 1302 I descry this way Some other tending. (Cf. 15.13.)

17.12. *Any* as a principal in the singular = 'any one, anybody' is obsolete:

Ml F 875 Unseen of any | Sh H5 IV. 3 66 whiles any speakes, That fought with vs vpon Saint Crispins day | Bacon A 6.6 their gesture when they bid any welcome | Fielding 3.448 the affront was by no means to be put up by any who bore the name of a gentleman | Keats 2.20 a place unknown Some time to any, but those two alone [? pl].

Examples of *any* in the plural are given in 6.43.

17.131. As neuters *some* and *any* are used anaphorically: Money? I never had *any*, though I should like *some* now and then | Di Do 414 he snatched a basin of cold water, and sprinkled *some* upon her face | Hope Ch 61 his poetry . . I wish I could write *some* like it! | Ridge G 246 As regards refreshment, when I want *any* I shall have *some*

17.132. Besides, neutral *some* and *any* are frequent before a partitive *of*:

Sh Oth IV. 2 27 Some of your function | Defoe R 15 I told him some of my story | ib 246 some of the flesh | Shelley L 2 885 have some of your novel prepared for my return | GE Mm 37 feeling some of her late irritation revive | Fox 1.229 Sterling reading some of Tennyson to us | Tenn L 3.173 Miss B played some of her part finely | McCarthy 2.593 there was no disputing the significance of some of that testimony | Ru P 1.336 some of me is dead, more of me stronger | Vachell H 233 I wish I'd some of your faith | Benson J 40 A landscape painter paints what he sees, and only some of that | Barrie T 176 a girl with some of himself in her.

Sh Wint III. 3.136 if there be any of him left, Ile bury it | Austen M 166 having never seen any of the impropriety which was so glaring | McCarthy 2.168 his

voice could hardly be said to have lost any of its musical strength | Lang T 172 Let us conceive Shakespeare writing Macbeth in an age of "exact history" Hardly any of the play would be left | Barrie T 209 if I felt any of my old fear of you.

17.14. *Some* and *any* are so frequent as adjuncts (*some men*, *any number*, etc.) that it is not necessary to give examples. A special case is the use before numerals, which has already been mentioned in 5.166. The numeral is either an adjunct (as in Macaulay H 1 52 Their prayers are not exactly the same in *any two assemblies* on the same day, or *on any two days* in the same assembly) or a principal (as in Austen M 245 you must keep two dances for me; *any two* you like, except the first).

Some and *any* are also adjuncts before *more* when this is a principal:

Sh H4A II. 3.7 Let me see some more | Tp II. 2.136 Ha'st any more of this? | Behn 334 she needed not any more to inform her who this intended husband was | London W 87 he had learned some more about the world.

17.151. When *some* is used to indicate approximation, chiefly before a numeral, it must also be termed an adjunct though it approaches the function of a subjunct:

Sh Gent IV. 1.21 *Some sixteene moneths* | Meas II. 1 95 a dish of *some three pence* | Yesterday I walked *some twenty miles* || Sh Shr IV. 3.189 I thinke 'tis now *some seuen* a clocke | Thack V 252 at *some ten* o'clock || Sh Tw III. 2.48 *some thrice* | Carlyle S 16 *some once* in the month | Browning 1 509 [he] shifts his ministry *some once* a month.

17.152. *Some* = 'about one': Sh Merch II 4 27 Meete me . . *Some houre* hence (also Tw II. 1 22, Err III. 1.122) | Li I. 1.20 I haue a sonne . . . *some yeere* elder than this | Bacon A 11 30 it might be *some mile* into the sea | Di D 9 after *some quarter of an hour's* absence | Carlyle S 149 *some generation-and-half* after Religion has quite withdrawn from Life | Ru Sel 1.27 each stone being usu-

ally *some foot* or foot and a half in diameter | ib 133 in *some quarter of a mile's* walk

17.153. Thus frequently before one of those substantives which indicate number (and which tend to become adjectives) Sh R3 I. 2.255 *some* [folio: a] *score* or two of taylors | Hml II 2.565 a speech of *some dosen* or sixteene lines | Swinb L 15 he was in daily correspondence with *some dozen* of societies

17.154. In *some half-dozen, some* is thus an adjunct, but when we find *some half-a-dozen*, the use of the indefinite article seems to make *some* rather a subjunct than an adjunct to the whole group Examples of both:

Di T 2 22 *some half-dozen* times a year || Sh Ro III. 4 27 weele haue *some halfe a dozen* friends | Congreve 204 I have despatched *some half-a-dozen* duns | Di Do 237 *some half-a-dozen* more | Stevenson B 145 *some half a dozen* men sitting about the table | ib 159 a strong post of *some half a score* of archers | id D 29 a party of *some half a hundred* men, women and children || Di D 21 *some half-a year* before | Swinb T 18 while *som half a season* ran ||
Bridges E 149 *some half thy road*

Some is a subjunct in Stevenson M 60 he had paused, *some halfway* between me and the wreck

17.16. *Any* is used as a subjunct before a comparative The oldest example in the NED is from ab 1400; a slightly older one is Ch B 4618 If thou bigyle me *any ofter* than ones I take this usage to be developed as a positive counterpart to *no* before comparatives (16.8), the influence of analogy cannot have worked till after the two OE words *nā* and *nān* had been partly confused on account of the dropping of the final *n*

Modern English examples

Sh Tp III. 2.55 if you trouble him *any more* | Wiv IV 2.128 you are not to goe loose *any longer* | Wiv IV 2.233 | Defoe R 36 they did not design to come *any nearer* to the shoar | Ru Sel 1.380 it will never be of much use to you *any more* | Stevenson V 82 it does not follow

that the one sort of proposition is *any less* true than the other | Collingwood R 289 he was not a Pessimist *any more* than an Optimist | Hope R 37 *Any easier*, Fritz?" | Shaw M 81 are your brigands *any less* honest than ordinary citizens?

Examples of *any* + *the* + comparative.

Hughes T 2 33 to ask whether I was *any the worse* for my ducking | Shaw C 265 Is the ring *any the better* because you think the drawingroom worse? | Shaw 2.136 Do you think she would have loved me *any the better* for being insincere? — Before *too*· Norris P 84 it don't give us *any too much* time.

17.17. Apart from the employment with comparatives, *any* is used as a subjunct in Scotch (in 1911 I heard a Scotch lady say: Is it *raining any*?) and especially often in American:

Stockton R 55 I don't believe I can *help* you *any* | Amr NP '11 he will not *idle any* during our absence.

The corresponding adverbial use of *some* (= standard *somewhat*) is similarly dialectal (especially Scotch) and very frequent in America (many examples in Kruger, Schwiergk III § 332 a).

Norris O 85 I'm *some better* | Herrick M 222 it'd be *some better* than it is working for you || Mrs. Carlyle F 3 233 I *slept some* in the intervals | Herrick M 135 B was *some drunk* | ib 310 the papers would make it *some hot* for you

Compounds with body and one

17.21. Instead of using *some*, *any*, *no*, *every* alone in the singular as principals, compound pronouns with *body* and *one* are used in speaking of persons, and compounds with *thing* in the neuter. Those with *body* and *thing* are now always, and those with *one* often, written in one word (*somebody*, *something*, *some one* or *someone*, etc); in the 17th and 18th c they were very often written separately (*some body*, *any thing*). In *nothing* the vowel is

changed like that of *none* [nʌþiŋ, nʌn].—On the transition to real substantives with a plural see 8.44.

17.22. There is no real distinction between the compounds with *one* and those with *body*. Shakespeare evidently preferred *one*; ***anybody*** is only found twice and ***somebody*** only eight times, while ***everybody*** is not found at all in his works; *nobody* occurs only 23 times, chiefly in prose and in the mouths of characters like Falstaff and his friends; in poetry only three times (stressed on *bo-* in Merch V. 1.13, John IV 1 13, on *no* in Oth IV. 3.52 Let no body blame him, his scorne I approue). Nowadays *some one, no one*, etc. seem to be more usual, and are often considered more literary, than the compounds with *body*; the latter seem to be avoided by some authors (Oscar Wilde), while others use both In 200 pages of Ruskin I counted 30 instances of the *body-* pronouns and only 10 of those in *one* *Body* is always used in the proverb: What's everybody's business is nobody's business

17.23. The compounds with *body* are hardly ever used before a partitive *of*: always *some one of the inhabitants, every one of our friends, no one of the company, any one of us*. This is probably due to a reminiscence of the numeral value of *one*. Similarly· *no one in the room* spoke for some time

17.24. The form with *one* is always used in the phrase *no one better* (Di Do 131 I leave him to you; and I can leave him to no one better | Hope D 38 Hilary knew the girl, no one better) and generally before a post-adjunct: *every one present* | *no one concerned* in that affair | Di Do 497 a tablet, erected to the memory of *some one dead* The expression *she's nobody particular* is hardly an exception because *nobody* has the special signification mentioned in 8 441

17.25. Sometimes the forms with *one* and with *body* are found in close proximity, probably for the sake of variety:

Thack S 73 Tom Prig knows *everybody*, has a story about *every one* | Di D 315 *No one* knows me there. *Everybody* knows me here | Caine P 203 "She's gone", said *some one*, and *somebody else* said, "So much the better" | Pinero Ir 205 And you've met *no one else* of our acquaintance? *Nobody.* | Ward M 273 *Nobody* knows.—Not even William?—*No one.* | Wells L 100 *Somebody* shuddered again, *someone* opposite him this time | Wells T 47 he remarked that *nobody, not any one*, ever, had given him sympathy.

The plural *someones* is found dialectically: Caine M 114 there's someones on earth would sooner go to heaven solitary | 158 a barn, belonging to someones they're calling the sky pilots.

17.26. The forms containing *body* and *thing* have now coalesced so completely that there is felt to be something unnatural in a combination like this: Hughes T 2.139 his remarks on boating, and *everything and person* connected therewith; better: everything and everybody —*Every other body* = 'everybody else' in Carlyle F 3 115 "Everybody is astonished at every other body's being pleased with [the French Revolution] | Barrie M 191 everybody looked at *every other body*", is a Scotticism.—To the coalescence of the two words is due the frequent pronunciation of *somebody* and *nobody* with obscured vowel [sʌmbədi, noubədi]; in *anybody* and *everybody* the full vowel [-bɔdi] has been preserved by the rhythmic stress (I. 9 223).

17.27. Instead of *one* and *body* we also have *man*, though it is not very frequent except with *every*:

Caxton R 64 seke *euery man* vpon his feblest and wekest | Sh Ado III 2.110 Leonatoes Hero, your Hero, *euery mans* Hero | Sh R3 V. 2 17 *Euery mans* conscience is a thousand men | Oth II. 3 318 You, or *any man* liuing, may be drunke at a time | Spect 7 he visits us but seldom, but when he does, it adds to *every man* else a new enjoyment of himself | Shaw C 175 Well, *every man* to his taste.

In Sh As I. 2.30 "Loue no man in good earnest" *man* implies the male sex.

17.28. Shakespeare also has *each man*, where now *each* alone (or *every man*) would be generally used:

Sh H4A V. 2 93 Let each man do his best | Lr IV. 1 74 So distribution should vndoo excesse, And each man haue enough

This supplies us with a genitive of *each*: Sh Hml I. 3.69 Take *each mans* censure. This passage also shows us that *each man* and *every man* are strict synonyms, for in the preceding line Polonius says. Giue *euery man* thine eare.

Each body (Caxton R 114 eche body) is completely obsolete.

Something, etc.

17.31. As neutral principal pronouns corresponding to those in *-body* and *-one* we have *something*, *nothing*, *anything*, *everything*, and finally *somewhat*, which is, however, now generally restricted to the subjunctal function (17.41). The words *aught* and *naught* are nearly obsolete in standard English (17 43).

17.321 *Something* and the other forms in *thing* are now indissoluble wholes to a greater extent than in former periods, when an adjective could come in between *some*, etc, and *thing*, as seen in Ch C 325 Tel us som moral thing | ib 328 som honest thing | AV John 1 46 Can there *any good thing* come out of Nazareth | Defoe R 13 *some dreadful thing* had happen'd This is still found in *no such thing* (for instance Austen P 4) and *any such thing* (ib 7). Instead of *every such thing* or *everything such* the usual phrase is *everything of that kind*, thus also *something of that kind*.

The numeral *one* must, of course, be placed between *some* and *thing* as in Stevenson D 7 it is necessary to know *some one thing* to the bottom, but then *thing* has here more of its original substantive meaning than in the other combinations

17.322. The usual word-order is seen in *something new* | *nothing particular* | *anything wrong*? | *everything*

important | Sh Mcb IV. 1.45 By the pricking of my thumbes, *Something wicked* this way comes | Ant IV. 3.3 Heard you of *nothing strange* about the streets? | London A 192 I fail to see *anything* in it *remarkable or unusual* | Bennett C 1 160 the story stimulated *something secret* in him that seldom responded to the provocation of a book, more easily would this secret something (8 44) respond to a calm evening | Hope D 56 changing what you are for *something no better* [This shows the semi-predicative character of the adjective after something] | Mered E 421 I was under the cover of *something silk* [rare, cf 13.62].

An adjective may also be added by means of a relative clause:

Defoe R 155 so void was I of everything that was good.

17.323. It should be noted that the difference between *nothing new* and *no new thing* corresponds to the distinction between mass-words (non-countables) and thing-words (countables), cf. 5 2 This explains the distinction made by Spedding in Tennyson L 1 171 I have not done *anything good*, nor said *any good thing* In Stevenson M 68 *still no human thing* means the same thing as no human being'.

17.33. Like other mass-words *nothing* may also be combined with *much*, *nothing much* (which does not seem to be very old) means nearly the same as 'not much':

Gissing B 144 nothing much depends on it | Vachell H 35 nothing much to speak of | Wells L 19 I don't mind It's nothing much | Harraden F 27 there's nothing much the matter with me | Hope In 18 | Herrick M 68 Nothing much was done | Housman J 329 Nothing very much happened at the ball

17.341. *Something* may be used instead of a name one has forgotten or does not know

Thack V 20 to write to Sir -mething Crawley | Carlyle R 1.282 This was the Honou ble Something or

other | ib 283 the Honourable Something had a look of perfect politeness.

Something may in a similar way be a substitute for a word of another word-class: Hope Ch 57 she acts, or sings, or something.

In a similar way *everything* is colloquially used at the end of an enumeration, no matter what kind of word it is to take the place of: Bentham (NED) It is against my habits, my principles, *my everything*, to propose it to him | Zangwill, Cosmop '97.616 new plates, new dishes, new spoons, *new everything* | Goldsm 646 if he be so young, so handsome, and *so everything* as you mention | Galsworthy M 197 a little too alert, a little too dark, a little *too everything*.

17.342. Note the following idiomatic expressions: Philips L 119 he may *be anything between* sixty and a hundred | Sw El 38 he *thinks nothing of* drinking six cups of tea straight off

Cf also the well-known passage Sh Merch I 1.114 Gratiano speakes an infinite deale of nothing,—and the imitation in Ru Sel 2 85 that they should mean something, and a good deal of something.

17.35. *Something of a critic* is used in the sense: 'to some extent a critic' (cf. *somewhat* 17.41) Di N 554 she was something of a critic | Caine E 69 The man was something of a dandy | Quiller Couch M 132 she was something of a scholar | Mered H 461 thinking her something of a fool || Di T 2.285 with something of the complacency of a curator | Phillpotts M 358 he went through something of a crisis | Stevenson M 60 he spoke to me in something of a pulpit voice [id D 178 I have something of the poet in my nature]

17.36. In some cases we find the pronouns in *-thing* used in such a way that we may either take them as objects of the verb or as subjuncts to it; thus in Ch C 433 I *preche no thyng* but for coveitise, further in combinations with *care*:

Di Do 48 they *cared nothing* for this | Austen P 79 a man whom nobody *cared anything* about.

In the following combinations also, *nothing* is approximately a subjunct

Dickens D 39 I had *thought little or nothing* about my home | Benson D 235 Duchesses were expected to be *nothing accounted of* | Scott Iv 223 that *concerns* thee *nothing*

17.37. *Nothing* was formerly much more frequently than nowadays used as a subjunct with a verb, meaning practically 'not'

Ch C 404 myn entente is not but for to wynne, And no thyng for correccioun of synne | Caxton R 113 wherof he thankyd nothyng the cook | More U 275 whoes lawes . he wold nothing at al esteme | ib 201 thys doth nothing diminishe their opinion | Sh R2 I 1 120 such neighbour-neerenesse to our sacred blood Should nothing priuiledge him | Oth II 3.224 to speake the truth shall nothing wrong him | Cor I 3 111 they nothing doubt | Ado V. 1 33 therein do men from children nothing differ.

The corresponding subjunctal use of *anything*, as in More U 213 that they wolde annye thyng profityte therin ib 297 yf he doo annye thynge erre, — does not seem to occur in Shakespeare or later writers.

17.381. Next, we have some combinations in which *nothing*, etc., is used with an adjective or adverb to indicate degree and thus becomes practically a subjunct.

In the following combination with *like* it is still possible to take *nothing* as the pronominal principal (predicative) with *like* added as a post-adjunct: Hoccleve (NED) Hir woys was . nothing like a mannys voise in sound.

17.382. This leads to the use of *nothing like* before *so (as)* as a kind of composite subjunct = 'not at all, not in the least'; stres on *like* NED 1728 (Blower) [she sits her horse] nothing like so well as you

used to do Recent examples are. Di L 135 It is a fine place, but *nothing* like as beautiful as people make it out to be | Di D 85 I was much less brave than T and nothing like so old | Seeley E 92 the effects produced in Holland were nothing like so momentous as those which I have traced in England | Mrs Carlyle 3.203 that night on the road was nothing like so wretched as those nights at Marina | ib 222 Being nothing like so polite and self-sacrificing as you, I told Helen to say I was tired | Ru P 2 46 the houses were nothing like so interesting as | ib 3 4 the road is nothing like so terrific as most roads in the Alps | Browning 2 152 old And nothing like so tall as I myself | Henley Burns 242 In another respect their luck was nothing like so good.

Thus also

McCarthy 2 161 No sixpenny paper contained *anything like* the news which is supplied by the penny papers of our day | CD Buck, Linguistic Conditions of Chicago 19 No other city in the country contains *anything like as* many representatives of these groups | Hope Ch 154 unless you behave *something like* a gentleman

A similar expression, now extinct, is Defoe R 70 I was *nothing near so* anxious about my own danger | Sh Wint V. 3 28 Hermione was *nothing so* aged as this seemes Cf also Brontë P 19 young curates who were *nothing equal* to me for steadiness

17.383. *Nothing* as a subjunct is very frequent in the (literary) phrase *nothing loth* (e g. Di X 26 nothing loth to go, Thack N 257, Carlyle R 1 88, Haggard S 252, Philips L 51, Mered H 223, Kipl S 212, Grand T 85). As the phrase does not occur in Sh, it is no doubt a reminiscence of Milton PL IX. 1039, where "he (Adam) led her nothing loath" to the nuptial couch—a passage probably better known than most passages in PL

(*Not loth* as in Hope R 89 is rare)

17.384. From this phrase, subjunctal *nothing* has then been extended to other synonymous expressions, chiefly with participles

Di N 491 *Nothing daunted* by this repulse | Di Do 381 *nothing checked* | Kingsley H 225 He, *nothing discomfited*, likened himself to Socrates | Poe 129 *nothing discouraged* | Philips L 88 *nothing disconcerted* | Harraden F 317 *nothing reluctant* | ib 328 *nothing mollified* | Thack H 112 *nothing doubting* (also Di Do 192).

17.385. *Something* as a subjunct to indicate the degree, where now *somewhat* is used, was formerly frequent, in Scott it was a literary archaism, and now it is found in vulgar speech only:

Sh Wiv I 4.14 he is giuen to prayer; hee is something peeuish that way (and often in Sh, not in Mi) | Behn 327 he advanced something farther | Congreve 265 the barbarity of it something surprises me | Defoe R 101 I was something chilly | ib 176 | ib 323 till I was something surpriz'd with the noise of a gun | ib 346 our guide being something before us | Swift 3 340 another kind of root very juicy, but something rare | Austen M 199 has not Miss Crawford a gown something the same | Scott A 1.209 I am something surprised at it || Shaw D 197 it cut me off from all my old friends something dreadful | Ridge S 51 she was using the little girl something crool | Caine P 267 'e knocks 'is mother about something cruel. Here *dreadful* and *cruel* are = 'dreadfully, cruelly'.

In educated speech one may hear· He's something like his mother | she wore something the same sort of dress as before

17.39. With comparatives, and before *too*, *something* and *nothing* are fairly frequent as subjuncts to indicate the difference:

Di N 429 he was something stouter than his brother | Di D 335 Grainger, something older than Steerforth | Holmes A 142 houses built something more than half a century ago | [Stevenson JHF 63 in something less than a fortnight he was dead] | Gissing B 135 two cabinets, something the worse for transportation || Wells N 200 I was nothing bigger at twenty-seven than at twenty-two ||

Di Do 186 Something too deep for a partner, and much too deep for an adversary, Mr Carker sat . .

17.411. *Somewhat*—a combination of *some* and the indefinite *what* OE *hwæt*, which goes back at least to 1220: AR 398 mid sumhwat elles—was formerly frequent as a neutral pronominal principal, in which function it has now been nearly supplanted by *something*; in some passages the Shakespeare folio corrects the quarto reading *somewhat* into *something* In the nineteenth c *somewhat* is either archaic, as in Carlyle, who prefers it to *something*, or else vulgar (*summat* in the last quotation). Examples

Sh H4B V. 3 83 an old man can do somwhat | Wiv IV. 5.128 here is a letter will say somewhat | Mi PR 1.433 that hath been thy craft, By mixing somewhat true to vent more lyes | Behn 336 he knew somewhat of the business | Fielding T 1.177 Mr Jones had somewhat about him which . | ib 3 48 the religion, together with somewhat else, taught him | ib 3 196, 4 175 | Austen S 171 as if he had somewhat in particular to tell her | Carlyle S 82 thus nevertheless was there realised Somewhat | Merriman S 69 we all carry with us through life somewhat of the scenes through which we passed in childhood | Swinb A 80 Much good and somewhat grievous hast thou said | ib 93 | Shaw 2 116 Gimme a nice book . Summat pleasant, just to pass the time

A somewhat (cf 8 442 *a something*) is rare Fielding T 4 185 she now began to feel a somewhat for Mr Jones

17.412. In the combination *somewhat of a* = 'to some extent a' (cf above *something of a*), *somewhat* is still comparatively frequent, this may depend on the similarity with the subjunctal function mentioned below (17.413)

Di Sk 475 he was somewhat of a favourite with his uncle | Doyle S 2.27 I am somewhat of a fowl fancier || Scott A 242 a walk to Fairport had become somewhat of an adventure with Mr Oldcastle | Stevenson JHF 19

this little spirt of temper was somewhat of a relief to Mr Utterson | Doyle S 4.108 It is somewhat of a liberty.

10.413. As a subjunct of degree, *somewhat* is extremely frequent, often in a depreciatory sense = 'rather too':

Sh Tp III. 1.58 I prattle somewhat too wildly | Mi PL 6.616 for a dance they seemd Somewhat extravagant and wilde | he was somewhat paler than usual | Haggard First 139 somewhat to my astonishment | Dickinson R 56 Such, or somewhat such, is the situation | NP '97 I should do it in somewhat the following fashion | Carpenter C 60 we are in somewhat the position of a mole surveying a railway track

Thus we see that *something* and *somewhat*, which were originally strictly synonymous, have more and more differentiated, the former being used more and more exclusively as a pronominal principal, and the latter as a subjunct No **anywhat* or **nowhat* is found.

17.42. *Somedeal* (now obsolete) was used as a subjunct very much like *somewhat*

Sh Tit III 1 245 To weepe with them that weepe, doth ease some deale | BJo 3 132 he may be somedeal faulty | Stevenson B 115 he is some deal heartened up.

17.43. *Aught* (OE *ā* + *wiht*) means the same as 'anything' and is chiefly used as a principal. The spelling *ought* (cf. I 10.73), which was frequent in 17th and 18th c., has now practically disappeared It is best known in the phrase *for aught I know (care)*, but even there it is obsolescent. 19th c examples. Austen P 292 Has he deigned to add aught of civility to his ordinary style? | Di Do 276 she is more degraded by his knowledge of her than by aught else | Bennett C 1.96 For aught his father could ever guess he might have been prevented The word is frequent in Bennett's books in accordance with its employment in North Country dialects.

The personal use is exceptional· Stevenson U 54 nor aught of man's sons escaped from the command.

As a subjunct, 'to any extent, in any respect' *aught* has never been very common, NED has quotations from 1205 to 1870 (Morris, archaism); it is also found in Mi SA 1420 if aught religion seem concern'd.

Aught or more frequently spelt *ought* has become a sb in the signification 'cipher, O', see NED (s v cipher) it was said that all Cambridge scholars call the cipher *aught*, and all Oxford scholars call it *nought* This must have arisen through metanalysis· *a nought* > *an aught*

17.441. The corresponding negative *naught* or *nought* has largely gone out of use, though found now and then, e g in Arnold Bennett's books Its chief use is as a principal, for instance Sh Mids III 2.462 Jacke shall haue Jill, nought shall goe ill | John V 7.117 Naught shall make vs rue, If England to it selfe do rest but true | to set at naught

17.442. It was formerly frequent in the predicative, where it meant 'nothing, i e of no value, worthless, bad, wicked' In this use it is by many lexicographers reckoned as an adjective, though an adjunctal use does not seem to occur (in Sh *naughty* is the corresponding adjunct): Sh H5 I. 2.73 [his title] Though in pure truth it was corrupt and naught | Hml III 2 157 You are naught | By (NED) the poem will be naught

17.443. The use of *naught (nought)* as a subjunct is parallel to that of *nothing*· Sh Gent III. 1 83 she is nice, and coy, And naught esteemes my aged eloquence. This use was once so extensive that *nought* in the shortened form *not* (ME also frequently *nat*) became the usual negative subjunct and supplanted the weaker *ne*.

All.

17.51. *All* is used as a principal, as an adjunct, and as a subjunct As a principal it is used both in the sg and in the pl, but as usual the former is exclusively neuter, and the latter is personal.

Examples of the sg:

All's well that ends well | Sh Merch II. 7.65 All that glisters is not gold | Mcb I. 7.46 I dare do all that may become a man | Mi PL I 105 What though the field is lost? All is not lost | Swift 3.219 he made wise observations on all I spoke | Wordsw P 4.385 all else was still | Fox 1 93 the bishop promised all in his power | Shaw C 32 when all was arranged | Phillpotts K 147 All, or anything approaching all, she did not know | after all is said | Is that all?

A neutral *all* is also found in the phrase *and all* = 'and so on, etcetera', as in Sh As IV. 1 117 Then loue me. Yes faith will I, fridaies and saterdaies, and all | R2 III. 4 52 the weeds Are pull'd vp, root and all (= roots included) | Scott (NED) With smithy, bellows, tongs, anvil, and all. Cp. also I hate poetry and painting *and all that.*

17.52. When *all* is combined with an adjective, it sometimes does not matter which of the two words we consider as the principal and which as the adjunct: *all good* = *all* as principal 'everything' + *good* post-adjunct, or = *all* adjunct + *good* principal (cf. 11 3) Wordsw P 4 133 richly laden with *all good* | Ru C 47 it is with lent money that *all evil* is mainly done —Cf. also *all this, all that*

17.53. This neutral *all* very rarely has the definite article before it, as in Sh Sonn 31 14 "thou hast *all the all* of me", but frequently a possessive pronoun: Sh Sonn 109 14 thou art *my all* | Sh R3 I 2 250 On me, *whose all* not equals Edwards moytie | Dryden 5 257 My life! my soul! *my all* that Heaven can give! | Di M 220 We have very little to venture, but it is *our all* | Merriman S 182 a man who plays for a high stake, must be content to throw *his all* on the table.

Neutral *all* is very frequent with *little*: Fielding 3.508 bring hither *my little all* | Stevenson D 295 *my little all* has perished | Ru C 20 Will you take *this little all* of his

life from your poor brother? | Di D 143 with *my little worldly all* in a small trunk.

The use of *alls* as in Fielding (NED) he bid me pack up *my alls*, is now obsolete, except in Sc

17.54. Neutral *all* is frequent in prepositional groups *at all, after all, above all (for all, withal = with all), in all* Sh Hml 1 2 187 Take him *for all in all* | By DJ 2 189 they were *All in all* to each other

A rare variant in Archer A 73 Take it *all and all*, America is a trying place

17.55. Examples of the personal *all* in the plural: Rich and poor, all must die | Sh Cor I 6.81 A certaine number (Though thankes to all) must I select from all | Mill Fox 2 257 All send love to all.

Very rarely with the definite article: Sh Wint V. 1 14 from *the all* that are [= all those that exist]

17.56. As the principal *all* is thus both sg and pl, there is a tendency now to avoid it and to use *everything* and *everybody* respectively "I came to tell you all" is not clear, therefore it is preferable to say "to tell all of you, everyone of you" or "to tell you everything", "to tell you all about it" In Sh Hml III. 2 5 "vse all gently" *all* would now generally be taken as the pl, and *everything* would therefore be preferred Where the AV has "all that I haue is thine" (Luke 15.31), the 20th c translation has "everything I have is yours"

17.57. *All* is extremely frequent as an adjunct in various applications. all England | all women | all night | all the money | all my money | all his friends | Sh Meas IV 3 109 Ile make all speede | Cowper Gilpin: Up flew the windows all

17.58. *All* is very often used as a subjunct We shall first consider those cases in which we have a transition from the use as a principal to that as a subjunct.

Thus when a neutral *all* is in apposition with the subject:

Sh Ado III. 2.10 he is all mirth | Mi C 560 I was all eare | Austen P 35 I am all astonishment | Di Do 173 the Major was all politeness | Fox 1.66 a man all nerves | Disraeli (NED) His Royal Highness was all smiles, and his consort all diamonds | Caine E 265 she was all in a tremor

In "it is *all one* to me", "it was *all the same* to him" (Di X 4) *all* might perhaps be termed neutral in apposition to *it*, but in "he will come *all the same*" it is frankly a subjunct. In the exclamation *all right*, it is probable that *all* was originally the subject (neutral), and *right* the predicative adjective; but it has frequently been taken as containing *all* as a subjunct to *right*, as shown in the frequent use of both words together as the predicative: *That's all right*, and especially when *everything* is the subject Bennett W 1.263 everything will be all right | Ridge G 129 he was all right, and she was all right, and everything was all right. Note also Galsworthy P 4 36 I'm *quite all right* | Bennett HL 367 You'll be *perfectly all right*

17.59. Subjunctal *all* is frequent before a comparative with *the*: Di Do 156 you'd be *all the better* for it | ib 399 he held her hand *all the longer* in his own for that suspicion

Subjunctal *all* is hyphened before adjectives in *all-important*, *all-powerful*, *all-wise*, *all-pervading*, cf. on the other hand the spelling *almighty*.

All is used as a subjunct before adverbs. I ache *all over* | *all through* | *all round* | *all but*

The spelling is now different in *altogether*, *although*, *almost* In *alone* and *also* the original connexion with *all* has been still more obscured.

Either, etc.

17.61. *Either* and *neither* are frequent as principals (anaphoric), as in Fielding T 3 162 he was more inclined to eating than to sleeping, and more to drinking than to either | Sh Merch V 103 The crow doth sing as sweetly

as the larke When neither is attended | BJo 1.104 neither's friends have cause to be sorry (gen of either Sonn 28.5, Tp I. 2.450).

They are equally frequent as adjuncts: either hand | neither hand.

And finally they are used as subjuncts ('conjunctions, adverbs'). either he or I | neither he nor I | He isn't young Neither is he handsome = He isn't handsome either.

17.62. *Both* has the same three functions· Sh Merch I. 1 143 [shafts] by aduenturing both, I oft found both | both my hands | both he and I.

17.63. *Every* is now only an adjunct, but formerly it was sometimes used as a principal: Caxton R 43 euerichе in his place (ib 54) On *every one, everybody, everything*, see 17 2

17.64. *Each* is frequent as a principal. Sh H4B IV 2 105 Each hurryes towards his home and sporting place —and as an adjunct Sh Hml I. 5.19 [make] each particular haire to stand an end Cf. also 7 812.

Other.

17.71. *Other* may be treated here on account of its (quasi-)pronominal signification In OE it had always the 'strong' inflexion, whether as an adjunct or as a principal, whether with or without the definite article Now it is uninflected as an adjunct, but takes the substantive endings when it is used as a principal: gen sg *other's*, pl *others*, gen pl *others'*.

17.72. As principals we frequently find *the other* and *another* used anaphorically both in speaking of persons and of things, as in Sh Ado III. 4 11 my cosin's a foole, and thou art *another* | Lucr 1162 That mother . . Who hauing two sweet babes, when death takes one, Will slay *the other*, and be nurse to none. My bodie or my soule which was the dearer? When the one pure, *the other* made devine.—Rarely without the article: Sh Err IV.

3.86 a ring . . a chaine, Both one and *other* he denies me now.

In the 'reciprocal pronouns' *each other* and *one another* we also have *other* used as a principal.

17.73. As independent principals both *the other* and *another* are frequent in speaking of persons; instead of the latter we rarely find *some other* Sh Ado II. 3 161 Benedicke knew of it by some other (now. somebody else; also Shr I 1 209).

17.74. In this employment the regular genitive is formed:

Sh Sonn 68 11 Making no summer of *an others* greene | Sh Mids I 1 140 | Goldsm 641 he has all his happiness in *another's* keeping | Mrs Browning A 236 to suffer torment for *another's* sake (cf. ib 264 what you think of Mr. Some-One's book, or Mr. *Other's* marriage) | Dr D 114 the one occasion trod upon *the other's* heels [now better *the heels of the other*] | Norris O 146 surprised by *the other's* outburst | Le Gallienne in *many another's* name.—*Each other's* and *one another's* are perfectly natural, but instead of *this other's* one would now prefer *this other man's* in Sh Mcb IV. 3 80 I should Desire his Iewels and *this others* house

17.75. In the plural, the old ending in OE *ðа ōðre*, ME *the othere*, had disappeared, and in early ModE we thus had the same form *other* as in the sg Examples from Ch are to be found B 3344, E 436, F 490, G 21, 512, HF 23 *other* sayn | Malory 77, 88 (never *others*) | Caxton I: 47 all the *other* that were there | ib 56 The substantivized pl *others* begins to appear towards the middle of the 16th c More U has generally *other* (94, 155, 157, 172, 192), but some times *others* (103 the folysshenes of others, 192 both after *to* and as a genitive pl). Ml T 3103 has *other*, but 4111 and 4172 *others* (all these in stage directions); F 483 *others*, but the 1616 edition has *other*. Lyly C 284 *others*, but 294 *other* Shakespeare has both forms, though *others* is far more

common than *other*, which is found, for instance, Meas III. 2.93, Mcb I 3.14, Cy III. 1.37, cf. also R2 II. 4.12 (where *the one* is also a kind of plural, though it may be taken = 'one class . . the other class') Rich men looke sad, and ruffians dance and leape, The one in feare, to loose what they enjoy, The other to enjoy by rage and warre Bacon has *others* A 19, 37, 45, but *other* ib 39; cf Bøgholm B 59 f. The AV seems to have *others* more frequently than *other* (Tobit 6 14) Bunyan has generally *others*, but also *other* (G 32 many other) Milton has *others*, with the one exception PL 4 783 *these other* (Note that *som other* PL 3 211 is sg = 'somebody else', cf SA 1302 Some other . in his hand) Rehearsal 111 the *other*. Defoe has *other* in the pl (R 235, 239, R2 89, G 99) more frequently than *others* (G 131)

Nowadays *others* is the only form when no substantive follows; thus *the two others* = *the other two* (cf the obsolete *other some* 17 112). Before *such*, *others* is used contrary to the rule (*such* is not one of the adjectives that can be placed after their subst.): Spencer A 1 486 cultivated men—professors and *others such*

Examples of the genitive plural see 9 56

17.76. When *other* is accompanied by a quantitative adjunct, the adjectival character sometimes prevails, so that we find *other* (before *of*), where *others* would be expected.

Di (NED) Mrs C dipped certain of the rusks and ate them, while the old woman buttered *certain other of* the rusks | Gissing G 86 Fadge, and *sundry other of* his worst enemies | id R 226 in *so many other of* our good points | Bennett W 2 204 she would not have produced it [the cloth] for the first meal, had she not possessed *two other* of equal eminence.

Before *than* we also sometimes find *other* in the plural Meredith H 17 the graces of tradesmen's daughters may be witnessed and admired by *other than* tradesmen [= by those who are other than t., cf. below 17,78].

17.771. As an independent neuter, *the other* may be used, especially in the colloquial formula *this, that, and the other* Sterne 110 he would do this, and that, and *t'other* | Ru S 23 fancying they [the words] mean this or that, or *the other*, of things dear to them | Shaw C 108 reforming this, that, and *the other* (also Caine C 448, etc.)

Examples of neutral *the one, the other*: Lowell St 290 Swift never forgot or forgave, Dryden was careless enough to do *the one*, and large enough to do *the other* | Hope D 62 you meant that *The other* was nonsense | Stevenson JHF 66 it was impossible to do *the one* without *the other*.

17.772. *No other (but, than)* is archaic for *nothing else (except)*: Sh Mcb V. 4.8 We learne *no other* but the confident Tyrant Keepes still in Dunsinane | Sh Alls III 6.26 he shall suppose *no other* but that he is carried | Mcb III. 4 97, Meas V. 1 60, H4B V. 2 62, Tro II 3.119 | BJo 3.161 I think *no other* | Defoe G 72 milk, which is *no other* than the half digested food | ib 112 all first speaking is mimicry and *no other* | ib 116 of them *no other* would be expected | Shelley P 113 the most astonishing combinations of poetry are *no other* than combinations which the intellect makes of sensations | Carlyle H 125 [Luther] here stand I I can *no other* (translated from German) | Garnett T 12 they know no better, and can *no other* | Hope R 153 in this remark, he spoke no more and *no other* than he felt Cf the use of *no* with comparatives 16 8

Cp also Carlyle R 1 152 *What other* could he do now? = the ordinary *what else*

17.78. Apart from the combinations *the other* and *no other*, it is impossible to use *other* as a neuter principal except as the object after *do* and as the predicative after *be*, in both of which cases it approaches the meaning of 'otherwise' and might be called a subjunct (compare in some of the examples the parallel use of *better*)

Carlyle R 2 328 Nor could his private friends *do other than* mournfully acquiesce | id H 125 had Luther

in that moment *done other*, it had all been otherwise | McCarthy 2.525 No one undertook to say that there was anything the Government could have done *other than* what they did | Carpenter L 112 the tragedy which lies before her, and yet which she cannot do *other than* accept | Hope R 33 thinking that he could have done *other and better than* in fact he did | Hope In 121 Why give people *other than* what they want, *better than* they desire?

Allen W 62 had she been *other than* she was | Hope Z 69 [no one] imagined that I could be *other than* the king | Seeley E 80 That we might have been *other than* we are, nay that we once were *other*, is inconceivable | Dickinson S 57 history ought to have been *other than* it was; and we ought to be *other than* we are | Lang T 73 "In Memoriam" is not to be reckoned inferior to these [Adonais, Lycidas] because its aim and plan are *other than* theirs.

Note here in the three last quotations that the pl *others* would give another meaning, *other* = otherwise, different'

17.79. *Other* may be taken as the object in Norris P 382 I did not *answer other* than by taking her hand, and as the predicative in Bookman Nov. 1905. 85 had some trivial action *gone other* than it did (cf *go wrong*, *go mad*); but in either case it might also be termed a subjunct, as it means the same thing as the adverb *otherwise*; it undoubtedly is a subjunct in Sh Mcb I 7 77 Who dares receiue it *other*? NED has not this example, but some others, from 1205, 1628 and again [independently of the old usage?] from 1880, 1883. In many of the examples given in Schmidt's Sh-Lex p 817 *other* can hardly be called an adverb.

Index.

References are to chapters and sections.

A.

a, an, see Article, indefinite
a-, prefix, etc 14 15 ff
-a, ending 2 61, 2 65
Abbreviation-words 8 9, 13 8, 15 72
abducens 2 67
a-blaze 14 15
able, predicative and pre-adjunct 14 14
-able, adjectives in 15 483
aborigine 5 633
about to, with infinitives 15 89
above, adjunct 14 95
aboveboard 14 67
absent, principal 11 42
Abstracts, pl 5 39, abstract sb 12 25, adjective 9 71, 11 31
abundance 4 83, 5 212
Accusative with infinitive 1 67
acquaintance 4 95
Active 1 64, see also Infinitive
addle 13 82
Adjectival endings in substantive adjuncts 13 7
— *pronouns* XVI, XVII
Adjectives, definition 1 31, 1 32, 8 13, 13 8, distinct from sb 8 13, number in 2 22, 2 7, with object 1 62, substantivized IX, with one X, a good man and a true 10 96, as principal XI, pl to denote the whole class 11 41, adjective instead of adverb 12 26, before genitival compounds 12 331, adjective groups 14 2, adj + preposition + object as pre-adjunct 14 23, adjective subjuncts 15 2, adjectives in *-en* 13 16, in *-ed* from sb 15 34, place XV, is *cannon* in cannon ball an adj? XIII. See also Adjuncts
Adjectivification of sb XIII, of groups 14 67, of adverbs 14 9
Adjunct, definition 1 21, number 6.12 f, relation between adjunct and principal XII, direct 12 11, 12 17, shifted 12.12, 12 2, partial 12 13, 12 3, compositional 12 14, 12 4, other indirect adjuncts 12 15, 12 5; adjunct to proper name 12 17, substantival adjunct (orig compound) XIII, difference between adjunctal and predicative forms 14 1, place of adjunct XV, of adjuncts of quantity and number 15 12 Cf also Adjective, Post-adjunct
Admiraltys 8 91
ado 8 72

Adverb, definition 1 31, 1 32, with object 1 68, 1 86, pronominal adverbs 1 74, plural of adverbs 2 1, adv turned into substantive 8 5, as adjunct 12 27, 14 9, before substantival adjunct 13 5, adverb of degree 15 221, identical with adjective 15 27, adverbial post-adjuncts 15 73ff
advice 4 62, 5 34
-æ, pl ending 2 61
æsthetics 5 775
afeerd 14 16
afloat 14 15
afore-thought 15 41
aforetime 14 92
afraid 14 16
Afric 13 87
after, adverb, preposition, conjunction 1 68, 1 86, pre-adjunct 14 92
afternoon 8 7, pl 2 49, adjunct 1 81, 14 61
Afterthought-adjunct 15 45f, 16 24
Age, adj denoting 9 35
aghast 14 16
aglow 14 15
ago 14 36
ahigh 14 18
aide-de-camp, pl 2 56
air, *-s* 4 62
alive 14 15, 14 18.
all 17 5, principal 17 51, my all 17 53, alls 17 53, in prepositional groups 17 54, all in (and) all 17 54, personal 17 55, avoided 17 56, adjunct 17 57 subjunct 17 58, all right 17 58, with comparative 17 59, spelt al in compounds 17 59 — all eyes 6 225
all-but 12 272
almighty 9 22, 15 24, 15.43
almost 12 272
alms 5 62
alone, *lone* 14 16, 14 18
aloof 14.15
aloud, *loud* 14 18
amends 5 771
among 7 761, cf p 183 note
analysis, pl 2 66
anana 5 633
Anaphoric, defined 10 14, anaphoric one X passim, pronouns 16 231, 16 281, 16 32, etc
and, subjects connected by 6 51, nice and warm 15 29, and that 16 342
animalcula 2 653
Animals, pl unchanged 3 2ff, denoted by substantivized adj 9 75
anniversary 9 79
another, see other
antelope 3 24
antipodes 2 67, antipod 5 633
any, principal 17 12, neuter 17 13, adjunct 17 14, before numeral 17 14, with comparatives 17 16, subjunct 17 17, any two 5 166, any they 5 56, with pl verb 6 43
anybody, sb 8 441, and anyone 17 22 ff
anyone 10 22, 17 22ff
anything, sb 8 445, 17 3, with adjective 17 32, idioms 17 342, object or subjunct 17 36, subjunct 17 37f, anything like 17 38
a one 10 33, 10 57
apex 2 67
Aphæretic Words 14 18
apocrypha 2 653
Aposiopesis 16 22
apparatus 2 63

apparent 12 261, place 15 41
appendix 2 67
Apposition 15 61, 15 64 numerical disagreement 6 212
Appositional Compounds 2 33ff, 7 26ff
Approximation, plural of 4 5
apsis 2 67
aquarium 2 651
arch 13 71 f
archives 4 74
Arithmetical expressions (three nines, etc) 5 14, number of verb 6 33 f
armour 5 225
arms 5 73
around 14 18
arra, arry 10 333
article (of furniture, etc) 5 3
Article, definite 16 31, 16 42, with all 17 53, 17 55, with generic words 5 43 5 46, 11 3, 11 4, 11 5
— indefinite 1 27, with generic words 5 42, place and repetition 15 121, 15 17, 15.18; *a not* avoided 16 751, *a* after *no* + comparative 16 88, in some half a dozen 17 154
as a 15 172
as well as, subjects connected by 6 54
ash, -es 4 62, in compounds 7 11
ashamed 14 14.
ash-leafs 8 91
Asia 4 841
aside sb 8 55
aslant 14 15
asleep 14 15
asset 5 631
assize 5 774
astray 14 18
asurim 14 15
at best, last, least, most 11.38, *at that* 16 343
Athens 5 742
athletics 5 775.
at-home, sb 8 71, pl 2 49.
atlas 2 67
attention, -s 4 62
attorney-general, pl 2 41
Attraction, number of verb 6 72ff
Attributive, see Adjunct
aught 17 43
auto-da-fé, pl 2 56
automaton 2 651.
average 13 72
averse 14 16
awake 14 15

B.

back, post-adjunct 15 77
Back-formation 5 63, 15 33
bagpipes 5 73
Bahuvrihi, compounds 5 721.
baize 5 751
ban 4 62
banditto 2 64
banns 4 62
barracks 5 741, in compounds 7 11
bashed 14 18
basis 2 66
Bateke 11 58
Batwngo 11 58
bearing 4 62
beastly 15 25
beau, pl 2 68
beaver 8 92
being 15 482
bellows 5 712
bench 4 841
beneath 14 95
best of prose 5 413
betters 5 754

between 7 76, p 183 note; between one and two 6.66
— *-decks* 2 49
bhurrel 3 24
billiards 4 76, in compounds 7 11
billion 3 53
bit 5 3
bitter, -s 4 62, 5 751, bitter (cold) 15 21, 15 26
biznas 5 633
black cock 3 33
black-letter 5 24
bleeding 15 26
blind 15 26
Boanerges 2 67
bob 3 64
bodice 5 712
body, politic, etc 15 41, 15 54, pronouns compounded with 17 2
bone 3 93
born (days) 12 54, English born 13 84, post-adjunct 15 482
boots 5 723
bosomest 13 71
both, used of more than two 7 71, genitive 9 55, principal, adjunct, subjunct 17 62
bottomest 13 71
brace 3 51.
brain(s) 5 281, 5 752
bread 5 223
breakback 14 71
break-down, pl 2 43
breakneck 14 71, 14 74
breakwater 2 45.
breast-race 14 18
bred 13 84
breeches 5 792, in compounds 7 21
bridal 13 72
bridle 5 631
broad awake, open 15 21
bronchia 2 653
broth 5 224
brothers with name 2 39
Brussels 5 742, 7.21
buffalo 3 24
bugle 8 92
burial 5 631
burning hot 15 21
business 5 381
buttocks 5 73
buttonhole 8 92
button-over 14 751
buttons 5 723
bye 8 91
bygone 14 31

C.

cake, mass-word and thing-word 5 23
calm 9 79
calyx 2 67
candelabrum 2 651, 2 653
cannon 3 75, in cannon ball 13 11, 13 8
capital 9 78
carat 3 65
cargo 4 841
carrich 5 633
cast-away, pl 2 44
catamount 2 53
catch-'em-(all-)alive 8 66, 14 73
caterpillar 5 631
cat o' mountain, pl 2 53
cattle 4 812, 4 89
celestial 15 42
certain 11 61
change, sb pl 3 65, vb with obj in pl 4 381
chay 5 633
cheap 13 71 f
cheese 5 222, 5 62
cherry 5 631
cherub 2 69
chess 5 711
chestnuts 8 91
cheviots 8 92

chick, chicken, chickens 5 791
chief 13 71 f.
child, women with 4.35, in compounds 2 36, 7.42.
children in compounds 7 23
Chince 5 632
chintz 5 751
choice 13 71 f
chrysalis 2 67.
church 4 841.
cicatrix 2 67
Class, sg and pl to denote a whole 4 18, 5 4, adj pl 11 4
Classical prepositions in pre-adjuncts 14 66
Clause, definition and division 1 84
claw 5 633.
clay 8 91
clergy 4 814, 4 89
cloth 5 222
clothes in compounds 7 23
coach-and-six, pl 2 57
coal 5 23
coarse 13 71 f
cock-eye 14 74
coin 5 23, pl of names of coins 3 64
Collectives 4 16, 4 8, 4 9, 5 1, "collective plural" 5 4
colour, *-s* 4 62, 5 73, adj indicating colour 9 74
come, to 15 81
come-by-chance 14 752
comics 9 78
Common number 5 5, in adjuncts 6 13
commonplace 13 72
commons 5 725 5 751
Comparative in speaking of two or more 7 77, with s-plural 9 41, without *one* 10 92, as principal 11 38, ex-comparatives 14.13
— (little c. loss) 12 261
Comparison criterion of adjectives? 13 13, of substantival adjuncts 13 71
compass, *-es* 4.62
compendium 2 651
Complemental subjunct 14 32
Complex (duplex) object 1 67, 15 4
Composite objects 4 7, names treated as sg 5 73
Compositional adjuncts 12 4
Compounds, pl of 2 3, compound titles 2 37, connected with preposition 2 53, with *and* 2 57, number in first-words 7 1—7 4, loss of power to form c 13 84, adjuncts with c 12 321
Concord of verb 6 3 ff
Concrete neuter 11 31 ff
Condensed constructions, number in 4 36
confidence, *-s* 4 62
confounded 15 25
Conjunction, definition 1 86, cf both, either, neither, whether
constitutional 9 79.
content, adj predicative 14 14, contents and non-contents 9 36, sb 5 281
contrary 9 79
Contrast, causes post-order 15 53
convolvulus 2 62
Coordinate adjuncts 1 23, post-adjuncts 15 53
Coordination of substantives and adjectives 13 3
coot 3 33
copper 5 222, 8 91
coppy 5 633
cornucopia 2 61
corp 5 633
cottage 8 91

counsel 4 89
counterpoison 8 71
countryman (what c) 12 325
couple 3 51
course 4 61, > coarse 13 71f
court 4 841
court-martial 15 41, pl 2 41.
craft 3 73
Creed and party, adjectives denoting 9 36
crisis, pl 2 66
cross-country 14 18
Crucified 9 22
cruel 15 25
crumb 5 222
crystal 13 82
Cumberlandshire 8 91
curch 5 633
custom, *-s* 4 62, in compounds 7 23
cut-and-thrust 8 26, 14 792
'cute 14 18
cutthroat 14 74
cyclop 5 633, *-s* 2 67

D.

dace 3 43
daggers drawn 15 482
dailies 9 78
dainty 13 71f
damage, *-s* 4 62
damn, sb 8 23
damp 13 71f
dance 4 61
danger 5 222
dare-devil 14 74
data 2 653
Days of the week, generic 5 442
dead, principal 9 23 , subjunct 15 26 , deads 9 79.
deal (great, good) 5 212
dear (one) 10 87 , post-adjunct 15 45
death, *-s* 4 33
debt 5 222
decency, *-ies* 4 62
decorum 2 651
deep 9 79
deer 3 23
Definite number 7 8
demonstrative (proof d) 15 41
Demonstrative pronouns 16 3, 16 4
Derivatives, number in 7,5 , partial adjuncts with 12 3
Descriptive substantival group post-adjuncts 15 71
designate 15 41.
desperate 15 26
Detached first-words XIII, 13 6, 13,8 , as post-adjuncts 15 72
deuced 15 25
devil-may-care 14 83
devilish 15 25
dhole 3 24
dice 5 711 , in compounds 7 22
die, sb 5 711
die-away 14 751
'Die-Hards' 8 67
Differentiated plural 4 6
diggings 5 741
dilettante 2 64
dip 8 91
Direct adjuncts 12 11, 12 17
disagreeable 9 79
Diseases, names of, pl and sg 5 282, 5 76
Distributive phrases 5 132, 5 4 , "distributive plural" 5 4
ditto 10 91
divers 2 22
dog-in-the-manger, pl 2 53
dogma, pl 2 652
dogs-ear 7 43
dog-skin 8 91
do-nothingness 14 71
domestic 15 41
don't-care-ism, *don't-carish* 14 76

double 12 57, place 15 121, subjunct 15 26
down, sb 8 52
downhill 14 64
downstairs 14 64
dozen 5 11, pl 3 52
draught, *-s* 4 62
drawback 8 68
dreadful 9 78.
dreadnought 8 63, 14 72
Dress, substantivized adj denoting 9 77
dry-as-dust, pl 2 58
Dual 7 6
due 15 41
dug-out, pl 2 44
Duplex object and *duplex subjunct* 15 4, number in duplex subjunct 4 36, cf complex

E.

-e, pl ending 2 64
each, principal and adjunct 17 64, different from every 7 81, repeated by they 5 56, each one 10 22, each man 17 28, each other 7 75, 17 7
early 12 56
earth 5 222
earthenware 5 24
East India, *East Indian* 13 86
eave(s) 5 631
economics 5 775
-ed, adjectives in 15 34
ego 8 42
"Egypt Exploration Fund" 13 87
eider duck 3 33
either with pl verb 6 44, used of more than two 7 73, either one 10 22, principal, adjunct, subjunct 17 61
elders 5 724
elect 15 41
ember(s) 5 281
Emphasis causes post-position 15 54
-en, adj in 13 16, ptc in, as pre-adjuncts 14 11
encomium 2 651
enemy, as pl 4 96, be enemies with 6 232
enough, number 2 75, principal 11 61, place 14 22
enow 2 75
ephemeris 2 67
erewhile 14 92
errata, *erratum* 2 651, 2 653
-es, pl in 2 66
-ese, words in 5 632
Eskimo 11 58
ethics 5 775
ever a one 10 333
evermore 14 92
every, principal, adjunct 17 63, repeated by they 5 56, every two 5 166, different from each 7 81, two subjects each with every 6 542.
everybody sb 8 441, and every one 17 22 ff, better than all 17 56
every man 17 27
every one 10 22, 17 22 ff
everything, sb 8 444, pronoun 17 3, with adjective 17 32, at the end of an enumeration 17 341, better than all 17 56
evil 9 6, the Evil (One) 10 85
Examinations, names of 9 73.
exceeding 15 28
excessive 15 26
exchange with obj in pl 4 381.
Ex-comparatives 14 18
excursion (train) 8 91
exempt 14 14
experience 5 222
extant, place 15 63
extempore 14 974.

extraordinary, subjunct 15 23; post-adjunct 15 41 f
Extraposition 1 44
extreme 15 26

F.

fan 14 14
fair (one) 10 85
family 4 814
far 14 961
far-away 14 961
far-between 14 98, 15 67
far-off 14 961
farewell 8 21
farrow 4 89
fat (one) 10 84
fathom 3 62
feeling 5 222
feet in compounds 7 23
female, sb 9 34; post-adjunct 15 41
fern 5 791
few 2 71, with collectives 4 88, a few 4 972, the few 11 42, principal 11 61
file 3 53
first three or *three first* 15 122 f
First-words of compounds, number 7 1 ff, pl 7 2, genitival first-words 7 4, detached first-words adjectives? XIII, isolation of 8 93, 13 6
fish, pl unchanged 3 4, mass-word 5 223
five = *five-pound note* 9 79
five-leaf 5 722
Flanders 5 742, in compound 7 21
Florence, *Florentine* 13 86
fly-away 14 751
fly-by-the-sky 14 752
folk(s) 4 912
fool 12 222
foot, pl 3 62, 3 72, in compounds 7 12 (7 5)
force, *-s* 4 62
forceps 2 67, forcep 5 633.
Foreign plurals 2.6
forget me not 8 65, pl 2 46
former, principal 11 62.
formula, pl 2 61
fors and againsts 8 54
fortnight 5 172
Foundling (Hospital) 8 91.
four-in-hand, pl 2 55
fours, on all 5 15
fourteen 14 11
fowl, pl 3 31, compounds 3 32, mass-word 5 223
Fractions 12 59
French adjectives, plural ending 2 76, place 15 41, French plurals in sb 2 68
Frequentative verb 6 92 f
fresh 15 32
friends with 6 231
fruit 5 23
fry 4 93
full 9 79, compounds of 2 42
funeral 4 76, adj 13 87
fungus, pl 2 62
fur 5 633
furniture 5 32
future (one) 10 85

G.

gadabout 8 67
gallows 5 712, in compounds 7 22, adj 13 72
game, collective 4 812, adj 13 71 f
Games, names of 8 21
gardens 5 741
Gender, adj denoting 9 34
general, compounds with 2 37, post-adjunct 15 41
Generic singular and plural 5 4

Genitival compounds, number of first-word 7 4, adjuncts with 12 33, case doubtful 7 27.
Genitive, pl 2 21, of adjectives 9 5 (pl 9 55, neuter 9 9), made possible by *one* 10 83, isolated as subject 10 98
genius, pl 2 62
gentry 5 631
genus, pl 2 652
Geographical names, pl 4 45, 4.74 (5 742)
German, sb (9 32) 9 79, 11 58, cousin german 15 41
giraffe 3 24
girdle 5 631
give-and-take 8 26, 14 792
glad, predicative 14 14
Gladstone (bag) 8 91.
glanders 5 76
go-ahead 14 751
go-between 8 67
goings-on 2 52
good(s) 9 6, goods 5 782, in compounds 7 22, good my lord 15 16
good-for-nothing, pl 2 55
good-humour 15 151
good-natured 14 11
go-to-meeting 14 752
government 4 841
grace, *-s* 4 62
Grammatical terms, word-order 15 43, cf. Terminology
grape 5 24
great 12 241, greats 9 73, in compounds 7 24
grece 5 711
Greek plurals 2 6
Greeks 11 58
green 9 79
grey hen 3 33.
gross 3.52
grounds 5 741
Group 1 81; group adjuncts 14 2ff, 14 5
grown, post-adjunct 15 482
grown-up, pl 2 44.
gum 4 75

H.

hair 5 23
half, sb and adj 12 58; place 15 121, half a one 10 332
Half-pronominal adjectives 1 71, as principals 11 6, cf XVII
handful, pl 2 42.
hand-round 14 751
hang, sb 8 23
hangdog 8 64, adj 14 74
hangman 8 64, pl 2 451
hansom (cab) 8 92
hard 11 37
harlotry 4 89
have to 15 851
Haymarket (theatre) 8 91.
he, sb 8 41, pronoun 2 23, 16 12, he and his 16 281
head 3 54
headlong 14 974
hear-say 8 66, adj 14 73
heathen 9 36
heaven, *-s* 4 62, they 4 842
Hebrew plurals 2 69
heir-apparent, pl 2 41
helix, pl 2 67
her, sb 8 41, pronoun 2 23, 16 12, 16 26, 16 29
here, adjunct 14 95, here and there 1.1, 8 58, *here is* with pl subject 6 81
hereafter 14 92
hern 16 26
herring 3 43
hers 16 27f
hide-and-seek 14 792
him, sb 8.41, pronoun see *he*

his 16 27, 16 281
hism 16 26
hither, adjunct 14 95
hitherto, adjunct 14 92
ho 5 633
hog 3 23 f
hold-up 14 751
holiday 5 774
Holmes 9 79.
home, post-adjunct 15 77
honour, *-s* 4 62, in compounds 7 23
hop-skip-and-jump 14 792
horse 3 71
horse-power 7 32
hotel 4 841.
hour 3 61
house, pl 2 21, as collective 4 841
household 4 841
how a 15 171
howling 15 26
Human beings in general, adjectives denoting 9 32
hundred 3 53, 5 11
hundredweight 3 63
hustings 5 741
hypothesis, pl 2 66

I.

I, sb 8 42, pronoun 2 23, 16 12
i, plural ending 2 62, 2 64
-ible, adjectives in 15 483
ice 5 222
icily cold, *icy cold* 15 21
-ics, words in, pl and sg 5 775
ignis fatuus 2 66
ignorami 2 62
ilex 2 67
ill 14 973.
ill-off 14 972
imaginable, place 15 63
immemorial place 15 42
imperative sentence, as substantive 8 6, as adjunct 14 791
in-between, pl 2 58
incarnate, place 15 42
indeed, place 14 22
Independent, as opposed to anaphoric 10 14
index, pl 2 67
Indies 5 18
indifferent 15 26
Indirect adjuncts 12 2 ff, 12 5
— *object* 1 66
Individualisation of mass-words 5 3
indoor 14 63
infantry 4 89
Infinitive, pre-adjuncts 14 41, post-adjuncts 15 8 f, active form 15 81 ff, with passive signification 15 84 ff, passive form 15 87 ff
innings 5 774
ins 8 53
Interrogative pronouns 16 5, whether 7 741, which as different from who and what 7 82, with one 10 63
Intransitive verb 1 63
invoice 5 711
I O U 8 21
iron 5 222, adjunct 13 16
ironclad 9 78
-is 2 66
Isolation of first-word 8 93, 13 6
Iterative verb 6 92 f
it is 6 242
its 16 27

J.

jackanapes 5 723
jakes 5 741
Japan, *Japanese* 13 86
jaundice 5 62
jolly 15 24

jousts 5 774
jungle, collective 4.841

K.

kangaroo, pl 3 24
kid 8 92
kin 4 841
kind, number (those kind of, etc) 3 81, 3 83, 3 85, kind of, subjunct 3 81
kindness 5 371
kindred 4 95, adj 13 82
kingdom-come 15 81
knee 3 92
knight errant, pl 2 41
— *templar*, pl 2 37
knockdown 14 751
know-nothing 14 72

L.

lace 5 24
lace-up 14 751
lack-lustre 14 71
lamb 5 223
landau 8 92
Languages, names of 9 72
last, place 15 122f, 15 55
late 14 93
Latin plurals 2 6, influence on place of adjunct 15 43
latter, used in speaking of three 7 774f, principal 11 62
laureate, place 15 41
lazybones 5 721
leads 5 741
lean-to 8 68, 14 751
leash 3 51
least 11 61
leave, take our leave(s) 4 323
lees 5 281
legislature, collective 4 842.
less, lesser 2 72, principal 11 61, less barbarians 12 274
letter, -s 4 62, letter patent 2 41.
lettuce 5 711
level 13 82
licence 5.62.
life, lives 4 33
light, -s 4 62
light o' love, pl 2 55.
lightskirts 5 721
like, principal 11.44, the like 11 34, 16 43, nothing like 17 381ff
likely + infinitive 15 51
linguistics 5 775
links 5 741
little, number 2 72, two significations 5 212, with pl mass-names 5 283, little one 10 84, principal 11 61, place 15 152.
live 14 18
loaf 5 223
lock-out, pl 2 43
lodging(s) 4 74, 5 741
London, collective 4 842.
lone 14 18
'longshore 14 64
look, -s 4 62
looker-on, pl 2 51
look-out 14 751
Lord Chancellor, pl 2 37
loth 17 383
loud 14 18
love, -s 4 62
lower in Lower Danube 12 56
lustrum 2 651, 2 653
luxury 5 382

M.

mackerel 3 43
maikhor 3 24
main adj 13 82, subjunctal 15 26
Majesty, plural of 4 13
make-believe (-f) 8 66, adj 14 73
makeshift 14 73
male, place 15 41

Maltee 5 632.
man, in compounds 2 34 f, 7 42, generic 5 41, in pronouns (every man) 17 27 f, with post-adjunct 15 473
manner (all manner) 3.81 f, manners 4 62, in compounds 7 23
many 2 73, with collectives 4 88, a many 4 971, one too many 6 211, genitive 9 55, as principal 11 42, 11 61
mark, pl 3 64
marquee 5 631
Marseilles 5 742
martial, place 15 41
marvellous 15 23
mass-words 4 17, 5 2, plural 5 224, 5 28, plant-names as m 5 25, immaterial m 5 222, 5 26, generic 5 412, plural made into sg 5 75, not represented by *one* 10 91, nothing new 17 323
Master with name, pl 2 38
mathematics 5 775
matins 4 76
matrimonial 15 41
matrix 2 67
matter 5 222, matters 5 443, with post-adjunct 15 472
matter-of-course 13 72
matter-of-fact 13 72
me, sb 8 42, pronoun 2 23, 16 12
means 5 755
measles 5 76
medium 2 651
memorandum, pl 2 651
memory 1 61
men, generic 5 441, in compounds 7 23
men-folk 2 34
merry 5 631
mesdames 2 21
Messieurs, *Messrs* 2 21, 2 68.
Metanalysis, numerical 5 6
metaphysics 5 775
metropolis, pl 2 66
mews 5 741
mice, in compounds 7 23
mid 12 55
middle (one) 10 85
might-have-been 2 47, 8 8
mighty 15 24
mile 3 62
military, the 4 96, post-adjunct 15 42
million 3 53, 5 11.
mindful 14 14
mine 16 21 ff, = my people 16 232, = my task 16 233, post-adjunct 16 24, mines 16 26
minutiæ 2 61
Miss with name, pl 2 3
mo (moe) 2 74
mock 14 78
moderate(ly) sized 15 34 ff
modern built 15 32
molasses 5 281
money(s) 5 32
monstrous 15 23
month 3 61
moose 3 24
moot 13 82
moral, *-s* 4 62
more 2 74, principal 11 61, more than one 5 52, 6 75, more . a 15 175, no more, not more 16 84, 16 87
Morphology, definition 1 1
mortal 15 26
most, principal 11 61.
mouse 3 24
moustache(s) 4.15
Mr with name, pl 2 38
Mrs with name, pl 2 38.
much 2 71, with pl mass-

names 5.283 ; as principal 11 31
music, musical 13 87
my 16 21 f , alone 16.22 , place 15 14 , good my lord 15 16

N.

nasal 2 67
Naples 5 742 , in compounds 7 21
narcissus pl 2 62
natheless 16 89
Nationalities words denoting 11 5
naught 17 44 , naughty 17 442
near, adj 14 962
near-by 14 962
Negative attracted to other word 16 74 f , see no
neither with pl verb 6 44 , used of more than two 7 73 , principal, adjunct, subjunct 17 61
-ness, concrete pl of words in 5 372
Neuters, substantivized adjectives 9 6 ff , in adjectives as principals 11 3 , neutral *this, that* 16 34 , see anything, etc
Neutral number 5 51
never a one 10 333
new with ptc 15 31 ff
Newfoundland 8 92
new-furnish 15 33
newly with ptc 15 31 ff
news 5 781 , piece of news 5 34
next, place 15 122 f , 15 55
next-to-nothing 14 62
nice and warm 15 29
nickel (coin) 8 91
night 3 61
nilghai 3 24
no origin 16 71 , adjunct 16 72 , different from not a 16 73 , attracted to sb 16 74 , before adj + sb 16 75 , no small, little, great 16 752, 16 76 f , no few 16 77 , before numeral 16 781 , no good 16 781 , no such 16 782 , no other 17 772 , no otherwise 16 783 , combined with sb 16 79 ; adverb 16 8 , in disjunctive questions and clauses 16 821 , Doctor or no Doctor 16 824 , before comparatives 16 83 f , no more, not more 16 84 , no less, not less 16 85 , no bigger etc 16 86 no worse a dauber 16 88 , no one 16 66 , no two 5 166 no . they 5 56 , no a . 15 174
no-ball 16 79
nobody, sb 8 441 , pronoun, different from no one 17 22 ff
noise 5 222
nonce, for the 8 51
none 16 6 , origin 16 61 , none effect 16 61 none other 16 61, 16 623 principal 16 62 ff , post-adjunct 16 631 , at the end of a sentence 16 632 , none such 16 652 , and no one not one 16 66 , neuter 16 67 , none of 16 68 , subjunct 16 69 , none the 16 692 f , none too, none so 16 694 , for no 16 822 , reason or none 16 825 — Number 5 54 , verb 6 42
none-so-pretty, pl 2 58
non-such 16 652
Normal plural 4 11, 4 2
nor, subjects connected by 6 61
not one 16 66 , not any 16 72 , not a 16 73 , not the less 16 89 , (whether) or not

16 82, with comparatives 16 83 ff
nothing 17 3, with adjective 17 32, nothing much 17 33, idioms 17 342, object or subjunct 17 36, subjunct 17 37 f, nothing like 17.38, loth 17 383, with participles 17 384, comparatives 17 39 — Nothing, sb 8 443
no thoroughfare 16 79, pl 2 58.
nought 17 44
Noun of multitude 4 86
noun-substantives 2 33 (15 43).
now, sb 8 58, adjunct 14 91, now and then 2 1, sb 8 58
Number II—VII, see table of contents, also Singular and Plural Words indicating number, unchanged pl 3 5, as collectives 4 83
number, -s 4 62
Numerals, with collectives 4 89, unified 5 12, + of with singular 5 59, principals 11 61, post-adjuncts 15 44
Numerical relations, Words with 7 6 f
nuptials 4 76

O.

-o, pl *-i* 2 64.
oak 5 222, 5 223, 5 25.
oasis, pl 2 66
oat(s) 5 281, in compounds 7 11, 7 25
Object, definition 1 6, of adjectives 1 62, of verbs 1 63, object of result 1 65, direct and indirect 1 66; complex (duplex) 1 67, object of adverbs 1 68
observanda 2 653
octopus, pl 2 62
odds 5 783.
of, ten of him 5 59
off, pre-adjunct 14 95, post-adjunct 15 77
off and on 14 95
off-hand 14 67
offspring 4 89.
oft, often, pre-adjunct 12 271, 14 91
oftentimes 14 91
ogrish 3 24
old, place 15 152, old age 12 47, olden 14 11
omnibus 2 62, 2 63
omnipotent 15 43
-on, pl *-a* 2 65
once, principal 8 51, pre-adjunct 14 91, plural 2 1
one, as prop-word X, before adjunct 10 23, ones 10 34 f, 10 42 ff 10 521, 10 53, 10.55, 10 61, 10 63, 10 66, 10 67, 10 82, 10 85, 10 87, 10 95, one + adjective + one 10 36, with possessive pronouns 10 64, with genitive 10 65, with personal pronoun 10 66, with substantive-adjuncts 10 67, 13 4, pronunciation 10 7, one avoided 10 9 — One another 7 75, one or two 5 52, 6 65
one-time 14 92
opposite in post-adjuncts 15 69.
or, subjects connected by 6 61
orchis, pl 2 67
Order of adjuncts 12 23, 15 11 ff
order, -s 4 62
Ordinals, substantivized 9 82
ordinance 4 842.
other, used of more than two 7 722, place 15 13, inflexion 17 71, principal 17 72, genitive 17 74, plural 17 75, other of 17 76, other than

17 76, neuter 17.77f.; no other 17 772, approaches subjunct 17 78, 17 79, other some 17 112
otherwise 14 98
ought, pronoun 17 43
our, ours 16 27ff, *ourn* 16 26
ourself, ourselves 4 13
out, instead of without 14.63, in post-adjuncts 15 73ff, sb 8 53
out-and-in, out-and-out 14 99
outdoor 14 63.
out-of-door 14 62
out-of-work 8 71
outsides 8 91
over a 15 175
overall 8 71
overhead 14 11
own, principal 11 35, to avoid difficulties in possessives 16 25, 16 29
oxalis, pl 2 67
oxen, sg 5 791, in compounds 7 23

P.

pains 5 754, in compounds 7 22
pair 3 51, 4 73
Pairs, words going in 11 2, 14 99
paper 5 222
parenthesis, pl 2 66
Parenthetic restriction 14 25
parish, collective 4 841
part, -s 4 62
Part, words indicating 4.83, parts of speech I (1 3, etc), 8.1, names of parts of the body 9 76, parts of words turned into substantives 8 9
Partial adjuncts 12 3
Participles, substantivized 9 24, 9 83, word-order 15 48, + adverb as pre-adjunct 14 34, as post-adjunct 15 52, + prep + object 14 35, with subjuncts as pre-adjuncts 14 3, as post-adjuncts 15 52
passing 15 28
Passive 1 64, see also Infinitive, Participle
past, place 15.55, + object as adjunct 14 65
patent leathers 8 91
pea 5 631
peg-away 14 751
penny pl 2 21, in compounds 7 12, (7 5), 8 93, pence in compounds 7 23, (six)pences 5 171, 8 93
pennyweight 3 63
pennyworth 7 31.
people 4 911
per cent 8 91
perch, pl 3 43
Person, in verbs 1 44, attraction 6 74, personal pronouns 16 1, definition of first and second persons plural 4 52ff — Adjectives denoting personal relations 9 38
pert 14 18
phalange 5 633
phalanx, pl 2 67
phenomenon, pl 2 651, 2 653
philistins 2 69
phonetics 5 775
Phrase, definition 1 87, pl of phrase compounds 2 47f, phrases turned into substantives 8 8 (8 6f)
physic, -s 1 62, 5 775
Physical and psychical characteristics, adjectives denoting 9 37
pickerel 3 43.
pick-me-up 8 65, pl 2 46

pick-pocket and similar compounds 8 6
pick-up 14 751
piece (of furniture, of advice, etc) 5 3
pig 3 23, 3 24
pike 8 92
pile 3 54.
pincers 5 73
pities 5 39
Place-names, pl 4 74, 5 742, in compounds 7 21
plaguy 15 25
plains in compounds 7 24
Plant-names, as mass-words 5 25, from adjectives 9 75
pleb 5 633
plenty 4 83 5 212
plover, pl 3 33
Plural, forms II, unchanged III, meaning of IV, normal plural 4 11, 4 2, plural of approximation 4 12, 4 5, plural of social inequality 4 13, differentiated 4 14, 4 6, composite objects 4 15, 4 7, collectives 4 16, 4 8, 4 9, 5 1, mass-words 4 17, 5 2, whole class 4 18, 5 4, common number 4 19, 5 5 — Pl or sg of a word with two adjuncts 4 22ff, characteristic of several individuals 4 3, of reciprocity 4 38 — Pl used as sg 5 7, raised to the second power 5 131, 5 167, 5 793
Poetry, post-adjuncts in 15 45
police 4 89
politic, adj place 15 41, *politics* 5 775
poll 3 54
pollard 13 82
porridge 5 224
portmanteau, pl 2 68
Portuguee 5 632.
positive, place 15 41
Possessive pronouns, principal and adjunct 16 2; two with the same sb 16 25, 16 29; before a genitive 12 336 with one 10 64, as post-adjunct 15 64
possible, principal 11 35, post-adjunct 15 63
Post-adjuncts 15 4ff, after that, those 16 351, 16 371, none 16 631, after none 16 65, after no one etc 17.24, after nothing etc 17 31, after all 17 52
pound, pl 3 63
power, *-s* 4 62
pox 5 76
Pre-adjuncts (adjuncts placed before their principals) XII, XIII, XIV, 15 1—15 3
precious 15 24
Predicative, definition 1 5, number 6 2, different from adjunct 14 1.
premiss, *premises* 4 62
prepense 15 41
Preposition, definition 1 68, 1 86, compounds of prep + object 8 7, pl 2 49, as pre-adjuncts 14 6, prepositional groups as post-adjuncts 15 76, prep omitted in group adjunct 14 54f
present (one) 10 85, those present 11 42, place 15 62
pretension, *-s* 4 62
pretty 15 223
previous, place 15 55
Primary words 1 21, cf Principal
Principal, definition 1 21, substantives VIII, IX, X adjectives as principals XI, pro-

nouns as principals XVI, XVII, relations between adjunct and p XII
private 15.41
prodigious 15.23
Pronominal adverbs 1 74, pl 2 1, as substantives or principals 8 12 8 5, as adjuncts 14 9
Pronoun, definition 1 71, pl forms 2 23, 2 8, as quotation-substantives 8 22, as substantives 8 4, as adjunct to first-word 12 325, place 15 14 — Functions XVI, XVII personal 16 1, possessive 16 2, demonstrative 16 3f, interrogative and relative 16 5, other pronouns 16 6—17 7
proof 13 82
proper, post-adjunct 15 46
Proper names 1 25, pl 4 4, as adjuncts 13 85, adj with 12 17
Prop-word one X
public, collective 4 842, adj 15 41
pudding 5 222
pure, adjective-subjunct 15 24
purple, adj 13 71

Q.

quality, collective 4 841
quantifiers 2 7, 5 212, 15 121 (11 61)
quarter, *-s* 4 62, 5 741
Quarterly (Review) 4 841
Quaternary words 1 21
quick 11 36
quid 3 64
Quinary words 1 21
quince 5 711
quire 3 52
quits 6 233
Quotation words 8 2; pl 2.48; adjuncts 14 8

R.

radius, pl 2.62
ramson 5 791
rare 15 23
reach-me-down 8 65, pl 2 46.
ready 11 37.
real 15 26
ream 3 52
Reciprocity, pl of 4 38
regard, *-s* 4 62
regnant 15 41
Relations between adjunct and principal XII
Relative pronouns 16 5, with collectives 4 85, number of verb in rel. clause 6 77
respect, *-s* 4 62
return, *-s* 4 62, = return ticket 8 91
reverse in post-adjuncts 15 69.
rhinoceros, pl 2 67
Rhythm 14 19
riches 5 62
rickets 5 76
riddle 5 631
rifle 8 92
right (one) 10 84
Rockies 9 79
roll-down 14 751
round, around 14 18, round ocean 14 963
roundabout 14 963
row 5 633
royal, place 15 41
rubbers 8 92
runaway, sb 8 67, pl 2 44; adj 14 751
running, place 15 482

S.

-s in verbs with pl subject 2 242

sail 3 76
sailor (hat) 8 91
sake, both our sakes 4 324.
Salic, place 15 41
salmon 3 43
salt -*s* 4 62 in compounds 7 23
sambhur, pl 3 24
same 11 34
sand, -*s* 4 62
sarcophagus, pl 2 62
sash 5 631
saturnalia 2 653
saubones 2 452
scales 4 72 5 73
scarlet 13 82
scene, -*s* 4 62
schuins 5 793
scissors 4 72, as sg 5 73, in compounds 7 21
score 3 52
seal 3 43
Secondary words 1 21, number in VI, cf Adjunct
seconds in compound 7 24
seldom, adjunct 12 271, 14 91
self, sb 8 43, in pronouns 16 44
Semi-predicative post-adjuncts 15 6 f
se'nnight 5 172
sense, -*s* 4 62
sensible 15 26
Sentence 1 41 and clause 1 84, as quotation sb 2 48, 8 2 as quotation adjunct 14 82
sentinel 6 223
sentry 6 223
seraph, pl 2 69
series, pl 2 66
sessions 5 774
set-back, pl 2 43
set-to, pl 2 43
several 2 22
sex, collective 4 841
sham 14 78
shambles 5.741
shark 3 43
she, sb 8 41, pronoun 2 23, 16 12
sheep, pl 3 23
shell 5 24
sherry 5 631
Shifting 1 28, 1 45, shifted sub-junct-adjuncts 12 12, 12 2
shilling, pl 3 64
shimmy 5 633
ship-shape 13 82
shoddy 13 71
shorthorns 8 91
shot 5 24
shrimp, pl 3 43
shuttle 5 631
sign-manual 15 42
silk, -*s* 4 62
simple 15 41
since 1 86, pre-adjunct 14 92
Singular, used as a plural 5 62 f, in first-words 7 1, in derivatives 7 5 See on the whole ch II—VII
Sioux 2 68
sirs 2 21
sit-down 14 751
sixes and sevens 5 15
sixpenny 8 93, *six-pence*, -*s* 5 171
sixties 4 51
Size, adjectives of size as shifted adverbs of degree 12 241 ff
skate 5 631
sky, *skies* 4 62
slant 14 18
slope 14 18
sly-boots 5 721
small 12 241
smooth-boots 5 721
snipe, pl 3 33

snowy white 15 21.
so + adj + a 10 332, 15.172
sobersides 5 721
Social position, adjectives denoting 9 33, plural of social inequality 4 13
socialist, socialistic 13 86
soda 8 92
solo, pl 2 64
Solomons 5 742, 8 91
some 17 1, as principal 17 11, neuter 17 13, adjunct 17 14, before numeral 17 14, indicates approximation 17 15, some half a 17 154, subjunct 17 17
somebody, sb 8 441, . they 5 56, and some one 17 22 ff
somedeal 17 42
someone 17 22 ff, someones 17 25
something 17 3, with adjective 17 32, instead of a forgotten name 17 341, something of 17 35, like 17 382 = somewhat 17 385, with comparative 17 39 — Substantive 8 442, something elses 2 58
sometime(s), adjunct 14 92
somewhat 17 41, principal 17 411, of 17 412, subjunct 17 413
son-in-law, pl 2 53
soon 12 271
soprano, pl 2 64
sorrow 5.222
sort 3 81, 3 84, 3 85
so-so 14 974
sound (one) 10 85
soup 5 224
specie 5 633, *species* pl 2 66
specimen, pl 2 652
spectacle, -s 4 62
spendthrift 14 71
spirit, -s 4 62, in compounds 7 23
spiritual, place 15 41.
spoken with adjective and adverb 15 36
square 13 71 f
squaretoes 5 721
stables 5 741
stage 8 91
stair 4 74, in compounds 7 21.
stamen 2 652, *stamina* 2 653.
stand of arms 3 54
stand-off 14 751
stand-offish 14 76
stand-up 14 751
stark 15 26
start-up 8 67
statistics 5 775
stay-at-home, sb 8 67, adj 14 752 f
stews 5 741
stick-in-the-mud 14 752
stickle 5 631
stimulus, pl 2 62
stone, pl 3 63
stone's throw, pl 7 44
straightforward 14 942
stranger 12 222
strata 2 653
straw (hat) 8 91
stray 14 18
Stress in compounds 12 41, 13 22, 14 11
stripes 5 723
Studies, names of 9 73
Subject, definition 1 43, and predicative of different numbers 6 71
Subjunct, definition 1 21, subjunct-adjunct 12 12, 12 2, adjective - subjunct 14 24, pronominal 16 39, 16 41, 16 42 f, 16 45, 16 52, 16 69, 16 78, 16 8, 17 15, 17 17, 17 36 ff, 17 443, 17 58 ff, 17.6, 17 79
Substances, adjectives denoting 9 74

Substantive, definition 1 31 pl 2 2—2 6, III—V, VII, criteria 8 11, distinct from principal 8 12, from adjectives 8 13 substantives proper 8 15, from verbs 8 16, quotations 8 2 adjectives substantivized IX, pronouns substantivized 8 4, adverbs substantivized 8 5, verb-phrases 8 6, pl 2 43ff, prepositional groups 8 7, 2 49, 2 53, phrases 8 8, pl 2 47. — Substantival adjuncts XIII, groups as adjuncts 14 51, 14 53
Substitutive plural 2 21f
such 2 22, principal 11 62, 16 45, such a one 10 331, such a 15 172
sudden 11 36
summon(s) 5 634
superficies, pl 2 66
Superlatives, in speaking of two or more 7 77, substantivized 9 42, 9 81, without one 10 931, as principal 11 38, post-adjunct 15 68
sweepstakes 2 452
swine 3 23
Syntax, definition 1 1

T.

tactics 5 775
talent 5 222
tales 5 726
talk 5 222
teal, pl 3 33
teas 4 61
teens 4 77, in compounds 7 11
teeth in compounds 7 32
tell-tale 14 71
temporal, place 15 41
Terminology, questions of grammatical. I passim, 3 21, 4 11—4 17, 4 4, 4 45, 4 811ff, 5 131, 5 211—5 226, 5 4, 5 51, 5 61, 6 9, 7 11, 7 6, 8 11, 8 12, 8 16, 8 21, 10 14, 10 86, 11 12, 12 11—12 15, 13 11—13 15, 13 8, 14 78, 15 121, 15 21, 15 4, 15 61
terminus, pl 2 62
terrible 15 25
Tertiary words 1 21, cf. Subjuncts
-th in verbs with plural subject 2 242
thanks 5 772
that, pl 2 23, that one 10 61, indicates neuter 11 39, 16 34, see especially 16 31ff, used of persons 16 33, that that 16 353 = something 16 355, that = what 16 355, that much 16 39, subjunct 16 395
the 16 31ff, subjunct 16 42, the like 16 43, 11 34, the = the typical 6 224, the + adj + one 10 41, the one 10 51
thee 2 8, sb 8 42
their, theirn, theirs 16 26f
them, adjunct 2 22, 16 13
thema, pl 2 652
then, adjunct 14 91
there is with pl subject 6 81f
these 16 3ff, = these persons 16 373, with collectives 4 87
thesis, pl 2 66
thews 4 75
they referring to sg pronoun 5 56, they are (cf it is) 6 241
thick-lips 5 721
thief in compounds 7 42
thine 16 21
thing, to express the neuter 10 99, in Scotch 10 91, things (indefinite) 5 443

with post-adjunct 15 471, in pronouns 17 3
Thing-words 5 2, esp 5 222, 10 91
this, pl 2 23, with pl words 5.16, this one 10 62, see especially 16 31ff, used of persons 16 33, neutral 16 341, 16 36, adjunct 16 38, this much 16 391f
thorough 12 273
those 2 23, with collectives 1 87, see especially 16 31ff, = some 16 372
thou 2 8, sb 8 42
thousand 3 53, 5 11
thundering 15 26
thy 16 21.
tidings 5 773
tight-fitting 15 21
time, mass-word and thing-word 5 222
tin, mass-word and thing-word 5 222
tire 3 54
Titles 2 37ff, of books, sg or pl 6 32
to-day, sb 8 71
to-do, sb 8 72, to do 15 83
toilet tidy 9 79
tolerable 15 26
to-morrow, sb 8 71
ton 3 63
to-night, sb 8 71
too + adj + a 10 332, 15 173
tooth in compounds 7 23 (7 5)
toppest 13 71
tops 8 91
total, place 15 42
touch-and-go 14 792
trace 5 711
Transitive verb 1 63
tricksy 7 5
Trinity (College) 8 91
troop 4 92
trouble, *-s* 4 62
trousers 4 71, in compounds 7 21
trout 3 43.
truce 5 712
tumble-down 14 751
tun 3 63
Turkey, *Turkish* 13 86
turn-about 14 751
turnover 14 751
turn-out, pl 2 43
turnpike (road) 8 92
turn-to 14 751
turn-up 14 751
turtle 3 43
twain, sb 5 12, adj 14 12
tweeze 5 73
tweezers 4 72, in compounds 7 11
twelvemonth 5 172
Two substantive genitives 12 337
type, mass-word 5 24

U.

ulster 8 92
-um 2 65
Unchanged plurals III, 11 58
unco 15 23
uncommon 15 23
under 14 95
undergraduate 8 71
underground 8 71
'ungrammatical' 4 89
Unification of Plurals 5 1
United States, sg 5 18, in compounds 7 25
up, sb 8 52
up-and-down 14 99
uphill 14 64
upper in Upper Rhine 12 56
upstairs 14 64
up-to-date 14 62
-us 2 62
us = 'me' 4 13

utmost 12 243
utter 12 243

V.

vapour, -s 4 62
vas, pl 2 652
vaults 5 741
Verb, definition 1 4, transitive and intransitive 1 63ff, forms of plural 2 24, concord 6 3ff, verb + object as sb 8 6, pl 2 45, as adjunct 14 7, verba pluralia tantum 6 91
Verbal Idea, pl of 6 9
Verbal-substantive 12 28
Verbid, definition 1 42
vermin 4 812
verse 5 26
very 15 222
victual(s) 5 281
village, collective 4 841
virtuoso, pl 2 64
visible, place 15 63
vocative 15 16, 15 45, 16 24
vortex, pl 2 67

W.

wage(s) 5 753
ware 5 24
-ward and -wards 14 942
warp 3 51
water, -s 4 62
water-colour 8 92
wayward 14 18
we, definition 4 52—4 54, sg (ourself) 4 13, we 'uns 10 66
wean 10 7
week 3 61
weird 13 71f
well, pre-adjunct 14 971
well-off 14 972
well-to-do 14 972
West India in compounds 7 11
what, pl 6 12, 6 243, 6 45, different from which 7 821, principal, adjunct, subjunct 16 52, with or without a in exclamations 5 213, what one 7 824, 10 63, what a one 10 332, what . a 15 175, what indicates neuter 11 39
whatten 16 52
what-not, pl 2 58
wheatear 5 633
whereabouts 5 784
where's with pl subject 6 83
whether 7 74
which, common number 5 54, pl 6 45, different from who and which 7 821, = old whether 7 744, which one 10 63, principal, adjunct 16 53
whilom 14 92
whisker 4 75
whisky-and-soda, pl 2 57
who, common number 5 54, pl 6 45, different from which 7 821, used of two 7 744, principal 16 51.
whose 7 823
wide awake, open 15 21.
wife in compounds 7 42
wild duck 3 33
will-o -the-wisp, pl 2 53
wit, -s 4 62
with, subjects connected by 6 53; = having 15 823, 15 852
witness 6 223
woman, generic 5 41, in compounds 2 34, 7 23, 7 12
women-folk 2 34
womenkind 2 34
wonderful 15 23
wondrous 15 23
wood, mass-word and thing-word 5 223
woodsy 7 5

word 3 91
Word groups 1 8
Word-order something great, some great thing 5 213, 17 32, one before adjunct 10 23 ff, 10 43, 10 51 ff, a good man and a true 10 96, yours is a long life 10 98, two adjuncts 12 23, 12 313, 15 1 f, 15 54 double 12 57, half 12 58, 15 121, substantival adjuncts 12 33 f, 13 61, adjectival groups 14 21, enough 14 22, indeed 14 22, participial groups 14 3, 15 52, infinitive 14 4, 15 8, other group-adjuncts 14 5, prep with object as pre-adjunct 14 6, verb with object ditto 14 7, two first, first two 15 122 ff, old, young 15 152, good my lord 15 16, how (so, too) great a 15 17, post-adjuncts 15 4 ff, no man living 15 473, proper 15 46, present 15 62 lady mine 16 24, none 16 63, a not 16 751, no worse a name 16 88
Words referring to two 7.7; to definite number 7 8
work, -s 4 62, 5 741, in compounds 7 23
world, collective 4 841
worsteds 8 91
worth while 14 65
would-be 14 77
writing, -s 4 62

Y.

Yankee 5 632
ye 2 8
year 3 61, three-year-old 7 15
yoke 3 51
yon, yond, yonder 16 41
you 2 8, you all you together 2 88, you folks, people, etc. 2 87, you was you were 2 89, meaning of plural 4 52, you 'uns 10 66
young, place 15 152
your, yourn, yours 16 26—16 29
yourself, yourselves 2 86
youth 4 94

Appendix.

Chapter I.
Introductory.

The whole theory of grammatical system and nomenclature has been taken up in a much fuller form in my book "The Philosophy of Grammar" (London 1924, George Allen & Unwin, here abbreviated PG), to which the reader

is referred, as well as to the article "Die grammatischen Rangstufen" in *Englische Studien* 60, 300 ff., in which I have defended my system of the three ranks against Otto Funke's criticism. Instead of the term *principal* I now always use the word *primary*, chiefly in order to avoid conflicts with the usual term "principal clause" (cf. 1.85). The expression p. 5 line 3 that "the distinction between primary, secondary, and tertiary is purely logical" is not correct: the distinction is one of "function" and not of "notion"· see on the meaning of these terms PG ch II and especially p. 56 ff The distinction between substantives, adjectives, and adverbs concerns words, independently of their connexion with other words, while the distinction between primaries, secondaries, and tertiaries has regard to the employment of words (or groups of words) in their relation to other words in the same sentence

1.4₃. I should not now say that a verb is connected with its subject as "a kind of adjunct"· the important distinction between *junction* and *nexus* (PG 108 ff) was not clear to me in 1913. What characterizes *complex objects*, as I termed them in 1 67 (duplex objects 15 4), is that the two parts together form a nexus, therefore I now prefer the term *nexus objects*

The references in 1 65 and 1.67 to chapters which did not find their place in vol II should be deleted These matters will now be treated in vol. III

Chapter II.

Number.

2.2₁. Strike out the pronunciation ['mezdəmz] for *Mesdames*

2.3₄. Bennett C 1 189 her own *menkind.*—Further examples of the rare unchanged *man* and *woman*. Carlyle

FR 591 *man-midwives* | Lawrence L 27 Outlaws have often the finest *woman-mates* | James Talks 227 girl-students and *woman teachers*.

2.37. Wells B 18 lord chancellors | Scott OM 12 lord-lieutenants | Birmingham R 21 Lords-Lieutenant | Huxley L 1.389 Lord Rectors | NP '21 three Lord Justices. Fowler MEU recognizes only *Lords Justices*.

2.38. Trollope B 374 the Misses Lookaloft, as they call themselves | ib 386 the Miss Lookalofts | Stephen L 187 I should not have met the Miss Thackerays (or should I say the Misses Thackeray, or how the deuce do you put it?) This illustrates the vacillation. It is hardly necessary to state expressly that this section deals only with the plural of a whole group, and that the form *Misses* is of course required before different names the Misses Mary and Ann Brown | the Misses Brown and Green—if one does not prefer to put *Miss* before each name separately.

2.41. Burke Am 44 all solicitors-general | Huxley L 1 24 Directors-General—but NP '19 other postmaster generals.—Spencer First P 377 sum-totals —Wells War 88 the greed of the Napoleons and Fredericks the Great.

2.42. The rule is: *-fuls* in the more, and *-s-full* in the less familiar compounds Additional examples:

car: Bennett Helen 50 two electric cars full of people (the adj makes it difficult to inflect *carfuls*).

hand two exceptional forms: Walton A 237 two handful of Marygolds | Wells TB 1.243 they gave handsful away

hospital Bronte V 195 women who have nursed hospitals-full of unfortunates.

sack: Kipl DW 8 sackfuls.

2.43. Add:

get ups Lewis B 155

holdfasts Troll Aut 268.

knockouts London V 79

makes up Keats 4.31

pull-overs

take ins and *takes-in* (NED).

throw-backs Galsw D 123, Mackenzie RR 39 (= **atavisms**).

2.4₄. *left-overs* Lewis MS 73 (leavings from meal)

2.4₅₁. Add Walp RH 74 the *steal-a-pennies*.

2.4₅₂. Singular · Hay B 139 the *shake hands* was disposed of Plural Di P 325 (Sam Weller:) a couple o' *Sawbones* Walpole OL 211 when she came to a cross-roads The *cross-roads* were there

2.5₃. In U S always two *son-in laws* (Mencken), cf. London V 222 sister in-laws | ib 310 daughter in-laws.

Add: Di F 334 *Jacks-in-boxes* | Wells H 397 daffodils and *snow-upon-the-mountains* (plant-name, not NED) | Curme CG 38 *jack-in-the-pulpits* (American plant).

2.5₅. Hardy R 32 *Fifth-of-Novembers* ought to be kept up by night

2.6. Many mistakes in classical plurals in colloquial American noted by Louise Pound and Mencken, see the latter's AL 259

2.6₁. Lamb E 1 19 their *Alma Maters* | wireless *antennæ*

2.6₂. Walpole RH 71 two *octopi* (Gr. *ous* treated as if Lat *-us*) | Galsw Ca 665 *rhinoceri* | Mackenzie S 1.234 *succubi*

2.6₅₁. Bronte W 260 and London M 202 *automatons*.

2.6₅₂. *stigmata* (Bennett T 38, Gosse P 10).

2.6₅₃. Wells TB 1 166 these *apologia* (Gr sg taken as pl)

2.6₇. Add. *radix, radices* Galsw P 10 6 *orchis* as pl.

2.6₉. Curme CG distinguishes *cherubs* darlings, *cherubim* angels, *seraphs* sweet singers, *seraphim* angels. This, however, is not generally recognized

Add *fellaheen* (Arabic) by the side of *fellahs* *Ski* (Norw pl) by the side of *skis*.

2.7₃. The pl idea is shown in Gay BP 109 *many a lady* of quality *have* servants of this sort.

2.8. *yez* as Irish pl Tennyson 556, Birmingham Regan 157

Chapter III.
The Unchanged Plural.

3.1₂. Add· (5) the tendency to use foreign words without any inflexion, see examples in 3.24 and some of those in 3 34 and 3 44, *cash* below 3 64 (and *carat* 3 65?), and compare 11 58

3.2₄. Add Wells Ma 2 185 six *caribou* London V 319 herds of *elk* | ib 474 two *bear* herds of *elk* | Kipl J 1.4 our *buck* are like his fat bullocks Note the quotation from Sir Charles Eliot on the pl of *rhinoceros* in GS § 141.

3.3₃. Cf. Galsw IPh 227 '(and elsewhere) These *green-fly* get in everywhere (Plant-lice. thus not exactly birds, but I find no other place to mention them.)

3.4₁. The second proverb is found in the form "Fish is cast away that is cast in drye pooles" in Eastw. Hoe 489 The distinction between *fish* sg as mass-word (food) and pl (individually) is seen in Cowper L 1.27 "One to whom *fish is* so welcome as *it* is to me, can have no great occasion to distinguish the sorts In general, therefore, whatever *fish are* like to think a jaunt into the country agreeable, will be sure to find me ready to receive *them*, *butts*, *plaice*, *flounder*, or any other If *herrings* are yet to be had they will be welcome too"—Walton A has *fish* and *fishes*, *salmon*, but not, I think, any other unchanged plurals: *trouts*, *minnows*, *pikes*, *loaches* —Kipl P 33 and 39 *trouts*

3.5₁. Walpole OL 12 three *pair of stairs* were a great number for an old lady. In that combination probably always *pair*, not *pairs*.

Add *team* 'set of (two or more) draught animals', pl rarely unchanged after numerals NED

3.5₂. Other 18th c quotations for the pl *dozen* Gay BP 8 and 13.

3.5₁. Burke Am 38 two *million* of men; but ib 56 two *millions* six hundred thousand pounds

Scott OM 161 ten *file*.

3.5₄. Carlyle FR 170 eight-and-twenty thousand *stand* of muskets

3.6₂. Some of the examples with *fathom* belong to 7.1₄

3.6₃. Quiller, read Quiller-Couch —Add Carlyle FR 168 five *thousand-weight* of gunpowder

Tun, ton Correct *Tun* (measure of capacity) and *ton* (measure of weight and of capacity, esp. for ships), originally the same word, both pronounced [tʌn], pl now generaly *-s*

3.6₄. The pl *shillin'* is found as a vulgarism in Shaw 1 33 and Galsw MP 30; Masefield W 37 his weekly five and twenty shilling —*Cash* (Tamil *kasu*) is used in the East for a small coin Maugham PV 141 we give them a few cash for every child

3.6₅. The pl *carat* may originate in the adjunct employment eighteen carat gold Bennett RS 86 What carat is it [a ring]? Eighteen. | ib 92 a very good ring . . . Harder. Nine carat

Walton A 197 eight or ten *load* at a time.

3.8₃. After *such*. Defoe M 56 for such kind of gentlemen.

3.8₄. Kennedy CN 159 She took it as one of *the sort of things* that Jacob was liable to say, *the sort of thing* that so palpably upset Uncle Robert —MacGill Ch 53 *three* rough looking, angry *sort of men*

Chapter IV.

The Meaning of Singular and Plural.

4.1₉. Add: Note especially the loose use of numbers in 5.5₇

4.2₄. Macaulay H 1 25 The gulph of a great revolution completely separates the new from the old system ib 30 the limits of legislative, executive, and judicial

power | Wells OH 319 With each invasion first this and then that section of the Semitic peoples comes into history || Walton A 152 the he and she frog are observed to use divers simber salts

4.2₅, second line, read adjunct instead of substantive

4.2₆. Bennett C 1 236 The eldest and the youngest child of the family sat at the piano in the act of performing a duet

4.3₂₁. Sh Alls I 3.169 were you both our mothers [i e the mother of us both].

4.3₃. Collins W 448 We each keep our opinion.

4.3₅. The sg is the rule when the definite article, and not a possessive pronoun, is used: Stevenson T 44 they were all in the saddle | Maxwell EG 265 almost slapping them on the back —Note further Oppenheim People's Man 124 There are any number of girls, I'm sure, who'd be proud to be your wife (*wives* would imply bigamy!) —Note the difference in Mason R 165 It is only in the wisdom of middle age that we lose heart In youth we lose our hearts—a very different thing

4.4. Cf PG 69.

4.5. Cf. PG 191 ff.

4.6₂ *argument* Bennett C 1.109 a man who had his way by force and scarcely ever by argument [i e arguing], a man whose arguments for or against a given course were simply pitiable.

letter, *letters* often of a single epistle (cp Latin) in Sh, e g Lr I. 5 1

society: Huxley L 1 250 having utterly renounced societies [i. e meetings of learned societies] and society since October | ib 1 324 the plan for uniting the Societies which occupy themselves with man (that excludes "Society" which occupies itself chiefly with woman).

4.7₂. *balance* 'apparatus for weighing' AV Rev 6 5 a pair of balances = Rev Version 1881 a balance The pl was sometimes *balance*. (Partly due to final *-s*, *-ce*, partly

to confusion of sense) NED, which quotes Sh Merch IV 1.255 ·Are there balance heere to weigh the flesh?

4.74. *stair*, see now NED.

4.76. Massinger N IV 1.187 such a divellish matins

4.87. NP '26 *We clergy* come into contact with young people | Galsw WM 124 most of *those big counsel.*

4.88. Swift UL 122 I keep *the fewest Company* of any man in this town | Thomson Spencer 266 *many* unprotected *offspring*. or *a few* carefully protected by the parent.—Cf also Kaye Smith HA 85 there are *certain clergy* who would willingly perform the ceremony

4.89. Carlyle FR 153 *Forty-eight Noblesse*, D'Orleans among them, have now gone over to the Commons | Di F 875 I want the room cleared of *these two scum* | Huxley L 2 47 *five womenkind* | Wells A 209 *a dozen Irish militia* were gathered | Carpenter Ad 72 we have a skipper and *four crew* | Mackenzie C 96 she turned up with *both her offspring*

4.90. Gay BP 152 I my self saw the enemy putting themselves in order of battle | NP '17 It is only our friends the enemy who are satisfied with themselves

4.912. Examples of vg or slang *a few* = 'a little'. Huxley L 1.232 It's a horrid nuisance and I have sworn a few | OHenry RS 119 we mined some and gambled a few

Chapter V.

Meaning of Number. Continued.

5.161. A curious use (*which* = the number of which) is found in Defoe R 2.99 tho' all the savages that were landed, which was near fifty, were to attack them | ib 125 all the children they had, which was near 20 in all. Somewhat differently Fielding 7.331 my mother was a most indulgent mistress to one servant, which was all we kept

5.162, end. Similarly *a long two hours* is different

from *two long hours* —Collins W 144 a good three thousand a year [= rather more than].

5.163. Fielding 1.427 I shall save many a twenty guineas.

5.165. An early example is Ch R 991 Contrarie to that other fyve (translates contraire as autres cinq floiches)

5.171. Shaw Ms 177 Well, it was two *forty shillingses* [i. e fines of 40/]

5.172. Pl Carlyle FR 415 two irrevocable *Twelvemonths.*

5.18. Wells OH 562 Why was not *the stars and stripes* waving over Mexico? (= the American flag).

5.211. The obsolete use of *a great deal* with pl is also seen in Sh Alls III. 6 99 a great deale of discoueries Cp Bronte J 171 a deal of people are for trusting all to Providence | Galsw MP 241 a deal of mortals

5.23. Stevenson T 177 I filled both pockets of my coat with biscuit . These biscuits would keep me from starving This use of *biscuit* is common

5.25. Cowper L 1 425 a bed of *mignonette* and a hedge of honeysuckles, roses, and *jasmine*, and I will make you a bouquet of *myrtle* | Galsw IC 273 a narrow strip of garden-bed full of *mignonette* and pansies.

5.26. Gibson Dipl Diary 212 the two ladies, who have good *nerve*, and don't turn a hair at being arrested | he has plenty of nerve.

5.27. Galsw Ca 204 [the tree] was covered with young *blossoms*, pink and white and on all this *blossom* and these leaves the sunlight glistened | Cowper L 1 108 [myrtles] were sure to lose their *leaf* in winter

5.281. Carlyle FR 50 [Man's] appetite for sweet *victual* is so enormous | Kipl K 50 to buy us victual in the bazar —F. N Scott's article on Verbal Taboos is reprinted in "The Standard of American Speech" 1926, see on *victuals* p. 185.

Oats Galsw Rub 36 as a young man he had sown many a wild oat Wells JP 178 sow their wild oats her One Wild Oat'

5.2₈₃. Swift J 295 there was too *much victuals* (cf. ib 324 herrings they are a light victuals) | ib 369 the Duke is not in *much hopes* | Fielding 4 519 the *little clothes* he had on | Walp GM 90 a drawing-room that had witnessed so *much good manners*

Cakes and ale in the Schreiner quotation is from Sh Tw II 3 125 and forms one idea

5.3₈₁. p 130, line 3 read. a good deal of business

5.4. (5) A better example. the English are fond of outdoor sports. In this section a reference should be made to the use in relative clauses of the generic sg and pl: who touches pitch = he that touches pitch = they that touch pitch, see vol III ch. III; and also to the loose use in 5 57, see below

5.4₁₁. Shelley 67 Can man be free if woman is a slave? | Wells OH 499 Napoleon had a vast contempt for man in general and men in particular.

5.4₄₁. Note the numbers in Mitford OV 219 But then geese are a domestic fowl

Men = all mankind (both sexes) is often found in the AV, e g Gen 4 26, 6.1, Deut 32 26 (Moore Smith)

5.4₄₂. Walp C 176 Everything seemed to happen in Polchester on *Sundays* For one thing more talking was done on *Sunday* than on all the other days of the week together The rule on *Sundays* was that the maid knocked at half-past six on the door Thurston Ant 247 never to do business on *Sunday* I conduct no business on *Sundays* | Cowper L 1 372 I write generally three hours in *a morning*, and in *an evening* I translate | Bennett RS 1 a suit, which must have been carefully folded at *nights* | ib 137 If I'm to go through my work *Monday mornings* I can't waste my time getting my tea.

5.4₆. The rule as given is too narrow, for *the Jews*, *the Danes*, *the Russells* and similar names of nations or families are used generically with the definite article.

5.5₂. Lewis B 124 They [families] had but two, one

or no children —Sh Tit V 3.17 What, hath the firmament more suns than one?

5.5₆. AV Phil 2.3 Let *each* esteeme other better then *themselues* (20th C Version each of you should humbly reckon the others to be of more account than himself).

Swift 3 180 if there be *any body* below, let *them* speak. —Defoe Pl 161 The people have good reason to keep *anybody* off that they are not satisfied *are* sound here the pl *are* is occasioned by the distance; Defoe would probably have written "anybody that is sound' without the intervening words

Fielding 1 385 That *no one* can abuse, unless *they* love him | Kennedy CN 248 *a person* must do what *they* think right, mustn't *they*?

A different consequence of the identity in meaning of *every one* and *all* is seen in Walp RH 85 Every one was splitting up into little groups.

5.5₇. Further examples of looseness in the use of pl, sometimes caused by the generic meaning (cf also 6.222 first ex): Stevenson M 123 I have no objection to *a deathbed repentance* —Because you disbelieve *their* efficacy | Walp C 272 What do you take when you have *a headache*? I don't think I ever have *them* Galsw Ca 155 he had all a Briton's deep-rooted distrust of *the foreigner*. He felt that *they* were not quite safe | ib 170 As for *a doctor*—that would be sinful waste, and besides, what use were *they* except to tell you what you knew? | id P 12.13 He hardly ever quite finishes *a word*, seeming to snap off *their* tails | Bennett LR 327 *she*'ll explain everything to you *They* always do [*they* = women of her class] | ib 384 The state *she*'s in, you know—*they* have to be handled with care [*they* = pregnant women] || Swift 3 376 from whence they concluded I was not *a native* of the place, *who all* go naked | Defoe M 264 it was the easiest thing in the world for him to manage *the captain of a ship, who were*, generally speaking, men of

good-humour | ib 170 I saw . . on the table *a silver tankard, things* much in use in public-houses at that time | ib 270 She brought with her a sea-chest—that is, *a chest, such as are* made for seamen

5.59. The pl is rare: Butler W 5 his father was worth a hundred of George Pontifexes

5.62. Shelley uses *pulse* as a pl, e g 456 The crimson pulse of living morning quiver

Laches (from OF *lascesse* sg) as a pl Butler W 189 one of the most serious laches of his life | ib 282 many smaller laches

5.631. NED takes *succour* as from ME *sucurs*, OF *sucurs* with subtraction of *-s* apprehended as the pl suffix, but isn't it rather formed on the verb *succour*? Cf. *summon* 5 634.

5.721. Sh H4A II 2 33 ye *fat guttes* [Falstaff], ct II 4 251 | Walton A 43 *Sweetlips* was like to have him [name of dog] | Goldsm 595 *slyboots* was . . | Dowden Shelley 354 [Mary says] I wish *Blue Eyes* was with me | Bronte V 321 a melancholy *sober-sides* | Mackenzie S 896 he's more of a *bright-eyes* than you are ib 937 you'll wish you hadn't been such a *grass-eyes* [fool] | id PR 238 You know everything, *glass-eyes* [to a boy with spectacles] | id RR 168 Oh, would you, *cleversticks*? her sister sneered | London V 42 Come on an' kick in, you *cold-feets* [double pl!]

5.723. On sailing ships the carpenter was usually called "Chips" In theatrical slang *props* is used for the property man Cf also Trollope W 47 "with *Calves* to help him". I am sorry to say the archdeacon himself was designated by this scurrilous allusion to his nether person.

Jackanapes in the pl Fielding 7 501 I never saw two worse bred jackanapes | Galsw SS 46 and 313 All the modern jackanapes whom . . he had been unable to avoid.

5.741. Walp C 189 the *Precincts was* abandoned for a time to *its* Sunday peace, but ib 355 The Precincts *were* quiet

5.754. *Much pains* already Sh Cy II. 3.92. *Many pains* rare, Galsw Frat 46: the Society . . took much time and many pains to ascertain the worst.

5.755. Micawber in the quotation from Di D 140 should be Murdstone.

5.76. Galsw WM 21 it would run like *a measle* round the ring [rare]

5.784. *Whereabout* as a sg subst Sh Mcb II. 1.58, Di Do 193, Carlyle FR 301.

5.795. Troll B 421 two walloping gals, dressed up to their very *eyeses* | 423 they was dressed finer with all their *neckses* and buzoms stark naked — Cf also *in spite of their teeths* (NED *tooth* 1596, 1689)

Chapter VI.
Number in Secondary Words.

6.13, end Bennett ECh 67 Having a perfect complexion and lips.

6.223. NP '14 the Powers who *stand sponsor* for the Prince of Wied.

6.241. Di X 229 Are those wheels upon the road? You've a quick ear, Bertha Are they wheels?

6.32. Bronte J 291 Jewels for Jane Eyre sounds unnatural and strange — which might have been printed "Jewels for J. E"

6.38. Cf *many a* with pl verb 2 71

6.42. Trollope Aut 14 Other books of the kind there was none — *was* probably used instead of *were* in conformity to the grammar taught at school.

6.44. Cf. 6 61 *(n)either* as conjunction — Sh Tw II 5.154 euery one of these letters are in my name [probably attraction as in 6 72]. See also Keats 5.74 each one of them by turns reach some gardens of Paradise

6.516. Goldsm V 1.192 Dryden and Row's manner, Sir, are quite out of fashion.

6.5₂₁. Better: On the other hand, if two or more subjects connected by means of *and* form one conception, the verb is put in the sg. Further examples. Troil B 4 his ingress and egress was as much a matter of course as that of his son-in-law [note *that*] | Sh Tro III. 2.164 to be wise and loue Exceedes mans might [note that *to* is not repeated]

6.5₂₃. Note the commas in Carlyle FR 426 Cornet Remy, and those Few he dashed off with, has missed his road

6.5₃. NP '14 Ability in sport, combined with a fair amount of learning, are very necessary qualifications for the teaching profession in England

6.5₄. Kinglake E 271 The General, as well as I, was bound for Smyrna | Bronte J 183 the great carved clock, as well as the steps and banisters of the staircase, was polished to the brightness of glass

6.7₁. The OE rule was that the number of the verb was decided by what precedes: Hys mete wæs gærstapan | þas þry hadas sindon an God (Huchon, Hist Langue Angl. 1 195). The same rule is recommended by Curme CG 115 on the ground that "it is often difficult to distinguish subject and predicate in such cases, so that a mechanical rule is easier to follow". But modern writers do not always follow it, see, besides the examples given in vol. II: Sh H4A V. 4 91 But now two paces of the vilest earth Is roome enough | Mi Hymn Nat 91 Perhaps their loves or else their sheep, Was all that did their silly thoughts so busy keep | Rose Macaulay T 302 Reparations was the great topic at these chats The rule is followed in Wells PF 137 One very great factor in my mental distress was the uncertain values of nearly every aspect of the case | Bennett LM 73 My subject is chocolates. In many cases unification or attraction is the decisive factor, see 5.1 and 6.72

6.7₂. With the quotation from AV Deut (in which

daies may be the genitive, cf. 7 28) compare Locke D 325 Then there were a few moments silence.

A few more examples of attraction, the last to the end of the section Boswell 1.312 Much, no doubt, both of the sentiments and expression, were derived from conversation with him | Goldsm V 2.72 nothing but mirth and feasting were going forward.

6.7₇ Walton A 196 he is one of the leather mouthed fish that has his teeth in his throat [NB *his*] | Sterne 11 I affirm it to be one of the vilest worlds that ever was made | Fielding 1.449 he is one of the damnedst liars that ever was hang'd | Troll B 368 Staple was one of those who in his heart approved of the credit system | Stephen L 308 Ruskin is one of the people who frightens me to death, and makes me want to sink into my shoes

6.9₁. Mason R 241 they were quarrelling. At least, Walter Hine was quarrelling, and my father was speaking to him as if he were a child.

Chapter VII.
Number. Appendix.

7.1. Number in First-Words of Compounds. It should be noted that this is really part of 6 1 (Number in secondary words), as soon as the first part of a compound in recognized as a separate word, cf. ch XIII. See also 8.93 *a four-wheel*, etc

7.1₂. Misprint p 186 line 6 *years*, read *year*.

A curious example: Wells H 343 these childless or one-or-two-child homes

7.2₃. Peacock M 168 the pound-shilling-and-pence philosophy

7.2₄. NP '17 the creation of a States system exclusively consisting of homogeneous national groups is an unrealizable ideal —This is evidently different from *a state system*

7.2₅. Bennett LR 163 a bearded foreign-affairs expert | ib 164 the visit of the Dominions and American press.

7.3₁₂, end not so very rare: Di F 796 he had betrayed his parent for sixty threepennyworths of rum | ib 811 sixty threepenn'orths | 814 two threepennyworths | Asterisk Gone Native 223 selling threepenn'orths of sugar.

7.4₂. Di F 761 how can you ask such goose's questions?

7.7₃₁. Cowper L 1 25 under which of the three or whether under either | ib 1 264 whether I have a lantern, a dog, and a faggot, or whether I have neither of those desirable accommodations.

Chapter VIII.
Substantives.

8.5₁. Maxwell EG 422 time, with its immense interminable *todays* and its small insignificant *yesterdays*

8.5₃. Galsw SS 102 here are three *'down and outs'* [poor and out of work].

8.5₇. Kipl K 226 since *'hows'* matter little in this world, the *'why* is everything

8.6₂. Bennett Truth 54 the poor relation, the *doff hat,* the ready-for-anything (not in NED) | id LR 25 Mr Poppleham, M P., is my *washpot* (acc to NED obs.).

8.6₃. Galsw T 54 There it was in the *Stop Press*! "Glove Lane Murder" This is short for the newspaper column "Stop Press News" (which in itself is elliptic) and belongs in so far in 8.9 (and 14 7)

8.7₁. Doyle S 3 191 he had descended into the *'tween decks* [generally *between-decks*] | *fo'c'stle* = *forecastle,* what is before the castle | Galsw WM 102 the *out-of-works* and the *in-works* [the former usual, the latter not] | McKenna Ninety 101 They'd have paid his *out-of pockets* [to 8.9· short for out-of-pocket expenses].

8.8. Carlyle FR 391 these same *would-have-beens* are mostly a vanity.

8.9. Many additional examples must be treated in a different place

Chapter IX.
Substantivized Adjectives.

9.2₁. Bunyan P 98 the *poor* that loveth Christ, is richer then the greatest man

9.3₁. Note the difference in Bennett ECh 164 They were strangers in one way and the most *intimate* of *intimates* in another

9.3₃. While the pl *nobles* 'members of the nobility' is common, the sg is rarer; twice in Sh, Carlyle FR 11

9.3₄. "*Female* is objected to on grounds of taste, as treating women purely as animals—not as being incorrect English"—Moore Smith

9.3₆. The *drys* and the *wets*, those in favour of prohibition and against it (U S.).

9.6. Another example of adjective before *good*. Collins W 348 Her unexpected absence did me amazing good Note the distinction between "this is *equivalent to* a refusal" (adj) and "this is *the equivalent of* a refusal" (sb)

9.7₄. Defoe Rox 306 Amy packed up her alls

Chapter X.
The Prop-Word One.

On the origin of this use see (besides my book and the articles quoted there) Luick *Anglia* 37 543 I have given Danish parallels, Bjorkman, ESt 49 122 gives Swedish examples, even of the pl *(sådana ena, ni är ena roliga ena)*, which is not found in Danish But what Einenkel, Anglia 38 210, says of Danish, must be wrong no one in Denmark knows what the combinations he mentions, *en kniv en, god en*, could possibly mean Nor

is it easy to see how Einenkel has been able to understand my words as if they implied "nur in maskuliner und neutraler form": Danish makes no distinction between m and f. in these cases. The rest of Einenkel's article is not very clear

We may perhaps give the following tentative chronology, the dates of course to be taken as approximative.

1300 a good one.
1400 the good one.
1550 never a one, such a one, good ones, the good ones
1600 one good one.
18th c. that one, a silver one
19th c the one (we) preferred, those ones, a one to keep company, the ones that , my one.

10.2_3, end, for XVI read XVII.

10.3_1, end, better for unstressed *one* is indefinite, as appears, etc

10.3_2. Another early example Ch D 605 I was a lusty oon

10.3_{32}. Swift 1.310 As universal a practice as lying is, and *as easy a one* as it seems

10 3_4. Walp C 84 she knew nothing about primroses—there were for her yellow ones and *other ones*, and that was all [generally *others* 17 7_5]

Non-anaphorical: Sh Oth II 1 143 foule pranks, which *faire and wise-ones* do | Egerton Kn 82 the spirits of *unborn little ones* never to come to life in me troubled me

10.5. Instead of what is printed in small type on p. 257, read: It is important, if one wants to understand the historical development, to keep the prop-word distinct from the numeral *one*, which occurs in the same combinations as those dealt with in the following sections. The numeral is found when *the one* (earlier *that one*, *that oon*, and with weakening of *a* and attraction of *t* to *oon*, *the toon*, *the t'one*) is opposed to *the other (that other, the tother)*, further in the following instances Matt. 18 12

OE (Corpus) gæð & secþ *þæt ân* þe forwearð . . he swyðor geblissaþ for *þam ânum* þonne ofer þa nigon & hundnigontig; Tyndale: go and seke *that won* which is gone astraye (where the contrast is between the one and the 99. Miss Bjorling persists in seeing here the prop-word in spite of my articles Anglia Beibl. 1925. 155 and 382) | Sh Ro III. 5 167 we scarce thought vs blest, That God had lent vs but this onely child, But now I see *this one* is one too much | Hml IV 7 76 a qualitie Wherein they say you shine, your summe of parts Did not together plucke such envie from him As did *that one* [*one* opposed to *your sum of parts together*, in both Sh-quotations the verse ictus falls on *one*] | Bronte V 360 I gave papa his twelve letters—his herd of possessions—and kept back *my one*, my ewe lamb ' Hope In 135 there was a letter for her. While he attacked his pile, she began on *her one* (*one* stressed)

10.6₁ The only example from the eighteenth c. that has come to hand is Sterne 59 of the traverses of that attack,—but particularly of *that one* where he received his wound

10.6₂, end Thack V 30 *this one* blacked his shoes that toasted his bread

10.6₄. Instead of the Hope quotation (see above), put Birmingham Regan 72 What was the explanation that you gave to Doyle? It was different from *my one* I know [i e the one you gave me, *mine* would have been the one I gave]

10.6₈. New section *Ones* without any adjunct before it may sometimes be found before a relative clause: McKnight W 9 this end is attained only when the symbols of language are *ones* that convey precisely the same meaning to all | Mackenzie (quoted by Kruisinga) Why not plain white for the walls and no curtains at all, until you can get *ones* you really do like? Cf for the sg 10.26.

10.8₄. The difference between *young* and *young ones* is not always clear: Defoe R 171 I wanted a she-goat with *young* [sg! cp a woman with child 4 35] | ib 213 three favourites, which I kept tame, and whose *young* I always drowned | By DJ 5.132 A tigress robb'd of *young* Whut is stealing *young ones*? | Rose Macaulay O 92 all of 'em m. rried and had *young ones*, and the young ones had *young* in their turn | Pinero S 62 when the *young ones* gradually take the place of the old | Gregory Discovery 75 females producing live *young* without any eggs . ., insects which produce *no young*, and eggs from which *young* emerge Cf examples of *young ones* 10.4₄.

10.8₅. Bottom of p. 265 read: *Evil (the evil)* is a neuter sb (9 6), but *the Evil One* = 'Satan'

10.9₈. Sh Cæs I. 2 144 Yours is as faire a name | Walton A 105 yours is a better rod.

Chapter XI.
Adjectives as Principals.

11.3₃. Note the difference between *a little* and *a little thing*: Di X 14 Why do you doubt your senses? Because a little thing affects them

11.3₄. *The* before *like* is probably OE *þy* Wells WW 58 a clock, a silver spoon, and the like poor valuables [= some similar]

11.3₆. Maxwell F 293 Anyhow, she has *done the handsome* for once [behaved decently] | Wells JP 729 making *our damndest* just in order to sit about safely.

11.4₁. Genitive pl: Kingsley Y 46 for the *poor's* sake; cf. 9 5₅

11.4₅. Kipl DW 334 no *sick*, no prisoners | Wells Br 375 with one or two other *wounded* . these *wounded* had all been found | Gibson Dipl Diary 236 and *wounded* are everywhere.

11.5₃. Troll B 81 popular . with Italians as well as *English*

11.57. *A Chinese* found, e g. Boswell 1 254, Cowper L 1.37, Kingsley Y 50, Maugham TL 80, 201, 205.

11.58. NP '15 a number of Egyptian *Beduin* the Beduin who have revolted (cf 3 12 above).

11.61. Cf *that much, that little* 16 393

Certain also in Macaulay E 3 61 certain of the house of Villiers were to go shares with Overreach

Considerable (sg) Defoe M 288 my mother had left me something, and perhaps considerable | Dreiser F 165 his cane which he carried with considerable of an air.

Cf. 17 7 *(other)*

Chapter XII.

Relations between Adjunct and Principal.

12.2. Here a reference should be made to the use of *no* as a shifted *not*, see 16.7(5)

12.221. Bennett Cd 81 men are moral cowards [= morally] | James RH 18 an extreme intimate ib 422 a "handsome" subscriber to an important cause likes an acknowledgment of his cheque [the inverted commas show that the writer felt this to be a peculiar use of the adj]

12.222. Goldsm V 1.33 farmers who were equal strangers to opulence and poverty.

12.272. Gissing H 245 Light-blue eyes tended to modify the *all but harshness* of his lower face | Flecker Hassan 140 This is the first day of my exaltation, I have begun it the *all but murderer* of a woman

12.29. Troll B 161 The *conqueror once* is generally the *conqueror for ever after* | Dreiser F 96 Davies realized that in his *absence writing* a new turn had been given to things [when he was absent, writing, cf 15 75]

12.312. Troll B 78 as a *modern linguist* she had made great proficiency | Cowper L 1 267 a dozen *good sizeable* cakes

12.331. Against my rule that in combinations like *the stout Major's wife* the adj belongs to *wife* and not to

Major, Trampe Bødtker quotes two instances from Shaw's Ms, but he overlooks the fact that both must be understood in the way indicated by me. P. 56 Percival asks "What sort of girl are you? What sort of house is this?" and gets the answer "This is the house of a respectable shopkeeper, enormously rich. This is the respectable shopkeeper's daughter, tired of good manners. Come, handsome young man, and play with the respectable shopkeeper's daughter". Here the first sentence answers the question about the house, and shows how to express oneself if *respectable* is to be an adjunct to *shopkeeper*, in the second and third sentences the question as to "what sort of girl" is answered: she is the daughter of a shopkeeper and she is respectable. P 230 Shaw speaks of persons in a play. "Then theres the comic relief: the comic shopkeeper, the comic shopkeeper's wife, the comic footman who turns out to be a duke in disguise". Evidently there are three comic persons, the shopkeeper, his wife, and the footman, there would be no point, if the second person was not perhaps comic herself, but only married to a comic husband.

12.4. *Greenhouse* is like *blackbird* in regard to stress, but different from it as far as the internal relation between the two parts of the compound is concerned But both are compounds and thus distinguished from the collocations *black bird* and *green house* (with level stress), in which we have direct adjective adjuncts The spelling is not always decisive: *a French master* (level stress) is a master who is French, not necessarily a teacher of French, but *a French master* with stronger stress on *French* than on *master* is one who teaches French, but not necessarily one of French nationality See on the difference in intonation Palmer Gr p 40

12.4₁. ff Miscellaneous examples *short-sighted glasses* (spectacles) | Hope D 88 A *guilty silence* reigned for some moments - In a newspaper (1914) I find advertized *Wonder-*

ful Bad Leg Cure. *wonderful* goes with *cure*, *bad* with *leg* but it may turn out to be a wonderfully bad leg cure

12.4₃. Butler W 190 he was placed on the *idle list* for the whole half year.

12.4₅. London V 105 he was a great *Indian fighter* [i e. fought red Indians]

12.5₃. Sh Lr III 7 101 If she liue long, and in the end meet the *old course of death* [i e. die old, of old age, though editors explain *old* as meaning customary, natural]

12.5₅. Mackenzie C 140 the balloon sleeves of the *mid-nineties*

12.5₆. Kaye Smith T 115 The ceremony was fixed for *early June* | Bennett HL 144 I went to see him one *late afternoon* [common]

Chapter XIII.

Substantives as Adjuncts.

13.4. Eighteenth and early nineteenth century examples Defoe M 179 they found but one of the gold watches, and *a silver one* | Swift J 208 handkerchiefs . *snuff ones* | Gay BP 8 five gold watches, and seven *silver ones* | Sterne 215 pulling out my box (which was a small *tortoise one*) | Cowper L 1 382 I made Mrs Unwin a present of a snuff-box—*a silver one* | Richardson G 90 education it is a *country* and a bookish *one* | Southey L 19 with an appetite no ways like my *Portugal one* | Keats 4 93 a sort of philosophical back-garden, and cheerful holiday-keeping *front one*

13.5₄. Locke SJ 216 in my *most nightmare* dreams | id A 180 he had the *most lightning* way of establishing an intimacy

13.6₄. Butler Er 65 if I had been found to have *anything contraband* in my possession | Norris S 66 *Everything metal* was intolerable to the touch | Meredith *something silk*, see 17 3₂₂

13.7$_1$. Bennett ECh 7 casting off a thick apron and springing to a flimsier and *fancier* one.

Chapter XIV.
Adjuncts Continued.

14.1$_8$. *Longshore* fishers, from *along shore.*

14.2$_3$. Beresford R 146 That's the *worth while* thing | Dreiser F 77 this was a *worthwhile* assignment (cf 14.6$_7$ worth-whileness) | London V 29 a *free-for all* fight

14.3$_2$. AV Ps 136 12 with a *stretched out* arme | Wells TB 1 25 *pensioned-off* servants.

14.7$_6$. *Mock* before an adverb Dreiser F 205 she would protest *mock earnestly*

14.8$_4$. Tracy P 272 something has happened which has put us again in the *also-ran* class [from reports of horse-races: Also ran Diomedes, etc]

14.9$_1$. The usual adjunct corresponding to *once* is *one time* a one-time disciple of Freud, cf. 14.9$_2$.

14.9$_5$. Carpenter Art Cr 92 from the *within* point of view . on its more external side || Galsw TL 17 her *wide-apart* brown eyes [also id T 45, *apart* not by itself in this way, cp 9 1$_7$]

14.9$_{62}$. *Near-by* not only U S Kipl K 228 some near-by men

14.9$_{72}$. Cp also Wells H 18 a *hard up* professional family | Mackenzie PR 172 *comfortably-off* poor relations

Chapter XV.
Adjuncts. Concluded.

15.1. In the section about the word-order of two adjuncts to the same primary a reference should have been given to the old order *an old man and a poor* (10.9$_6$) and the corresponding order in the pl as in Goldsm V 1.70 *With fainting steps and slow* —An English correspondent asks why we say *a large white horse,* but *a nice*

little basket. I do not think that rhythm, though often influential, is here the decisive factor, but that *white horse* and *little basket* are more intimately knitted together into one idea (cf. 15 151) than *large horse* or *nice basket* would be. Walton (Compleat Angler, ed. Lang 315, not in 1st ed, which I usually quote) writes: "I will .. contemplate the lilies that take no care and *those very many other various little living creatures* that are fed by the goodness of the God of nature" Here *living creatures* forms one idea, with which *little* is intimately connected, the place of *those*, of *many*, and of *other* is determined by the rules I give in 15 14, 15 191 and 15 13 But in some cases much depends on individual fancy, or rather, as I said, on the order in which the ideas present themselves to the mind of the speaker. The following examples must be explained in accordance with 15.151. London M 353 his Hawaiian *short story* | Shaw D 262 your usual society *small talk* | Twain H 1 99 it was the worst *bad luck*

15.175. Keats 4 146 There is a deeper joy of *more divine a smart* | Locke GP 280 Yet, for that reason, was he not *all the greater a human being*? | Lewis MS 371 whatever possessed you to let her pump you, *bright a girl* as you are

15.25. Stevenson T 160 Silver had *terrible hard work* getting up the knoll | James RH 57 anything worth doing is *plaguy hard* to do!

15.28. The development of *passing* and *exceeding* is similar to that of Fr *très* from *trans* and of *over* in *not over particular*, etc

15.31. It should be noted that *newly*, not *new*, is now the colloquial form in most combinations, with *married*, *appointed*, etc.

15.38. Austen M 245 taken up in *fresh arranging* the fire.

15.41. *Astronomer Royal* (still existing title) | Wells Ma 2.41 the *cook-general* | Galsw WM 248 and 249 the *lie benevolent* | Troll W 35 the *church militant*

15.5₄. "*Body national* suggested by *the body politic*. *A giant refreshed* is from Psalm 78.66 (Prayerbook version). *Person doing . . thing done*: *the doing person* and *the done thing* scarcely possible. *Deed accomplished*, a Gallicism = fait accompli." (Moore Smith).—The effect of parallelism and contrast is seen in Sh Shr V. 2 142 A *woman mou'd* is like a *fountaine troubled* | Cowper L 1.193 after it has feasted upon *praise expressed*, it can find a comfortable dessert in the contemplation of *praise implied* | Bennett RS 136 a *fire laid* is already half lighted

15.6₄. An early example· Ch R 3552 agayn your man, As hoolly *youres* as ever he can.

15.7₃. Sh Tro I. 3.130 The generall's disdain'd By *him one step below*; he, by the next, That next, by *him beneath*.

15.8₁. Ch R 4453 Of *thing to comen* she woot right nought.

15.8₂₁. Rose Macaulay T 197 there scarcely was a war on, now Not *a war to matter*.

15.8₆. Stephen L 20 I have one person less *to believe in me* and one person less *to reverence*.

Chapter XVI.
Rank of the Pronouns.

This title is better than the vague expression "function".

16.1₃. Cowper L 2.61 I should have thought *them tears* as well bestowed as most that I have shed for many years

16.2₆. There is also a rare American primary *whosen*: If it isn't hisn, then whosen is it? Mencken AL 304.

16.2₇. Examples of *its* as a primary are very rare. NED has only one, Sh H8 I. 1 18 Each following day Became the next dayes master, till the last Made former wonders, it's. (NED explains the meaning as 'its one, its ones', but are these combinations in common use?)

Kruisinga § 1104 has two examples I may add London War of the Classes 187 these nations will have attained their maximum development, before the whole world, in the same direction, has attained its.

16.3$_1$. Here again we have American forms in *-n*: *Thisn* is better'n *thatn*. I like *thesen* better'n *thosen*, Mencken AL 302, who (wrongly) explains them as degenerate forms of *this-one*, *that-one*, etc. But then the pl?

16.3$_{63}$. Note that in all recent examples we have *it is* with its peculiar logical connexion, see vol. III ch. V.

16.3$_{92}$. Walton A 15 having said *this much*.

16.3$_{93}$. Cp. Carlyle R 1 55 if little was said, *that little* had generally a meaning | Mill in Fox 2.259 I had read but little of them before now, and that little at long intervals

16.3$_{94}$. British examples of subjunct *this*. Maxwell Ch. Night 134 Sure you don't think poorly of me for making friends with you *this easily* | Rogers Wine of F. 73 We couldn't go *this early*

16.5. On *whether* see 7 7$_4$. Amr *whosen* see above 16.2$_6$. On adjunct relative *which* see vol III ch VI.

16.6$_1$. Bunyan P 125 they had given *none occasion*.

16.6$_8$. An early example Roister 77 she shall be *none of mine* Cp on non-partitive, appositional *of* my remarks in SPE Tract 25, 1926.

16.7$_{52}$. Note the definite article in Locke FS 70 to *the no small* scandal of the neighbourhood

16.7$_9$. Mr A 29 I proceed from *the no good* it can do, to the manifest hurt it causes

Chapter XVII.

Rank of the Pronouns. Concluded.

17.2. Mixed examples of *body* and *one*, some of them showing the preference for *one* before a relative clause: Beerbohm Seven Men 114 he asked me to tell him who *every one* was I told him *no one* was *any one* in partic-

ular | Walp SC 353 *Every one* gave way to him, and he despised *everybody* | Maxw EG 166 Has *somebody* sent you an anonymous letter? No. Oh no. Has *someone* spoken about me? | Goldsm 648 under an obligation to *every one* I meet a pretty . . . youth that *everybody* is fond of | Carpenter E 24 *Every body* (which in the "society" signification of the word means *everyone* who does not work with his hands) does it [viz. lend money] | Galsw F 53 have *somebody* with whom she could share everything—*someone* she could protect and comfort—*someone* who would bring her peace.

17.2₆. Walton A 156 *any other body* —With adj after, as in *something good* (17.3₂): Kaye Smith HA 43 Let Jenny marry *somebody rich* | Mackenzie S 1.61 *Everybody nice* went away.

17.3₃. Similarly, of course, *anything* after a negative. Wells PF 19 without *anything much* in the way of a family | Galsw F 349 I can't believe *anything much* can happen.

17.3₃₂. Earlier examples than in NED: Sh Err III. 2.104 Swart like my shoo, but her face *nothing like so* cleane kept | Defoe R 7 the sea went very high, tho' *nothing like* what I have seen many times since

17.7₆. We find, though more rarely, the same use of *other* in the pl when it is not accompanied by a quantifier: Beresford R 68 like other of the world's great men | ib 118 conversations with Oliver and other of the young hot-heads.—Instead of *of* we may have *among*. Wells JP 589 Two other among that handful of young soldiers

Add 17 8 *One* may be used as a primary, in which case it is made into a substantive (cf ch. X), and as an adjunct, in the latter case it has always its numerical value, which is often more or less obliterated when *one* is a primary.

Manuldruck Winter, Heidelberg.